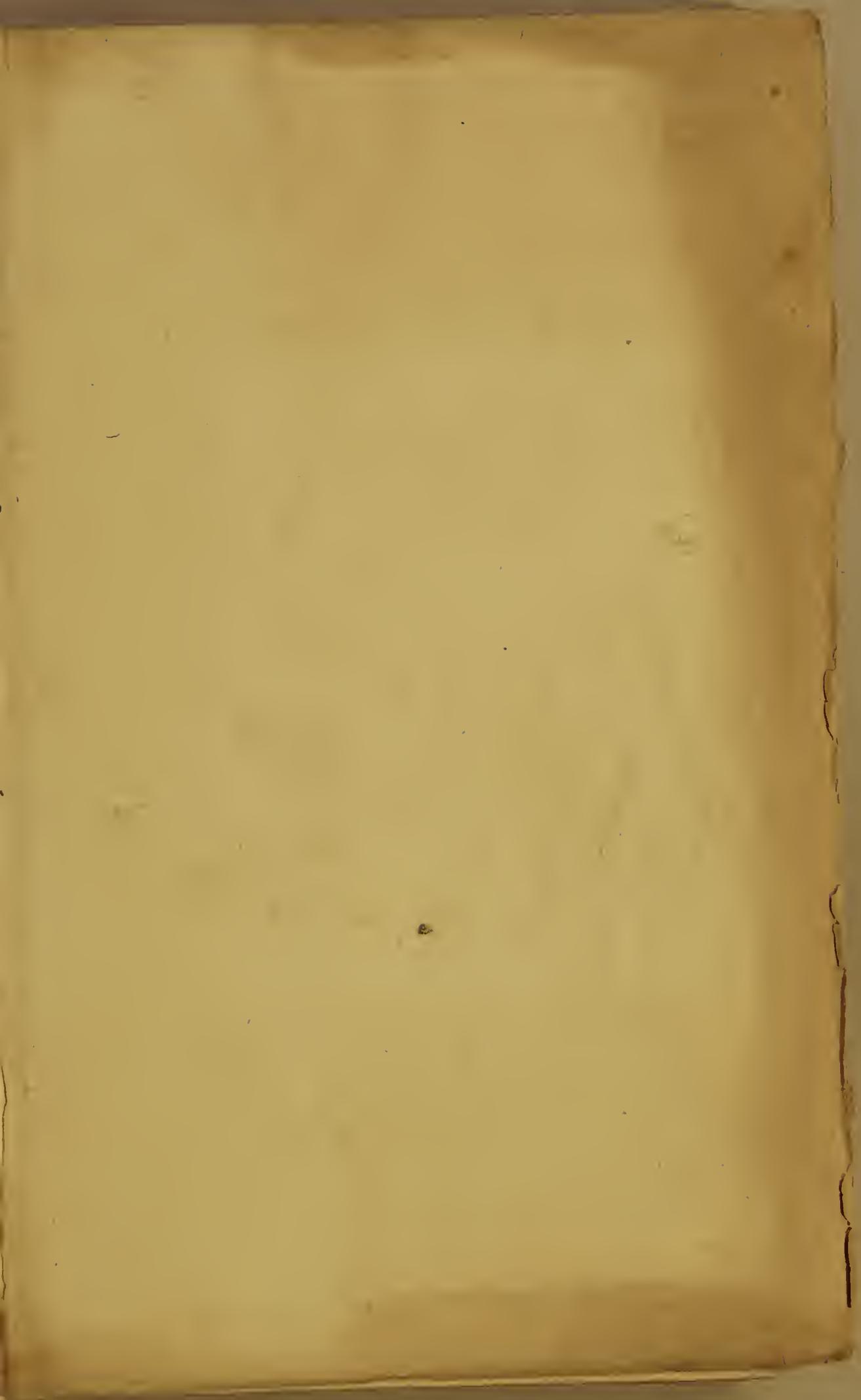


John Carter Brown.



Richⁿ. 13.

A NEW and ACCURATE

HISTORY

OF

South - America :

CONTAINING

A particular Account of some Accidents leading to the Discovery of the NEW WORLD ; of the Discovery made by *Columbus*, and other Adventurers ; of the several Attempts made to find out a North-East and North-West Passage ; and what Parts of AMERICA are subject to the different *European* Powers.

WITH

A full Description of the SPANISH Provinces of *Chili*, *Paraguay*, *Peru*, and *Terra Firma*. Of GUIANA ; particularly of *Surinam* belonging to the DUTCH, and of *Cayenne* belonging to the FRENCH ; of *Brazil*, subject to the Crown of PORTUGAL ; of that Part of *Paraguay* possessed by the JESUITS, where they have established a New Monarchy ; and of the various Nations of INDIANS throughout this extensive Territory : As also of all the most remarkable Islands adjacent to its Coasts.

Including the Geographical, Natural, Political, and Commercial History of every Province : With the Religion, Manners, and Customs of the Inhabitants.

With DISSERTATIONS on the *British*, *Spanish*, *Portuguese*, *French*, *Dutch*, and *Indian* Settlements.

By Mr. ROLT.

L O N D O N :

Printed for T. GARDNER, at *Cowley's Head*, facing *St. Clement's Church* in the *Strand* ; and Sold by all the Bookfellers in *Great-Britain* and *Ireland*.

M. DCC. LVI.

1871

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

TO THE
Right Honourable
THE
Lords Commissioners
OF
TRADE and PLANTATIONS;

And to the
Merchants of *Great Britain*

THIS
History of AMERICA,

Is humbly inscribed

by their most respectful, obliged,

and obedient Servant,

R. ROLT.



THE
MORNING
AND
EVENING
ADDITIONS
OF
THE



LIBRARY OF AMERICA

N. R. R. O. L. T.

P R E F A C E.

AMERICA is the largest of the four grand divisions of the world; and is now become of the greatest importance to the others. It has such a variety of climates, and such abundance of the most valuable productions, that all the principal European powers have been very attentive to their particular interests and connexions in this part of the globe, which they have colonized with great assiduity, and cultivated with amazing success. The Spaniards owe all their opulence to their possessions in Chili, Peru, Mexico, and the Antilles. The Portuguese have aggrandized their nation by establishing their settlements in Brazil. Great Britain is indebted to her colonies in North America, and her islands in the West-Indies, for the augmentation of her trade, the increase of her wealth, and the support of her navy. France has also extended her commerce, so as to rank herself a maritime power, by means of her possession in Canada, Louisiana, Cayenne, the Leeward Islands, and Cape Breton. The Dutch receive no inconsiderable advantage from Surinam, and their islands adjacent to the Spanish main. The Danes and Hamburgers have some trade to the island of St. Thomas, and the Virgins. The Courlanders have attempted to settle in some of the Antilles, and the Swedes in North America; but without success: from whence it is evident, that the general commerce and navigation

P R E F A C E.

tion of Europe are greatly dependent upon the colonies in America.

THOSE powers who most tenderly cherish, and most prudently encourage, their plantation-trade and navigation in America, in due subserviency to the prosperity of their mother countries, are likely to have the greatest share of mercantile shipping, the best nursery for seamen, the greatest fund of wealth, and to be the most capable of maintaining the dominion and sovereignty of the ocean. The trade to these colonies may be considered as so many branches of foreign commerce, carried on, and conducted solely, under the direction and regulation of the respective mother countries; whereby Europe is prodigiously enriched. - A communication is carried on by the Spaniards between America and Asia; which is productive of mutual advantages to both those distant quarters of the globe. And Africa is of the most essential service to the American colonies, by furnishing them with negro slaves, to be employed in those laborious and miserable stations which could not be so well executed by Europeans.

THE gold of Chili and Brazil; the silver of Peru; the tobacco of Virginia, and Maryland; the sugar and indico of the Caribbee Islands, and the greater islands adjacent; the furs of Canada; the hides of Buenos Ayres, Hispaniola, and Cuba, with the precious stones, pearls, balsams, drugs, dying-woods, and other commodities, produced in the different parts of America, have afforded a very beneficial commerce to the Europeans; particularly to the English, French, and Dutch. Bars of silver and gold are imported by many nations from Spain and Portugal; where it is impossible to prevent its extraction, and especially in Spain, though the penalties extend to forfeiture

P R E F A C E.

seizure of life and effects; which will be perpetually the case, till Spain is no longer in debt to other nations; and this point is only attainable by selling more than they buy, or of turning their passive into an active commerce.

THE trade to Spain is certainly the most advantageous of any to Great Britain; whereby she receives a very considerable balance; as she also does from Portugal: but the trade between Great Britain and France, is manifestly prejudicial to the former. However, the most profitable traffic of Great Britain, is carried on with her own plantations in America; and it is to be observed, that those colonies, if properly encouraged, would soon be enabled to take off all the manufactures the mother country could spare.

THE British colonies in America, contain near a million and half of white inhabitants: they employ near 2000 ships; whereby Great Britain exports goods to these colonies, to the value of about 850,000l. a year; and imports from thence to the amount of 2,600,000l. a year; gaining about 1,750,000l. upon the balance, which remains in the hands of the people of Great Britain. This may serve to shew the advantage of the American colonies in general; and to account for the conduct of the French in their encroachments upon the British settlements. For the French are become our rivals, in the sugar-trade; they are now supplanting us in the fur-trade; they have long since excelled us in the cod-fishery; and, perhaps, may endeavour to make their Canada rival our Virginia in tobacco: upon which account, the British colonies ought to be the principal care of the British government.

P R E F A C E.

TRADE is now become the general study of all civilized nations, and the American trade in particular. Therefore, it is necessary to shew how that country was discovered, conquered, and colonized: to give a particular account of all its respective divisions; with their principal towns and rivers: to describe its productions, both natural and artificial: to point out how far the different European settlements have connexions with each other: to shew the state of the Indians; the trade of the country in general, and of each colony in particular; wherein old branches of trade are essentially to be supported, and new ones encouraged: with many other important matters that may serve to elucidate the present aspiring views of the court of France, and the uncertainty of depending upon the friendship of Spain.

T H I S first volume contains an account of South America, which is in the possession of the Spaniards, Portuguese, French, Dutch, and Indians. It must be confessed, that the subject is not so consequential or entertaining as that of North America, or the islands: yet South America is still necessary to be known; because it has been hitherto very imperfectly described. Besides, it serves other European powers for carrying on a considerable trade, as well as the Spaniards, though illicit and dangerous: on which account the English and Dutch have made several attempts to gain a settlement upon the coasts of Terra Firma, Guiana, Patagonia, and Chili: but this will be particularly represented in the dissertations in the second volume.

T H E remaining part of this work will contain the description of North America, and the islands; which will afford very interesting matter, with re-
spect

P R E F A C E.

ſpect both to the commercial and political ſystems of the European powers. The lover of hiſtory will ſee how theſe countries were colonized and regulated: the naturaliſt will perceive how they were cultivated and improved: the merchant will be more able to diſtinguiſh between the different commodities of each particular colony, to what market they may be moſt advantageouſly brought, what commodities are requiſite for the plantation conſumption, how beneficial the colonies are to the mother country, and in what they are prejudicial; as alſo how far their different intereſts render them ſerviceable or inconvenient to each other: and all mankind, as well as the ſtateſman, will be made ſenſible of what encroachments have been attempted upon the Britiſh ſettlements and how much it is incumbent upon Great Britain to conſult the beſt means for the farther improvement of her colonies, particularly the ſugar iſlands, and the northern and ſouthern provinces on the continent.

T H E foreign trade of Great Britain is now become the ſtrength and riches of the kingdom; as it diſperſes that blood and ſpirit throughout all the members, by which the body politic ſubſiſts, and is the living fountain from whence we draw all our nourishment. The price of land, value of rents, our home commodities and manufactures, riſe or fall, as it goes well or ill with our foreign trade; which has long been in a flouriſhing condition: but other nations are beginning to be induſtrious, and to be ſenſible that commerce is the ſoul of power. Even military ſtates, and arbitrary princes, throw by the terror of their arms, and moderate the exerciſe of their power, to invite commerce to their dominions, and proteſt property under their government. The French have been moſt diligent in directing their ſagacity to the promotion of their commercial intereſts;

P R E F A C E.

rests; and they not only rival us in every considerable branch of trade, but in some have absolutely beat us out of the foreign markets. The Spaniards have at last opened their eyes, and are awakened from that lethargic disposition, which has hitherto made them negligent of the benefits of trade, and the emolument of their colonies. This makes it necessary for Great Britain to keep her eye stedfastly on all the advances of a dangerous rival; and to have a strict observation on all the schemes of every nation that is aspiring to an addition of power by the increase of trade: which cannot be more effectually done than by properly understanding the respective interests, strength, and connexions, of the different European powers in America: upon which account, it is presumed, that a GENERAL HISTORY of that country will be very acceptable to the British nation.

C O N T E N T S.



CONTENTS.

VOL. I.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

The situation and extent of AMERICA. Some account of its natives, and in what manner they first peopled that country: with a general view of its produce and commodities. A summary account of what the ancients thought about a new world; and some accidents leading to the discovery of AMERICA.

Page 1.

CHAP. II.

Some remarks on the commerce and navigation of the ancients. The discovery and use of the loadstone. Some observations on the difference between the complexions of the EUROPEANS, AFRICANS, and AMERICANS. An account of the birth and education of Christopher Columbus; his reasons for believing there was a new world to be discovered; and some reflections on the dishonour done him by having that country named after Americus Vesputius.

22

CHAP. III.

In what manner the proposals of Columbus were rejected by the republic of GENOA, and the king of PORTUGAL. How his application to the king of ENGLAND miscarried; and how he entered into an agreement with their Catholic majesties, for the discovery of New Countries. An account of his first voyage, and the difficulties he sustained before he discovered the BAHAMA islands. The discovery of CUBA and HISPANIOLA; with the reception of Columbus among the Indians. An account of the garrison he left at HISPANIOLA; and of his return to Europe. The detention of his men at the AZORES, by the PORTUGUESE: his arrival at LISBON; and the honourable reception he met with from the king of PORTUGAL. His arrival in SPAIN; and the great honours which were conferred upon him by their Catholic majesties. In what manner Columbus undertook his second voyage. And the dispute between the king of PORTUGAL and their Catholic

CONTENTS.

*tholic majesties, concerning their rights and pretensions to the
new discovered countries.*

34

C H A P. IV.

The second voyage of Christopher Columbus to the West-Indies: with the discovery of Dominica, and some other of the Caribbee-Islands, and Porto Rico. His return to HISPANIOLA; and the transactions there. His discovery of Jamaica; and his return to SPAIN, to answer some complaints exhibited against him to their Catholic majesties: with the reception which they gave him, and the account which he gave them of the natives of HISPANIOLA. How he vindicated himself; and undertook a third voyage to discover the continent of AMERICA: his discoveries there, and his return to HISPANIOLA.—A short account of the voyage, undertaken by Alonso de Ojeda, and Americus Vesputius; as also by Peter Alonso Nino, Vincent Yanez Pinzon, and James de Lepe, for the farther discovery of the continent of AMERICA.—In what manner Columbus was sent a prisoner to SPAIN. How he was employed on a fourth expedition: with his farther discoveries on the continent; and what distress he met with at Jamaica. His arrival at HISPANIOLA; and in what condition he found the island. His return to SPAIN; where the neglect shewn him at court, occasioned his death at Valladolid. His character, and epitaph.

88

C H A P. V.

In what manner Americus Vesputius got the new world called AMERICA, after his own name, in prejudice to that of Columbus. How king Henry VIIth of England, employed John Cabot, and his son Sebastian, to make discoveries on the north coast of AMERICA. The discovery of BRAZIL, by the Portuguese. The Expedition of Vasco Nunez de Bilboa, to the continent of AMERICA; and the discovery of the South Sea. A short account of what was discovered by other adventurers; particularly, the passage of Ferdinand Magellan into the South Sea, the first circumnavigation round the globe, and what other commanders also performed. With a representation of the different attempts to find out a north-east and north-west passage to AMERICA: as likewise, what parts of that country are now enjoyed by the different European powers.

128

PART

C O N T E N T S.

P A R T II.

C H A P. I.

The DESCRIPTION of CHILI.

S E C T I O N I.

The general division of AMERICA: with an account of the possessions belonging to the Spaniards, and in what manner their provinces are governed. 149

S E C T I O N II.

Containing a description of the audience of CHILI; with its boundaries, the face of the country, the seasons, air, and climate. An account of the Andes, or Cordillera mountains; with their phænomenas, vulcanoes, springs, lakes, and rivers. And also, a short account of the Chilefian Indians; their persons, customs, and government. 153

S E C T I O N III.

The first invasion of CHILI by Don Diego de Almagro: his expedition; and death. The second invasion, under Don Pedro Baldivia: the settlements which he established: his war with the Indians; and death. The conduct of Francis de Velagra against Caupolican the Indian general. The war undertaken by Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoca, against the Indians, and the death of Caupolican. In what manner the Spaniards established themselves in CHILI, and made peace with the Indians. How the Dutch and English attempted to settle in CHILI. Reflections on the peace between the Spaniards and Indians. The number of inhabitants in CHILI: and some farther account of the Indians. 172

S E C T I O N IV.

An account of the produce of CHILI; its vegetables; mines, and animals. A description of the district of CUYO; with the method of travelling through it to Buenos Ayres. Some account of the South-Sea, or Pacific Ocean. And a general view of the trade of CHILI. 193

S E C T I O N V.

An account of the three grand divisions of CHILI: with a particular description of their cities, and principal towns; their situation, government, and trade. 213

S E C T I O N VI.

The islands of CHILI; containing a particular description of JUAN FERNANDEZ. 248

C H A P.

C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. II.

The DESCRIPTION of PARAGUAY, or RIO DE LA PLATA.

S E C T I O N I.

The extent, and nature of the country; with some account of the Indians. In what manner the Portuguese first invaded this country, under Alexius Garcia. What discoveries were made here by Sebastian Cabot; and how the Spaniards made their settlements in this country, under Don Pedro de Mendoza: with some remarks on the jesuits of Paraguay. The six districts, or sub-divisions, of this province; with a particular account of those of Paraguay proper, and Tucuman; their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade.

267

S E C T I O N II.

A particular account of the provinces of RIO DE LA PLATA, GUAYRA, PARANA, and URAGUAY: their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade: but more particularly of the commerce of Buenos Ayres; and of the Assiento treaty, for furnishing it with negroes.

281

C H A P. III.

The DESCRIPTION of PERU.

S E C T I O N I.

The extent and boundaries of this country: the nature of the soil, and climate; with a farther description of the South Sea. An account of the lakes, springs, and rivers of PERU. Of the produce of the country; its vegetables, minerals, and animals: but particularly of the quinquina, or Peruvian bark; and the balsam of PERU: as also of the mines of gold, silver, and mercury; the method of getting and refining those metals; with observations upon their nature, value, and utility: as likewise of the Peruvian sheep, and the bezoar-stone.

292

S E C T I O N II.

An account of the customs of the ancient Peruvian Indians: the rise and power of the incas; their religion; and reigns, from Mangocapa to Atabalippa: with a representation of their form of government.

341

S E C T I O N

C O N T E N T S.

S E C T I O N III.

The invasion of PERU by the Spaniards, under the command of Pizarro and Almagro. The seizure and death of Atabalippa; with the reduction of his empire. The civil dissensions between Pizarro and Almagro; the destruction of both; and the other civil commotions between the Spaniards. An account of the present situation of the Peruvian Indians, and of the Spaniards established among them: with a concise view of their trade and navigation. 356

S E C T I O N IV.

An account of the three grand divisions of PERU, with a description of their cities, and principal towns; their situation, trade, and number of inhabitants. 388

S E C T I O N V.

A description of the principal islands upon the coast of PERU; as also of the Gallapagos, and the islands of Solomon. 418

C H A P. IV.

The DESCRIPTION of TERRA FIRMA, and GUIANA.

S E C T I O N I.

A particular representation of the province of TERRA FIRMA: its boundaries, extent, climate, and soil. The discovery of it, and the settlements made there, by the Spaniards. The eight sub-divisions, or districts, of this country; with an account of their rivers, and principal places of trade; as also of the native Indians, the produce of the country, and the commerce of the Spaniards. 428

S E C T I O N II.

A description of the several ISLANDS, on the coasts of TERRA FIRMA, both in the South and North Seas. 486

S E C T I O N III.

A description of the country of GUIANA. Its three divisions, of Dutch GUIANA, or Surinam; French GUIANA, or Cayenne; and Indian GUIANA, or Caribana: with an account of the commerce carried on by the Dutch and French colonists. 497

D I S S E R T A T I O N I.

On the SPANISH Colonies in SOUTH AMERICA.

*The nature of colonies; and how they were established in AMERICA: with observations on the gold and silver brought from thence into Europe, and re-exported to Asia. The claim of
the*

C O N T E N T S.

the Spaniards to the dominion of the American Seas; with remarks thereon. Their polity in their colonies; and in what manner their trade is conducted by the galleons, and register ships. An estimate of the value of the gold, silver, and other commodities, annually imported into Spain, from AMERICA: with reasons why the former country has been rather impoverished than enriched by the latter.

504

P A R T III.

The DESCRIPTION of BRAZIL.

C H A P. I.

The extent, and boundaries, of this country: how the PORTUGUESE established themselves there; and in what manner they were disturbed by the DUTCH. The face of the country; its animals, vegetables, and commodities; with a particular description of the brazil-tree. The cruelty of the PORTUGUESE to the INDIANS. An account of the present inhabitants of BRAZIL, and of the fifteen captainrics into which the country is divided; with their rivers, towns, and trade: to which is added an estimate of the annual produce of the gold and diamond mines; as also of the brazil-wood, imported into EUROPE.

533

C H A P. II.

An account of the different countries of SOUTH AMERICA, which are still possessed by the Indians. The description of PARAGUAY, and of the government established there by the Jesuits. The republic of St. PAUL. TERRA MAGELLANICA; with its bays, and islands; particularly TERRA DEL FUEGO, and STATEN Island. An account of the Indians of CHILI; and of the country of the AMAZONS: as also of the Indians of POPAYAN, and TERRA FIRMA.

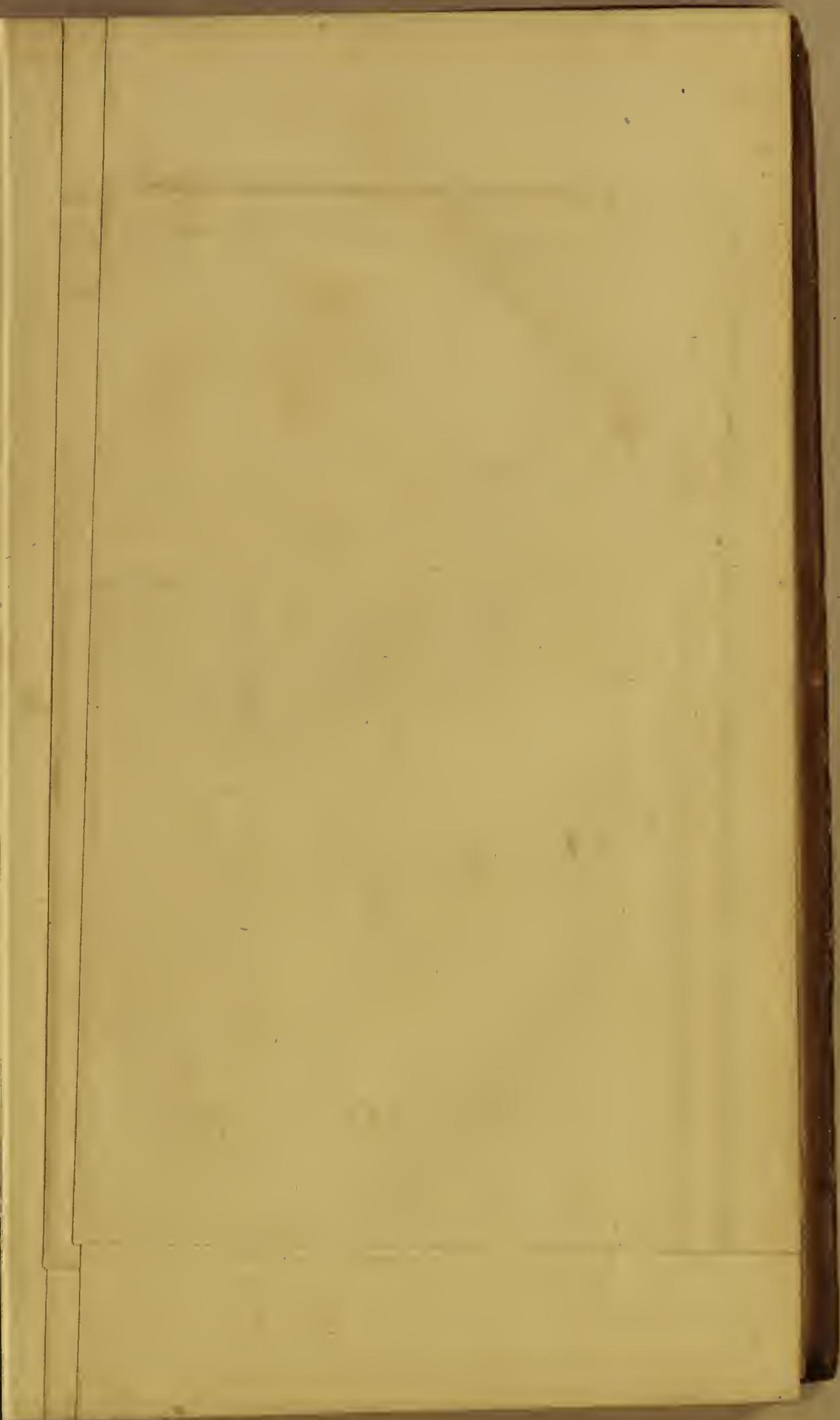
552

DISSERTATION II.

Reflections on the PORTUGUESE colony of BRAZIL; the trade there; and the extraction of gold from PORTUGAL.

572

A N E W





The Islands of Solomon are situated too far Westward to be included in this Map.

Land seen by an Englishman in 1636

Juan Fernandez I. Maule II.

The Sacramento Colony was by the Portuguese in 1750.

An
ACCURATE MAP OF
SOUTH-AMERICA

Drawn from the best
Modern Maps & Charts
and Regulated by Some
late Observations
By Eman: Bowen
Geog: to His Majesty.

Longitude from London



A
NEW HISTORY
OF
A M E R I C A.

P A R T I.

C H A P. I.

The situation and extent of AMERICA: Some account of its natives, and in what manner they first peopled that country: with a general view of its produce and commodities. A summary account of what the ancients thought about a new world; and some accidents leading to the discovery of AMERICA.

ACCORDING to the rules of geography, the terrestrial globe, consisting of earth and water, is 360 degrees, each degree containing 60 miles: so that the whole circumference of the globe is 21,600 geographical miles, and the diameter 7200. But, if the computation is made by *Eng-*

lish miles, the globe will be 25,020 miles round, and 8,340 in diameter; because $69\frac{1}{2}$ miles of *England*, are equal to one degree, or 60 geographical miles. Two thirds of the surface of this globe, at least, are composed of water; and the remainder of earth. The waters are divided into three extensive oceans, called the *Atlantic*, the *Pacific*, and the *Indian* oceans; besides the *Mediterranean*, and other lesser seas. The land is divided into the two great eastern and western continents, with several islands; or, into the old and new world, separated from each other by the *Atlantic* and *Pacific* oceans; the *Atlantic* being about 3000 miles wide between south *America* and *Africa*; and about the same breadth between north *America* and *Europe*: the *Pacific* being about 9000 miles wide between *America* and *Asia*. The eastern continent is subdivided into three parts; *Europe* on the north-west, *Asia* on the north-east, and *Africa* on the south: but the western continent consists only of *America*, which is the subject under our present consideration.

AMERICA is the largest part of the four grand divisions of the world; being situated between 35 and 145 degrees of western longitude; and between 80 north, and 58 degrees of south latitude: bounded by the lands and seas about the arctic pole, on the north; by the *Atlantic* ocean, which separates it from the eastern continent, or old world, on the east; by the great southern ocean on the south; and by the *Pacific* ocean, which divides it from *Asia*, on the west: so that it is between 8 and 9000 miles in length from north to south, and between 3 and 4000 broad; though the isthmus, that joins
north

north and south *America*, is not 60 miles over: yet, from thence, both parts of this continent stretch themselves out, east and west, till they make the above-mentioned breadth: to which may be added, the several islands in the south and north seas, adjacent to the coasts of *America*:

THIS great and populous continent remained unknown, to the rest of the world, for all the ages that passed from the creation to the year 1492, when it was first discovered by *Christopher Columbus*; though this brave adventurer was deprived of the honour of giving his own name to the new world, by *Americus Vesputius*, who only continued the discoveries begun by *Columbus*, before whose time the inhabitants had no general name for their country; but, as *Americus* gave it his name, it has retained it ever since. However, the *Spaniards* afterwards honoured it with a more magnificent title, by calling it the *new world*; and with no great impropriety, as it is so much superior in extent to any of the three parts of the *old world*; or rather is so little inferior in that respect to them all put together. A third name, that of the *West-Indies*, was also given to it by *Columbus*, to excite the princes he was treating with the more, and to authorise his enterprize by that title, on account of the gold, silver, pearls, and spices, he imagined were to be found there; which might vie with those of the *East-Indies*, and was a great reputation to the undertaking. Besides, his intention being to find out the east by way of the west, and the *East-Indies* being at the extremity of the east, he conceived the country he wanted to discover,

must be at the farthest part of the west; therefore the one might as well be called *India*, as the other; and, *Peru* having been discovered after *New Spain*, they were in the plural number called *Indies*: though the term of *West-Indies*, is now generally understood to be only the *Caribbees*, and some other islands in the north seas, as the *Bahamas*, *Jamaica*, *Cuba*, *Hispaniola*, and *Porto-Rico*; to which some have added, the province of *Terra Firma* on the continent.

VARIOUS are the conjectures about the first inhabitants of this country: for, as the *Indians* had no written records, there is no penetrating by their traditions into their antiquities; the most learned men among the *Europeans*, being ignorant of every original thing relative to *America*. The stature, form, and features of the *Americans*, are similar to those among *Europeans*; only their complexion is browner, or more upon the olive-colour: the frame and turn of their minds are the same as the ancient *Europeans*; they adored the same supreme God, erected temples, and sacrificed to him in the same manner. They retained a tradition, that their continent was gradually peopled from a small number. Their military weapons, such as swords, spears, lances, bows, slings, and darts, were like what were used by the *Europeans*; with this only difference, that, as they had lost the use of iron, their wooden swords were edged with sharp flints; while their spears, arrows, and darts, were pointed with the bones of fish, or other animals. However, it is highly probable, that *America* was peopled very early; because the inhabitants were ignorant of almost every art and science, when the *Spaniards* came among them:
 be concluded,
 that

that no adventurers arrived there, in these latter ages, before *Columbus*.

THERE is some reason to imagine, that *America* joins either to the north part of *Asia*, or *Europe*; or, perhaps, to both: which made some writers conceive, that this continent was originally peopled from *Tartary*, the land of *Jesso*, or some other tracts by way of the north pole. Others have supposed, that the country might have been colonised by means of the sea, from some of the *Asiatic* territories; because there is a kind of resemblance between the complexion, hair, beard, customs, and manners, of the *Chinese* and *Japanese*, with some of these natives. But there is more reason to imagine, that *America* was peopled by sea, either by the *Phœnicians*, or *Carthaginians*; who were the best navigators among the ancients.

IT is not probable, that *America* could be peopled by fleets or colonies from *China*, or any other part of *Asia*: because, the south-sea, which separates the one country from the other, is about 9000 miles broad; and the *Chinese*, who are the only people furnished with shipping in the eastern parts of the world, were never inclined to make long voyages, or visit distant regions. Nor could it be peopled by land from the north, or south; because our mariners, in their late voyages to the north-east, and to the north-west, have discovered, that the sea extends more than 80 degrees to the northward; and they have also failed to near 70 degrees southward: so that if *America* was peopled by any of these ways, the persons who went there must be supposed to have travelled

6. A NEW HISTORY of

so near the poles, as to pass thro' many parts which may be neither passable, or habitable. Therefore, we may affirm, that *America* was first peopled from *Africa*, either by the *Phœnicians* or *Carthaginians*; who had ships capable of carrying a thousand persons, some of which might have been accidentally driven to *America*, by an east wind, when it is not more than three weeks sail from *Africa*, or the *Canaries*, to that continent. It is certain, that part of the western coasts of *Africa*, and the *Canary Islands*, were planted by the *Carthaginians*, about 500 years before the christian æra: but, when their state was destroyed by the *Romans*, all the discoveries and plantations of the *Carthaginians*, were lost and ruined, by the neglect of navigation: so that when the *Spaniards* made a new discovery of the *Canary Islands*, in the 15th century, the natives could not tell from whence to derive their original; and, like the *Americans*, imagined they were the only people in the world. Besides, the climate of *America* was suitable to the constitution of the *Africans*; who fixed the two great empires of *Mexico* and *Peru*, within the torrid zone; which the inhabitants of the more northern latitudes would not have done.

It may be asked, how every species of beasts, birds, and insects, first came into *America*? Whether by the extremities of the north or south pole? Or, whether it was by sea?

It may be answered, by sea, rather than by land: because, it is yet uncertain, whether *America* is joined either to *Europe*, or *Asia*. It is also improbable, that many animals, bred in hot climates, would leave their temperature, to make any migrations

migrations into the frozen regions : to which may be added, that there were no horses, oxen, or mules, found in *America*, when the *Spaniards* first discovered the country ; though these animals were the best adapted for the conveniency of carriage ; as the *Americans* have neither camels nor elephants.

THE natives of *America* differ very much from one another, according to their various nations, foils, laws, and governments. They are represented, as naturally passionate and revengeful, savage and cruel ; especially where they have not been civilized by *Europeans* : but, their genuine character should be considered with caution ; because the *Spaniards* found it their interest to traduce them in that ungenerous manner, to excuse the horrid treatments, and bloody massacres, which the poor *Americans* suffered from these haughty invaders. It is certain, that the *Americans* in general, are endowed with many excellent natural qualifications ; being sensible and ingenious, brave and generous, strong and active. The *Spaniards* found some polite governments among them, particularly the well-governed monarchies of *Mexico* and *Peru* ; with spacious and populous cities, magnificent temples, rich palaces, and other noble structures. They also found one common-wealth, called *Tlascalala*, which was well regulated and civilized. It is true, some inferior governments were to be met with, scattered on each side of the two grand monarchies, as well as in the islands ; where the people were less polite, and more uncivilized ; living in villages, and being

governed by petty princes ; which is what may be reasonably expected in such a great extent of country, and variety of nations.

THE generality of the *Americans*, especially those of inferior rank, and in the hot countries, go almost naked ; some of them entirely so ; and the others wear only a kind of short garment, reaching from about the waist to the knees ; though some have a short cloak thrown over their shoulders ; both made either of the skins of beasts, or of some light stuffs of their own weaving, or of the feathers of some birds ; in the joining and mixing of which they are extremely expert. They likewise paint their faces and bodies with figures of animals, flowers, or other things of different colours, and some of them raised like a bas relief. However, there are others, particularly those of the highest rank, and more civilized countries, who cover their bodies in a more elegant manner ; wearing ornaments on their heads, chiefly composed of the finest feathers, beautifully variegated and adjusted. Their laws and customs were very different : but, in general, their religion was the same, which is still retained by those who have preserved their liberty ; their worship being commonly paid to the sun, moon, stars, fire, water, beasts, and demons ; though there are some who acknowledge a supreme being above them all, whom they worship as their creator, and the sole director of the universe. Learning was also as great a stranger as the true religion among the *Americans*, who were unacquainted with the use of letters ; so that what records they had, consisted principally in the disposition of a certain
number

number of knots, tied in a peculiar manner, in a kind of bundle of strings like packthread; or a number of notches on pieces of wood; or at best in some ill-shaped figures of men, beasts, birds, trees, and flowers, traced, or painted on the leaves or barks of trees, or some sort of stuff, that served them instead of paper: whereby they were entirely ignorant of all the sciences.

A COUNTRY of such great extent, not only on each side of the equinox, but extending so very far beyond each of the tropics, must necessarily be supposed to have as great a difference of soils, as it has of climates: though, upon the whole, excepting the most northern and southern parts, which are naturally cold and barren, the rest is an immense treasury of nature, productive of most, if not of all the plants, grains, fruits, trees, and minerals, that are found in the other parts of the world; not only in as great quantities, but many of them more so, and in much greater perfection: besides which, it has almost an infinite variety of others peculiar to itself, that will not grow, or flourish, in any other country. But these are nothing in comparison to the numerous and inexhaustible mines of gold and silver; which are so far from being impoverished, that they seem rather to want some fresh supplies of hands to draw out these endless treasures, and gorge the insatiable avarice of mankind; notwithstanding all the art and labour of man has been employed in endeavouring to drain them for these two last centuries. However, gold and silver are far from being the only precious commodities that this country produces, which has also a great abundance of diamonds, pearls,

pearls, emeralds, amethysts, and other valuable stones, sent into *Europe* in such quantities as to render their value inconsiderable, in comparison of what it was formerly. To these may be added a great number of other commodities, which are of great utility; as the constant and plentiful supplies of sugar, tobacco, cochineal, indigo, anatto, logwood, brasil, fustic, lignum vitæ, ginger, pimento, cocoa, cotton, red-wood, furs, hides, ambergrease, and bezoar; balsams of *Tolu*, *Peru*, and *Chili*; jesuits bark, mechoacon, sassafras, sarsaparilla, cassia, and tamarinds; with many kinds of other woods and plants, to which the *Europeans* were utter strangers before the discovery of these *American* parts; or were obliged to buy them at an extravagant price from *Asia* and *Africa*, perhaps at the second, third, or fourth hand; many of the most valuable ones also adulterated by the *Jews*, who were the chief merchants and brokers of them in those parts, from which they were brought at an immense charge and trouble. *America* also abounds in excellent fruits, that grow in great perfection; such as pine-apples, pomegranates, citrons, lemons, oranges, limes, malicats, cherries, pears, apples, figs, and others; with an abundance of culinary, medicinal, and other herbs, roots, and plants. To all these may be added, the surprising fecundity of the soil, which makes it nourish many exotic productions, in as great a perfection as their own native ground: this being evidently remarkable in the coffee and rice, which have been lately cultivated there with great success, and might be extended to many other vegetables

vegetables that *Europeans* are obliged to have, from *Asia* and *Africa*, at extravagant prices.

YET, with all this great plenty and variety, *America* laboured under the want of many very necessary and useful commodities: for the *Europeans*, on their first landing there, found neither corn, wine, nor oil; the inhabitants making their bread of some kind of pulse, or roots; their drink was little better; and they were quite unacquainted with the use of money. There were neither beeves, horses, asses, sheep, goats, or hogs, though the land abounded with excellent pastures; and the very sight of any of them, especially of a horse, would throw a whole troop of those wild inhabitants into a panic. But all these have long since been sent thither in such plenty, and have propagated so well, that there is not any want of them; which may particularly be seen by the great quantities of hides, especially of oxen, that are continually brought away from thence. However, instead of these *European* animals, they had several kinds of others, equally useful and valuable, which were unknown to *Europeans*. The same may be said of that prodigious number of birds which are to be seen there; some of them greatly surpassing all that can be found in any other parts of the world, for their beautiful shapes and colours. Besides, there was an abundance of fish, of all kinds, both in their seas and rivers.

THE rivers of *America* are universally allowed to be the largest in the whole world; not only with regard to their breadth and depth, but also on account of their extensive course. The mountains are of a most surprising height and extent;
and

and there are some very large woods, desarts, and lakes.

BEFORE the discovery of *America*, the generality of mankind were so far from imagining that there could be any such continent, that the very thought of such a thing was looked upon as extravagant: for it was believed, that the land terminated at the *Canary Islands*, and that all beyond them to the westward was sea; though some of the ancients gave hints that there were some other countries to the west. *Plato*, in two of his dialogues, mentions the island of *Atlantis*; and there is still extant a description of it in *Greek* verse, ascribed to *Solon*, on whose credit the whole story depends; who relates that he was informed, by an *Egyptian* priest, of a tradition of this island; which seems to be either an allegory, or a fable. The next authority is taken from a book generally attributed to *Aristotle*, wherein it is alledged, that the *Carthaginians* discovered an island beyond the *Streights of Gibraltar*, large in extent, fertile in its soil, and full of navigable rivers; at the distance of some days sail from the continent, but uninhabited: that the first discoverers fixed there; but the *Carthaginians* ordered, that none of their subjects should settle there for the future, and dislodged those who were already settled. *Diodorus Siculus* gives a far more accurate and probable account of this matter, describing this island at large, and then shewing why it remained uninhabited. He says, “ The *Tyrians* would have planted a colony there, but that the *Carthaginians* opposed it for two reasons: first, because they were afraid too many of their citizens would be inclined
“ to

“ to transport themselves into this island, which
“ might be prejudicial to their affairs as a trading
“ people. Secondly, because they desired to reserve
“ this island as an asylum, to which they might
“ retreat at any time, if oppressed by intolerable
“ misfortunes.” Some authors take this island
to be the largest of the *Canaries* : but that seems
improbable, for many reasons ; particularly, be-
cause the *Canaries* are very indifferently provided
with water : whereas the *Greek* authority expressly
says, there were several navigable rivers. There
is yet another passage in an author, perhaps, more
ancient than any of these, which was *Theopompus*,
a *Greek* writer, of whose works there remain now
only some fragments, and among them one re-
lating to a new world, wherein are said to be two
great cities, one inhabited by warriors, and the
other by priests ; but the whole is only an allegory.
Pliny reports, that *Hanno*, the *Carthaginian*, sailed
round *Africa* ; though he also affirms, that the
middle region of the world, where the sun con-
tinually runs its course, is parched and burnt up
with fire : therefore, the opinion that *Hanno*, or
any of the ancients, surrounded *Africa*, must be
false ; because they would not only then have known
that those countries were habitable ; but they must
have known another hemisphere, have seen a new
set of stars, and have had the sun to the north-
ward of them at noon-day ; which were such re-
markable discoveries, that, if they had been once
made, could never have been forgotten. And yet
we meet with no mention of these particulars, either
in *Greek* or *Roman* writers, or the least description
of any people or country in *Africa* south of the
equator :

equator: besides, it is exceeding strange, that, when men passed to the farthest bounds of *Africa* beyond the equator, none ever returned to inform the more northern regions that those parts were habitable. *Seneca*, the tragedian, in his *Medæa*, says, that a time would come when the ocean should be sailed on, a great continent discovered, and a new world found: though this was rather like a prophecy, than a description: however, this was also the opinion of some other great men among the ancients, founded upon that disproportion there appeared to be between the land and water then discovered.

ST. GREGORY, on the epistle of St. *Clement*, says, that beyond the ocean there is another world, or rather worlds: but the other fathers derided those philosophers, who believed the earth to be globular, and surrounded by the heavens equally on every side: they imagined, that the heavens constituted but one hemisphere; and that the earth was flat and round like a table, serving as a basis, or foundation, to support the fine vaulted roof over their heads; so that nothing was more exploded by them than the notion of antipodes. “Is it possible, says *Lactantius*, that any person
“ can be so credulous to believe there are a people,
“ or nation, walking with their feet upwards,
“ and their heads downwards; that trees and
“ corn grow downwards; or that rain, snow,
“ and hail, ascend to the earth?” And St. *Austin* not only disbelieved the antipodes, but also said, “It is not agreeable to reason, or good
“ sense, to affirm, that men may pass over so vast
“ an ocean as the *Atlantic*, from this continent,
“ to

“ to a new-found world ; or that there are inhabitants there ; all men being descended from the first man *Adam*.”

SOME of the wisest among the ancients, imagined there might possibly be a large proportion of the world undiscovered in their time ; and therefore made choice of it, as a proper scene for laying schemes of such common-wealths as existed only in their fancies : they dreamt of a new world, and left behind them some broken accounts of these dreams. However, many of them were of opinion, that all the climates between the tropics were uninhabitable ; founding their judgment upon a point of their philosophy, which was, that the preservation of the animal demanded by its temper the just proportion of the first four qualities, which they supposed could not be found under the torrid zone ; for so they called it, because of the force of the sun there, being all the year almost perpendicular to it. Therefore, having observed its effects on this side of the tropics, how it dries the earth in summer, and consumes the fountains ; also thinking, that if it did not withdraw to the other tropic, it would have entirely fired the earth, though refreshed by the nights ; it is no wonder if they were persuaded, that when the beams of the sun were continual, there could be no habitation for man. However, experience has discovered not only that those regions contained under the zodiac, have been, and are inhabited by many nations ; but also, that there are, even under the equinoctial line, some places, particularly *Quito*, so temperate and healthful, that they are preferable to several in the temperate zones.

T H E R E

THERE are also some fabulous accounts relating to the discovery of *America*; particularly the following, which is recorded in Doctor *Powel's* history of *Wales*. “*Owen Gwyneth*, who was prince of north *Wales*, being dead, left three legitimate sons, *Edward*, *David*, and *Madoc*; also, an illegitimate son, named *Howel*. The eldest son *Edward*, whose right it was to rule, was laid aside, on account of some blemish in his face; therefore *Howel* had the presumption to take the government on himself: upon which, *David*, the second son, raised all the forces he could against him, slew him in battle, and thenceforth quietly enjoyed the government, until his nephew, the son of *Edward*, came of age. In the mean time, the youngest brother, *Madoc ap Owen Gwyneth*, resolving to get out of danger, provided himself with ships and men; and, about the year 1170, set sail from *Wales*. He left the coast of *Ireland* far north, and kept a westerly coast till he arrived at a strange land; where he left most of his people, returned back to *Wales*, and upbraided his kinsmen and countrymen with their folly, in quarrelling about their wild and barren lands; which induced a great many families to go with him to that new-found country, where every thing flourished in plenty. Accordingly, he set sail a second time, with ten ships: but, as his colony was small, in respect of the inhabitants which he found there, his people, by degrees, dwindled into their language and customs; and, it must be supposed, intermixed with the natives in marriages: so that the inhabitants, found there by the *Spaniards*, were certainly descendants from these
Britons;

Britons; for it appears, by the history of *Francis Lopez de Gomera*, that the natives of the island of *Cozumel* honoured the cross, and made use of several words in their language, which are of *Welch* signification; for instance, the island of *Pengwin*, and the birds of that name, in *Welsh*, signifies, White-head; for these birds, in reality, have white heads: likewise there is a kind of fruit growing in that country, called *Gwyneths*, which is a *Welsh* word. Moreover, it appears from the evidence of the *Spanish* chronicles, that the speech made by *Montezuma*, the great emperor of *Mexico*, in the presence of *Hernando Cortez*, about the year 1520, is a further confirmation of what is related of that *Welsh* settlement: for when *Cortez* had made the emperor a prisoner, and found that his subjects were unanimously resolved to rescue him, and destroy the *Spaniards*; *Cortez*, fearing the worst, soothed *Montezuma* with such fair speeches, as prevailed on him to desire his subjects to lay down their arms; to which purpose he harangued them in the following manner: “ My kinsmen, friends, “ and servants, you well know, that eighteen “ years I have been your king, as my father and “ grandfathers were, and always I have been un- “ to you a loving prince, as you have been unto “ me good and obedient subjects, and so, I hope, “ you will remain unto me all the days of my life. “ You ought to have in remembrance, that either “ you have heard of your fathers, or else our di- “ vines have instructed you, that we are not na- “ turally of this country, nor yet is our kingdom “ durable; because our forefathers came from a “ far country, and their king and captain, who “ brought

“ brought them hither, returned again to his natural country, saying, he would send such as should rule and govern us, if he returned not himself.”

THAT the country, which the *British* prince discovered, was really *America*, is more than can be positively proved; but that this tale was invented, after the discovery of that country, to set up a prior title is most certainly false: for *Meredith ap Rhese*, a famous *Welsh* poet, who died in 1477, composed an ode in honour of this *Madoc*, wherein was contained an account of his discoveries. Now, as this was several years before *Columbus* made his first voyage, we may be satisfied that this was really a *British* tradition, and no tale of late invention. Besides, the above oration of *Montezuma* carries with it a strong presumption in favour of the *Welsh* history; for though the *Americans* were deficient in literature; yet they handed down every thing of moment, by tradition, from father to son: nor were their priests less remarkable in predicting future events; which, as they were more worthy of observation, made the stronger impressions on the people; and, therefore, this prediction, that concerned the revolution of their state, which had been foretold them for many years before, was greatly conducive to the advantage of the *Spaniards*, when the *Indians* saw that time probably come to pass, which they so much dreaded; and, as it carried with it the plain appearance of the destruction of their monarchy, they were the sooner brought into subjection; for they put so much confidence in this prophecy, that they thought it in vain to oppose the *Spaniards*. Upon this

this presumption, some statesmen were for proving the right of Queen *Elizabeth*, to these countries; but they were dissuaded from it by others, who considered that *Welshmen*, as well as other people, might be cast upon those parts by tempestuous weather, and might easily implant some few words of their own, among the original inhabitants.

ANOTHER early discovery was made by the *English*, which claims the precedence of any other Christian nation: this is relative to the island of *Madeira*, which was first discovered by one *Macham*, an *Englishman*, in the year 1344, in the following manner, which is recorded in the history of *Portugal*, written by *Antonio Galuano*.
 “ This *Macham* having sailed out of *England*,
 “ with intent to retire into *Spain*, with a woman
 “ whom he had seduced from her friends, was ac-
 “ cidentally drove, by a tempest, upon the island
 “ of *Madeira*, where he landed with her, and
 “ some of his company, in a bay or haven,
 “ which after him was called *Machio*, in order to
 “ recover her from her sea-sickness and fright.
 “ But the ship being afterwards drove off from
 “ the coast, failed away with the rest of the crew,
 “ leaving *Macham* with his mistress, and such as
 “ landed with him, without any hope of returning
 “ from the island, which gave her so much grief
 “ as to occasion her death; when *Macham*, to
 “ commemorate his affection for her, and the oc-
 “ casion and manner of their coming there, built
 “ a little chapel, and a monastery to bury her in,
 “ whereon he engraved the whole story. He af-
 “ terwards made a canoe, by hollowing a large
 “ tree, in which, without sails or oars, he ven-

“ tured to sea, and was drove upon the coast of
 “ *Africa*, where the *Moors* took him, and his
 “ companions, whom they presented to their
 “ king as a great wonder, who sent them all to
 “ the king of *Castille*.”

THIS discovery put others upon similar enterprizes; in consequence of which king *Henry iii.* of *Castille*, and several persons in *France*, went upon the further discovery of *Madeira*, and of the *Canary Islands*, in the year 1395, which was forty-nine years after the discovery made by *Macham*. *Antonio Galvano*, the *Portuguese* historian, also says, that in the year 1417, during the reign of king *John ii.* of *Castille*, and the regency of his mother *Catherine*, *Monsieur Ruben* of *Bracamont*, who was admiral of *France*, obtained from the queen-regent of *Castille*, a permission to conquer the islands of the *Canaries*, with the title of king for one of his relations, whose name was *John de Betancourt*; for which purpose she likewise assisted him with a considerable number of soldiers, with whom he departed from *Seville*: but, at the same time, it was generally imagined, that his principal aim was upon the island of *Madeira*, which *Macham* had already discovered.

HOWEVER, the *Spaniards* took possession of the *Canaries* in 1405, which were anciently called the *Fortunate Islands*; being seven in number, situated in the *Atlantic* ocean, between 12 and 21 degrees of west longitude, and between 27 and 29 of north latitude, about 150 miles S. W. of *Morocco*, in *Africa*. These islands were first discovered and planted by the *Carthaginians*; but, when the *Romans* destroyed that state, they put a stop to navigation,

gation, especially on the west coast of *Africa*; so that these islands lay afterwards concealed from the rest of the world, till the *Spaniards* took possession of them, who found that the natives had a language which none of the people of the continent understood; even when they had learned *Spanish* enough to render themselves intelligible, they could give no account of their ancestors, or from what country they came; and, though they resembled the natives of the north of *Africa*, in their stature and complexion, they retained none of their customs, were masters of no science, and ignorant of any other country in the world besides their own islands. But the *Madeira* islands, which are situated about 100 miles north of the *Canaries*, were not planted till the year 1425, when the *Portuguese* took possession of them, and found them uninhabited; since which time the *Canaries* have been subject unto *Spain*; as the *Madeiras*, the *Cape Verd Islands*, and the *Azores*, have been subject to *Portugal*. Before the discovery of these islands, the clearest and most intelligible report, concerning another part of the world, which preceded the discovery of *America*, was the tale of the island of the *Seven Churches*, which briefly was this. Some *Portuguese* sailors, having been driven in a small bark several days to sea, reported, on their return, that they had been on shore in a certain island, the inhabitants of which were Christians, descended from the *Spaniards*, who fled from their country on the first invasion of the *Moors*, when they discovered and planted this island. These *Portuguese* were compelled to put again to sea, to recover the land of which they pretended

to have made a discovery: but they were never heard of again; though the story continued to be credited, and much talked of, among the vulgar. However, the honour of the discovery of the new world was reserved for *Christopher Columbus*.

C H A P. II.

Some remarks on the commerce and navigation of the ancients. The discovery and use of the loadstone. Some observations on the difference between the complexions of the Europeans, Africans, and Americans. An account of the birth and education of Christopher Columbus; his reasons for believing there was a new world to be discovered; and some reflections on the dishonour done him by having that country named after Americus Vesputius.

AS the world increased in the number of its inhabitants, governments were established, and colonies planted. *Minos*, king of *Crete*, destroyed all the pirates in the *Mediterranean*; when the seas became free for trade, which induced the people to live upon the coasts of *Greece*, and to apply themselves to the art of navigation. The antiquity of commerce is almost coeval with the world; for necessity was its parent; the desire of conveniency improved it; while vanity, luxury, and avarice, have brought it to its present maturity. The *Egyptians*, *Phœnicians*, and *Carthaginians*, who were a *Tyrian* colony, were the first, the most daring, and most experienced traders of all

all antiquity ; at least, it is evident they were the first who undertook long and hazardous voyages, and established a traffic by sea, between coasts very remote. Under the *Asiatic* and *Grecian* empires, ancient history conveys, from time to time, the traces of a commerce cultivated by several nations : it flourished among the *Carthaginians*, and was encouraged for some time by the *Romans* ; but the destruction of the *Roman* empire, by the irruptions of the barbarians, occasioned the declension of commerce ; for some time suspending its ordinary operation, untill it recovered itself in *Italy*, among the *Pisans*, *Florentines*, *Genoese*, and *Venetians*, who furnished *Europe* with the commodities of the eastern countries, 'till the latter end of the fifteenth century, when the *Portuguese* discovered a passage to *India* by sea, round the *Cape of Good Hope* ; by which means the principal part of trade came into their hands.

THE ancients never attempted to double the *Cape of Good Hope*, or undertake any extensive voyages ; because they were unacquainted with the use of the loadstone, which is so very essential to the present practice of navigation. The discovery of the mariner's compass has been of more general and important use to human society, than any other instrument ; and the invention of it is usually ascribed to *Flavio de Melfi*, or *Flavio Giori*, a *Neapolitan*, about 1302. It is a point in which divines, philosophers, and politicians, unanimously agree, that sciences have their seasons ; or that arts, of the greatest consequence to mankind, have, by a concurrence of happy circumstances, been quickly brought to perfection in one age ; though

little progress had been made in them in others: so that the general fund of knowledge, possessed by mankind, increases irregularly, as well in point of time as of place; for, as science first travelled from the east, so, in the course of ages, it became a grand point of knowledge to find the way there again; and a desire of finding a new route to the *East-Indies*, occasioned the first discovery of *America*; the former of which brought immense treasures into the kingdom of *Portugal* for a considerable time, and the latter still forms the opulence of *Spain*. It need only be added, that in examining the reasons why commerce passed successively from the *Italians* and *Germans* to the *Portuguese* and *Spaniards*; as also from those again to the *English* and *Dutch*; it may be established as a maxim, that the relation between commerce and navigation, or rather their union, is so intimate and necessary, that the subversion of the one inevitably draws after it the ruin of the other, and that they will always either flourish or dwindle together.

In the fifteenth century, many ingenious men, and some great princes, applied themselves to the improvement and encouragement of navigation; which had, for some years before, been much neglected, and left to men of mean education. The discovery, or rather the retrieving of the *Canaries*, in 1417, by *John de Betancourt*, a *French* gentleman, though in virtue of a *Spanish* commission, was one of the first fruits of that laudable spirit of encouraging the useful and noble art of navigation, which, since the invention of the mariner's compass, began to discover itself in several parts of the world. The *Portuguese* soon after discovered the

the *Madeira* islands, and the *Azores*; but the great advantages which the crown of *Portugal* derived from its commerce, in the new course to the *East-Indies*; occasioned such discourse in the world, as to put many persons of genius, and enterprising seamen, upon aiming at a farther prosecution of such profitable adventures. The use of the compass being thoroughly understood, mariners were no longer afraid of steering without sight of land: by which means they gave the winds and the waves a greater opportunity to facilitate their views, by carrying them sometimes out of their intended courses, and thereby affording them occasion of making remarks, which otherwise they never could have done.

VASCO DE GAMA first discovered the route by the *Cape of Good Hope* to the *East-Indies*, for the king of *Portugal*; and *Christopher Columbus* had the honour of first discovering *America*, in the service of the king of *Spain*. The brave and judicious Sir *William Monson* observes, “ That if men consider
 “ the divine work of God, and the end of his
 “ working, it is marvellous to behold, that *Ame-*
 “ *rica*, being a continent, and equal to all the
 “ rest of the world in bigness, should be conceal-
 “ ed from the creation, ’till one thousand four
 “ hundred and odd years after the birth of Christ;
 “ and not so much as thought of, though some
 “ philosophers seemed to rove at it. And when it
 “ pleased his divine majesty to cast that blessing
 “ upon *Europe*, if we consider the time he did it,
 “ and the occasion why he did it, it will put us
 “ into admiration and acknowledgment of the
 “ power of Christ, against the opinion of *Jews*
 “ and

“ and *Turks* : for could he shew himself a more
“ just and loving God, than in pouring upon
“ Christendom such a blessing of wealth, at the
“ time it was likely to be swallowed up by bar-
“ barous *Turks* and *Moors*, who were only with-
“ stood by the wealth of the *Indies* ?” In another
place, he also says, “ It is surprizing, that out of
“ so many flourishing nations as God hath created
“ and civilized, he should elect the kingdom of
“ *Portugal* for the discovery of the *East-Indies* ;
“ because *Portugal* was a country, in those days,
“ of less esteem and reputation, of less renown and
“ fame, of less ability and valour, than any other
“ Christian monarchy ; and to assign them such a
“ time to effect it, when they enjoyed a happy
“ peace with their neighbours, and had no ene-
“ my to oppose or hinder their designs.” The
Portuguese discovered the coast of *Guinea*, in the
year 1471, which gave the light to all future dis-
coveries, as it led them to the *Cape of Good Hope*,
and from thence to *India*. As *Guinea* yielded a
complexion to its inhabitants, as different as white
and black from the *Europeans* ; so *America* was soon
afterwards found to produce a sort of people, dif-
fering from the *Europeans* in whiteness, and the
Africans in blackness, having a colour like an
olive, and being a medium between both ; which
seems strange, considering that *Guinea* and *America*
lie east and west all in one parallel, so that, in rea-
son, there should be no such difference. How-
ever, this alteration in complexion, and the plen-
tiful increase of gold, in these climates, is equal-
ly attributed to the heat and operation of the sun ;
per-

perhaps not improperly, as may be shewn by the following reasons.

THE sun, rising to the eastward, betwixt the two tropics, runs its course westward over *Asia* and *Africa*, till it comes to the ocean; in which circuit its extreme heat engenders the rich metal of gold, and changes the complexions of creatures to a black hue, reflected by the heat of the earth. The sun then passes over the air of the sea, and is cooled by it, as it was before heated by the land; so that by the time it draws near to the continent of *America*, it has lost great part of its vigour and force, which renders it unable to produce the same effect as in *Africa*; therefore it does not enrich the earth so as to make it become gold, as it afterwards does, when it has run its course the breadth of *America*, where it again ripens the matter and substance of gold; for we see, by experience, that the greatest quantity of gold is sent into *Spain* from *Peru*, which is the most western part of *America*; when *Guiana*, and other places in the most eastern parts of this country, never afford that metal.

THOUGH there was an opinion maintained for several years, among some particular people, that there was another continent to the west; yet no person undertook to prove it by probable arguments, as also that a passage from this to that part of the world was practicable, before the time of *Christopher Columbus*; who began, and very soon effected this discovery.

THIS excellent person, whom the *Spaniards*, for the more easy pronounciation called *Colon*, was born in the neighbourhood of the city of *Genoa*: he is said to have been descended from the lords of the
castle

castle of *Cucaro*, in the dukedom of *Montferrat*; though others say, his ancestors were natives of the city of *Placentia*; but which was the most certain descent was left to be decided by the supreme council of the *Indies*, who, as well as his own son *Don Ferdinand*, could make no determination about that matter. However, his parents were not in such mean circumstances as to be incapable of bestowing a liberal education upon their son, who was put to school at *Pavia*, where he was instructed in arithmetic, navigation, and astronomy; as also in drawing and painting, at least sufficient to draw a landskip, or describe the situation of a place. When he came from school, where he made the theory of navigation his principal study, he was resolved to make himself master of the practical part of that business; and accordingly went very early to sea, where he served under an admiral of his own name; who was a remarkable corsair, and had several engagements with the *Turks*, *Venetians*, and other nations; in one of which, his ship was burnt upon the coast of *Portugal*, when *Christopher Columbus* had the good fortune to escape to shore upon a plank. He immediately went to *Lisbon*, where he found several of his countrymen and acquaintance were settled, with whom he resided some time; after which he made several voyages to the north and south, and particularly to *Guinea* on the coast of *Africa*. While he was in the service of *Portugal*, he improved his fortune by marrying *Donna Philippa Muniz de Perestrelo*, who was daughter to the governor of *Porto Santo*, the least of the *Madeira* islands; by which marriage *Columbus* came into the possession of several charts, maps,

maps, and journals, belonging to his father-in-law, who had been concerned in several naval enterprizes; which may have given him the first hint of making discoveries to the westward.

COLUMBUS still applied himself attentively to study cosmography, astronomy, and geometry; appearing from his youth to have a more than ordinary inclination to be acquainted with the state of all countries on the face of the globe, and to make new discoveries; which probably was his reason for settling at *Lisbon*, as no nation at that time had carried their discoveries farther than the *Portuguese*; among whom he was perpetually drawing maps and charts, in which he received great encouragement from that enterprizing people.

THIS eminent man had many reasons to believe that there were other countries: for he considered, that the heavens being round, and moving circularly about the earth, that the earth and the water compacted together, formed a globe of the two elements; that the part discovered was not all the earth, but that there was still much undiscovered in the space of 360 degrees, which made the whole circumference, and ought to be inhabited; because the creator of the universe had not created it to lie waste and desolate: he also conceived, that though many persons doubted whether there were land and sea, towards both poles, it was necessary that the earth should have the same proportion with the antarctic pole, as it has in the arctic; from whence he positively concluded, that all the five zones were inhabited in all parts; in which he was the more confirmed, after he sailed to the northward, as far as 75 degrees of latitude.

It should be observed, that *Columbus* formed a right conclusion from false premises; and, by the happiness of his genius, struck out this important truth from a supposition that was absolutely false. He was of opinion that the *Indies*, which the *Portuguese* had lately discovered in the east, made no other than a great continent, belonging to those parts of the universe already known; therefore, he conceived that those who sailed east, must come to their west coasts; and that consequently, by sailing west, it was as practicable to reach their eastern shores: from which supposition, he called the islands he discovered, the *West-Indies*; and when the continent of *America* was first found out, the *Spaniards* looked upon it to be part of the continent of *India*, till it was known that the south-sea, or pacific-ocean, lay between *India* and *America*.

COLUMBUS was confirmed in the opinion of a continent that lay to the westward, by Signor *Paul*, a physician of *Florence*, with whom he constantly corresponded during his residence at *Lisbon*; and who acquainted him that the voyage to *China*, through the atlantic-ocean, by the west, could not be farther than the voyage from *Portugal* to *Guinea*; which was a great error, though it gave *Columbus* encouragement to attempt that voyage. For Signor *Paul*, computed the distance between *Lisbon* and *China*, sailing westward, to be about five thousand miles; in which he was mistaken about two thirds: However, he was so far accidentally in the right, that the space between ours, and the next continent to the westward, was much thereabouts; and gave *Columbus*

a no-

a notion that he should make a discovery of some land about five or six thousand miles to the westward.

BESIDES these reasons for undertaking so great an enterprize, *Columbus* also went upon very probable experience: for, discoursing with some mariners who had navigated the western ocean, and particularly to the *Azores*, he was informed by *Martin Vicente*, a *Portuguese* pilot, that, being once 450 leagues to the westward of *Cape St. Vincent*, he took up a piece of wood, artificially wrought, and, as he imagined, not with iron; for which reason, and as the wind had continued many days together westerly, he was of opinion that the stick came from some island. *Peter Correa*, who was brother-in-law to *Columbus*, also assured him, that, in the island of *Porto Santo*, he had seen another piece of wood brought by the same winds, which was wrought in the same manner; as also that there had been thick canes drove upon those shores, unlike any that grew in this part of the world; and, when the west winds blew, pines were frequently driven on the *Azores*, or western islands. Others, who had failed to the westward of the *Azores*, some hundreds of leagues, affirmed they had seen an island in those seas: and one mariner assured *Columbus*, at *Port St. Mary*, that as he was sailing to *Ireland* he had seen land, which the rest of the crew imagined to be *Tartary*; that it bore away to the westward, and has since appeared to be the coast called *Baccalaos*, in the north of *America*; but that they were prevented from coming at it, by the violence of the winds. *Peter de Velasco*, a *Gallician*, said, that as he was sailing for *Ireland*, he ran so far to the northward

ward as to see land to the westward of that island. But what principally encouraged *Columbus* to this undertaking, according to some authorities, were the sea-charts and journals of a pilot who died at his house in *Lisbon*, that appeared to have discovered some land far to the westward: however, his son rejects this story, as derogatory to the honour of his father *Columbus*, who he insists was the first discoverer of the new world; as he most certainly was; at least, he was the first who discovered it to any purpose, so as to plant colonies, and make settlements there, in these latter ages, which is an honour that might satisfy his descendants. Though, as those seas about the *Azores*, the *Canaries*, the *Cape Verd* islands, and the coast of *Guinea*, were then constantly navigated by the *Portuguese* and *Spaniards*, it is not improbable, that some one of their ships should have been driven a fortnight or three weeks sail to the westward of the intended course, and discovered either the islands or continent of *America*; as it is reported this pilot did, who died at the house of *Christopher Columbus* in *Lisbon*. Upon the whole, it is evident that *Columbus* had some certainty, or the highest expectation, and probability, of succeeding in this attempt: otherwise, for a man to venture to sail so many thousand miles upon an ocean, 'till then esteemed illimitable, must have been deemed an act of temerity, rather than the result of wisdom. Besides, by his persisting so long in the resolution of sailing in search of a country beyond the *Atlantic* ocean; by applying to so many princes and states for assistance; and by stipulating for no other pay or reward, than the government of the lands and seas he should

should discover ; it is plain, that he was well convinced of the honour and prosperity of his noble and unparalleled enterprize. The *Phœnicians* deified *Hercules*, only for passing the streights of *Gibraltar*, and discovering *Spain*, which he took to be the farthest bounds of the world : and the *Roman* senate decreed *Julius Cæsar*, a procession of twenty days, on his return from his first expedition into *Britain* ; because they imagined he had discovered, and led them to the conquest of a new-world. Then what honours should not have been paid to *Columbus*, the discoverer of *America* ? and how shamefully were these honours withheld from so great a man ; who was not illustrious, like *Cæsar*, for his martial actions, and the slaughter of more than a million of people ; but was of service to society, like *Hercules*, in discovering new countries, and establishing colonies, for the advantage of trade, and the utility of mankind ? No man deserved to have the new world called after his name but *Columbus*, who discovered it : though he was so unworthily and ingratefully treated by the *Spaniards*, that they suffered this great country to be called *America*, in honour of *Americus Vesputius*, a *Florentine*, who was less intitled to that honour than any of those who took upon them to make farther discoveries after the return of *Columbus* : for *Americus* was so far from performing any considerable thing, that he could not discover the river of *Plate*, though he was sent on purpose to make that discovery.

C H A P. III.

In what manner the proposals of Columbus were rejected by the republic of Genoa, and the king of Portugal. How his application to the king of England miscarried; and how he entered into an agreement with their Catholic majesties, for the discovery of New Countries. An account of his first voyage, and the difficulties he sustained before he discovered the Bahama islands. The discovery of Cuba and Hispaniola; with the reception of Columbus among the Indians. An account of the garrison he left at Hispaniola; and of his return to Europe. The detention of his men at the Azores, by the Portuguese: His arrival at Lisbon; and the honourable reception he met with from the king of Portugal. His arrival in Spain; and the great honours which were conferred upon him by their Catholic majesties. In what manner Columbus undertook his second voyage. And the dispute, between the king of Portugal and their Catholic majesties, concerning their rights and pretensions to the new discovered countries.

A BRAVE English admiral observes, that as God chose the Spanish nation, for some secret judgment of his own, above all other people, to spread forth his holy name; so he remarked three things in them worthy of reprehension; their ingratitude, their cruelty, and the base condition of the people who were the authors of their prosperity. However, he is so far from derogating in the least from the honour of Columbus, that he points out

out their ingratitude as entirely levelled at him, who, he says, was a man of more desert to the Christian world, than any other God ever created.

COLUMBUS had fully formed his project, about the year 1480; and was resolved to make it public: but, as the enterprize was of such great importance, he chose to apply to sovereign princes and states for their assistance and encouragement, rather than give any invitations for private adventurers to be concerned in his grand undertaking; because he was sensible, that if he should himself, or in conjunction with others, discover any rich country, the prince, to whom they owed allegiance, would claim the sovereignty of such places, and dispose of them according to his pleasure; or that other princes might send other armaments, after he had found the way to the countries he wanted to discover, and deprive him, and his fellow adventurers, of the advantage of their discovery. He, therefore, made his first proposal to the republic of *Genoa*, imagining it would be embraced by the governors of his native country; but they, injudiciously, treated him with contempt, and looked upon his proposal as a dream. *Columbus* then offered his service to *John*, king of *Portugal*, to find out a way to the *East-Indies* by the western ocean; and gave such substantial reasons for the attempt, that the king granted him a favourable audience, referred the matter to *Don Diego Ortez*, bishop of *Ceuta*, and to two *Jewish* physicians, on whom he relied in affairs of discoveries and cosmography; but, though they esteemed the design of *Columbus* as a fabulous notion, they were so far from absolutely rejecting the project, that they advised the king to send a vessel, under pre-

tence of failing to *Cape Verd*, to endeavour, by the course which *Columbus* proposed, to discover the secret; however, the vessel, after having been several days at sea, and in great storms, returned without making any discovery; when the crew derided *Columbus* for his project, who was not ignorant of their attempt.

COLUMBUS was so greatly incensed with this unexpected and ungenerous treatment, as to take an aversion to *Portugal*, and withdraw himself into *Spain*, to lay his proposals before that court; dispatching his brother *Bartholomew Columbus*, at the same time, to *Henry vii.* king of *England*, with charts and maps for the illustration of his design, and to request the patronage of that monarch in his undertaking. *Bartholomew Columbus* was taken by pirates in his passage to *England*; so that, not making the necessary dispatch, *Columbus* imparted his scheme to *Ferdinand* and *Isabella* king and queen of *Aragon* and *Castille*; whereby *England*, unhappily, lost both the honour and profit of this important discovery.

It was in the year 1484, that *Columbus* laid his proposals before their Catholic majesties, who then kept their court at *Cordoua*, a large city in the province of *Andalusia*; where he met with the greatest encouragement from *Alonso de Quintanilla*, comptroller of the revenue of *Castille*, who delighted in great undertakings, looked upon *Columbus* as a man of worth, and gave him his maintenance during the solicitation of his tedious suit, which was so strongly pressed, that their Catholic majesties referred the affair to *Ferdinand de Talavera*, prior of *Prado*, and confessor to the queen, who

who was afterwards the first archbishop of *Granada*.

THE prior of *Prado* held an assembly of cosmographers, to debate upon this important matter; but, as they were little acquainted with the subject, and as *Columbus* would not give a full explanation, for fear he should be treated as he had been in *Portugal*, they came to a resolution very different from what he expected. Some alledged, that since, during so many ages as there were from the creation of the world, men, very conversant in maritime affairs, had known nothing of those countries, which *Columbus* imagined were to be discovered; it was not probable that he could know more than all of them together. Others, adhering more to cosmographical reasons, urged, that the world was so large that there would be no coming to the utmost extent of the east in three years sail, where *Columbus* said his voyage was intended: in confirmation of which they alledged, that *Seneca* affirmed, there were many discreet men who could not agree upon the question, whether the ocean was infinite, and doubted whether it could be sailed over? or, supposing it to be navigable, whether there was any country inhabited on the other side, and whether it was possible to go to it? To this they added, that no part of this inferior sphere was inhabited, except a small compass, which was left in our hemisphere above the water, and that all the rest was sea. There were still others, who affirmed, that if *Columbus* should sail away directly westward, he would not be able to return to *Spain*, on account of the roundness of the globe; because, whoever went beyond the he-

misphere, known by *Ptolomy*, would fall down so low that it would be impossible ever to return, as it would be like climbing up a hill. *Columbus* fully answered, and contradicted, these arguments: but the assembly could not comprehend him; for which reason they judged the enterprize to be vain and impracticable; as also that it was unbecoming the grandeur of such illustrious princes to proceed upon so imperfect an account.

THEIR Catholic majesties, after much delay, ordered *Columbus* to be informed, "That as they were engaged in several wars, and particularly in the conquest of *Granada*, they could not enter upon fresh expences; but, when that was over, they would cause farther enquiry to be made into his proposals." With this answer, *Columbus* was dismissed the court of *Spain*, at present; but he afterwards returned, and was taken into its service. At first, he retired to *Seville*, very melancholly and discontented, after having been five years at court to no effect. He then caused the affair to be proposed to the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, and to the Duke of *Medina Celi*; who also rejected him: upon which he applied to the *French* monarch; and intended, if he would not employ him, or assist him, in his undertaking, to go over to *England*, in search of his brother, of whom he had received no intelligence for a considerable time.

HOWEVER, he was persuaded to continue in *Spain*, by the advice of *John Pérez de Marchena*, guardian of the monastery of *Rabida*, near *Palos*, in *Andalusia*, who was well acquainted with cosmography and polite literature: but, to be better informed

informed of the probability of the scheme which *Columbus* went upon, he sent for *Garci Hernandez*, a physician, who conferred with them both, and expressed great satisfaction at what *Columbus* proposed. This occasioned *John Perez*, to write to queen *Isabella*, to whom he was personally known, having confessed her several times; when her majesty ordered him to repair to court, which was then at the town of *Santa Fe*, while the siege of *Granada* was carrying on; and to leave *Columbus* at *Palos*, giving him hopes of success in his business. *John Perez* was introduced to the queen, who ordered 20,000 maravedies, or about 7 l. sterling, to be sent to *Columbus* to make his appearance at court, where he soon after arrived, and the affair was again taken into consideration. But the prior of *Prado*, and some others, opposed the opinion of *Columbus*, who demanded high terms, particularly to have the titles of admiral and vice-roy of whatever countries he should discover; which, they said, was demanding too much, if the enterprize succeeded; and, if it should not, they represented that it would be a great discredit to the undertakers, and a dishonour to the nation: upon which the treaty seemed entirely to cease, and *Columbus* was now determined to proceed to *France*, being equally resolved never to return to *Portugal* upon any account.

WHILE *Christopher Columbus* was thus disconcerted at the court of *Spain*, and while the *Spaniards* were upon the verge of depriving themselves of the treasures of a new world, *Bartholomew Columbus* was for a long time equally unsuccessful in his views at the court of *England*; for, as before mentioned, he was unfortunately taken

prisoner on the sea, by some pirates, who stripped him of his cloaths, as well as of every thing else he had in the ship ; by which, and a violent sickness, he was reduced to great necessity. However, by his industry in making globes, and sea charts, wherein he was very expert, he retrieved himself, so as to be in a condition of appearing at the *English* court, where he laid the proposals of his brother before king *Henry* vii. who joyfully embraced the offers, and gave orders that *Christopher Columbus* should be immediately invited over to *England*. But, as *Christopher* had heard no account of his brother *Bartholomew*, since his departure from *Portugal*, he grew impatient at the delay ; having just cause to apprehend, that some person of penetration, either at *Genoa* or *Lisbon*, might endeavour to put his scheme in practice, so far as to deprive him of the honour and benefit of the discovery. He reflected, that through the pains he had taken to persuade his unbelieving countrymen, and the king of *Portugal*, to give credit to what he had advanced, in relation to that part of the globe, he, perhaps, had unwarily laid open the whole secret ; or at least divulged it, with that positive sanguinity peculiar to persons, who, knowing the veracity of their assertion, are apt to grow too warm and unguarded in their expressions, against the obstinate incredulity of those who will submit to nothing but absolute demonstration, in matters which their weak capacities cannot otherwise comprehend. Besides, he knew it was too frequently esteemed as a refined piece of policy, to work up the passions of a man, by unreasonable contradictions, in hopes of fermenting the secret out of his brain ; or else, by pretended offers of

of doing him service, on a supposition that the scheme is practicable to be carried into execution, some ministers put a man under the indispensable necessity of communicating to them the whole nature of the affair, not only in hopes of their patronage and assistance, but for fear of disobliging them by a refusal.

THESE considerations made *Christopher Columbus* continue so long in his solicitations to the court of *Spain*; while the king of *England* would have readily taken him into his service, and have speedily enabled him to undertake the discovery of another world: but the misfortunes which happened to *Bartholomew Columbus*, prevented his brother from going early enough to the *English* court; and, when he was determined to go there, he was prevented by the court of *Spain*.

WHEN *Christopher Columbus* had met with such treatment from the commissioners, some sensible *Spaniards* were much concerned to think that this enterprize should be disappointed; particularly *Alonzo de Quintanilla*, and *Lewis de Santagel*, a clerk of the revenue of the crown of *Aragon*; who, together with *John Perez*, recommended *Columbus* to the patronage of the cardinal *Don Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza*. But the commissioners also objected, that as *Columbus* ventured nothing in the discovery, and made himself admiral of a fleet belonging to their Catholic majesties, he would not regard any disappointment in his enterprize: upon which *Columbus* offered to lay down the eighth part of the expence; provided that it should be refunded, and that he should have his share of the return that should be made, proportionable to what
he

he advanced ; yet this propofal was alfo difregard-
ed : fo that, in *January* 1492, *Columbus* fet out
from *Santa Fe* for *Cordoua*, in great anxiety ; the
city of *Granada* being then in the poffeffion of
their Catholic majefties.

THE fame day, *Lewis de Santagel* told the queen,
he was furprized, that ſhe, who had never wanted
a ſpirit for the greateſt undertakings, ſhould now
fail to ſupport an expedition where ſo little could
be loſt, and ſo much might be gained : for, if the
affair ſucceeded, and fell into the hands of another
prince, ſhe might readily conceive how prejudicial
it would be to her crown ; eſpecially as *Columbus*
demanded no reward if he made no diſcovery, and
was willing not only to venture his perſon, but alſo
to defray a part of the charge. He repreſented,
that the propoſals made by *Columbus* were not ſo
impracticable, as the cosmographers had reported ;
nor could it be eſteemed a levity, to have attempted
ſuch a mighty enterprize, though it ſhould prove
unſucceſſful ; becauſe it became great and generous
monarchs to be acquainted with the wonders and
ſecrets of the world, by which many princes had
obtained everlaſting renown, and ſhone faireſt in
the annals of fame. Beſides, he acquainted her
majeſty, that *Columbus* demanded only a million of
maravedies, or 350*l.* ſterling, to fit himſelf out
for the expedition ; and therefore, he entreated the
queen not to ſuffer the apprehenſion of ſo ſmall an
expence, to diſappoint ſo great an enterprize. Her
majeſty was alſo importuned, on the ſame account,
by *Alonzo de Quintanilla*, who was greatly in her
favour : ſhe thanked them both for their advice,
and told them ſhe accepted of it ; but deſired they
would

would stay till she could a little recover her finances after the expences of a war; though, if they were of opinion that the affair should be immediately put into execution, she would consent that they should borrow what money was requisite upon some of her jewels. Upon this resolution, a messenger was sent to *Columbus*, with a command for him to return to court; which he readily obeyed, and was well received upon his arrival at *Santa Fe*; when the secretary *John Coloma*, was ordered to draw up the conditions and dispatches; after *Columbus* had spent eight years ineffectually, and endured many difficulties in his solicitations.

IN a conference, held between *Columbus*, and the secretary *Coloma*, on the 17th of *April* 1492, the following conditions were agreed upon.

“ *First*, THEIR highnesses, as sovereigns of the
 “ ocean, constituted *Don Christopher Columbus*,
 “ their admiral in all those islands and continents,
 “ that, by his industry, should be discovered, or
 “ conquered, in the ocean, during his own life;
 “ and, after his death, to his heirs and successors
 “ for ever; with all the preheminencies and prerogatives appertaining to that office, in the same
 “ manner as their great admiral of *Castille*, and his
 “ predecessors in that office, had enjoyed the same
 “ within their districts. THAT their highnesses
 “ appointed *Columbus* their viceroy and governor
 “ general of all the islands and continents which
 “ he should discover and conquer in the ocean;
 “ and that he should nominate three persons for
 “ the government of each of them, for each office;
 “ and that one of them should be appointed by
 “ their highnesses. THAT *Columbus* should have
 “ the

“ the tenth part of all the pearls, precious stones,
 “ gold, silver, spice, or other commodities, that
 “ should be bought, exchanged, found, won, or
 “ had within the limits of his admiralship; de-
 “ ducting the charges that should be made towards
 “ the same: but the other nine parts should remain
 “ for their highnesses. THAT if any law-suit
 “ should arise, on account of the merchandize,
 “ which *Columbus* should bring from any of the
 “ islands or lands he should discover, or conquer;
 “ and if it should belong to him, as admiral, to
 “ take cognizance of such controversy, it was
 “ agreed, that he, or his deputy, and no other
 “ judge, should try the said cause, if it appertained
 “ to the office of admiral, as the same had been
 “ enjoyed by the great admiral of *Castille*, or his
 “ predecessors, in their districts, and according to
 “ justice. AND THAT *Columbus*, if he thought
 “ proper, should be at liberty to lay out the eighth
 “ part of what should be expended on all the ships,
 “ which should at any time be fitted out for the
 “ same trade; and receive the eighth part of the
 “ profits of such ships.”

UPON the execution of these articles, and after
 receiving the proper dispatches, with the million
 of maravedies, *Columbus* left *Granada*, on the 12th
 of *May*, and set out directly for the port of *Palos*,
 where he had several friends, and where there were
 many able seamen fit to undertake his voyage: but
 the sailors were very unwilling to engage in so un-
 certain an expedition. *Columbus* carried orders to
 the magistrates of the town of *Palos*, to supply
 him with two caravels, or small ships, which the
 town was obliged to furnish for the service of the
 crown,

crowns, during three months every year: *Columbus* also fitted out another ship to be admiral, which he called the *St. Mary*, and commanded himself: the second was called *Pinta*, of which *Martin Alonso Pinzon* was captain, who had his brother *Francis Martinez Pinzon* on board: and the third ship was called *Nina*, which carried square sails, and was commanded by *Vincent Yanez Pinzon*, who was of great service to *Columbus* in this affair, and lent him half a million of maravedies towards defraying the expence. As the *Pinzon's*, who were the most substantial inhabitants, and most skilful mariners, in the town of *Palos*, had expressed so much approbation of the enterprize, and so chearfully engaged in the voyage; their example gave such encouragement to the other sailors, that *Columbus* had soon a sufficient number of hands to proceed on the discovery of a new world; though the court, and the common people, little expected he would perform what he had promised: but they soon found, that two of the most fortunate events which ever happened to the *Spanish* monarchy fell out the same year; the expulsion of the moors, and the discovery of *America*.

THEIR Catholic majesties strictly enjoined *Columbus*, that he should not touch at the mine in *Guiney*, nor come within a hundred leagues of the *Portuguese* conquests: but they gave him their letters patents, directed to all kings and princes in the world; requiring them to give him a favourable and honourable reception, as their officer and commander. The ships were victualled for a year, having on board ninety men, and every thing was ready for beginning this important expedition; which,

which, though so little approved of at that time, has ever since been the only support of the *Spanish* nation, and the greatest source of wealth to all *Europe*: but it proved fatal to the inhabitants of *Africa*, from whence many thousands have been transported as slaves to the new world, which *Columbus* was now going to discover; while the natives of *Asia* have been prodigiously enriched by the silver, which the *African* slaves have laboriously dug out of the *American* mines.

COLUMBUS, with his little squadron, set sail from *Palos de Moguer*, on the 3d of *August* 1492; launching into the great *Atlantic* ocean, and beginning this then unparalleled navigation, with no less confidence in himself, than admiration among those who saw him leave the shore, and steer a course never before attempted, by new rhumbs of winds. The admiral directed his course for the *Canary* islands; and, on the 12th of *August*, arrived at the grand *Canary*, which is situated in 16 degrees of west longitude, and between 27 and 28 degrees of north latitude. But, as the caravel *Pinta* had lost her rudder in the passage, and as it was necessary to change the square sails of the *Nina*, into those called shoulder of mutton sails, that she might follow the other ships with more steadiness, and less danger; the admiral remained there to refit, and take in fresh provisions, till the 6th of *September*; when he set sail again upon his grand design: though he was informed, before his departure, that three *Portuguese* ships were hovering about the *Canaries* to seize him, and prevent his expedition; because the king of *Portugal* was under great concern,

cern, when he understood that *Columbus* was engaged in the service of their Catholic majesties.

ON the 7th of *September*, they lost sight of the *Canaries*; when many of the seamen expressed the greatest signs of fear: but *Columbus* encouraged them with the strongest assurances of success, and the highest hopes of acquiring an immense share of wealth.

ON the 11th of *September*, being 150 leagues from the island of *Ferro*, the most westerly of the *Canary* islands, they saw a piece of a mast, which appeared to have been carried away by the current. Somewhat farther on, in the same latitude, the currents set strong to the northward: and 50 leagues farther westward, on the 14th of *September* towards the evening, *Columbus* observed, that the needle varied to the north-west about half a point, as it also did at break of day; by which he perceived, that the needle was not directly pointed at the north star, but at another fixed and invisible point; and to vary north-west, was to shift from the north, to the left hand.

THIS variation had never been observed before, and occasioned great admiration among the mariners; who were more astonished the third day after, when they were advanced 100 leagues farther, holding the same course; because the needle varied as before, to the north-west about evening, and in the morning again pointed upon the very star.

ON the 18th, they were about 370 leagues to the westward of the island of *Ferro*; having, in their passage, seen a flame of fire fall into the sea; and observed that the currents still set to the north-east: they also saw some water-wagtails, which
they

they imagined never fled above 18 or 20 leagues from land; but they were more surprized to see spots of green and yellow weeds on the surface of the water, which seemed to have been washed away from some islands or rocks, and made several of the sailors conclude they were near land; especially as they found a little locust, or grasshopper, alive upon the weeds: but others fancied there might be rocks or lands under water; and, being much intimidated, murmured against the continuance of the voyage. The same night the wind freshened, after they had continued their course right before it to the westward, without handling their sails: during which time, the admiral wrote down every thing worthy of notice that occurred; observing what winds blew, what his course was, what fish and birds were seen, making observations, and sounding very frequently.

BEING all unacquainted with the voyage, and perceiving no hopes of discovering land, as nothing appeared but air and water for so many days, the seamen began to shew a general dissatisfaction with the expedition. On the 22d of *September*, they let their murmurs burst out into open complaints; reflecting on the king for having given orders for the voyage, and most of them agreed to proceed no further in the discovery; alledging, that the admiral, in a mad humour, was attempting to make himself great at the hazard of their lives; and that, though they had performed their duty, by sailing farther from land than any men had ever done before, they ought not to contribute to their own destruction, still proceeding without any reason till their provisions failed

failed them, and their ships would be unable to carry them back. However, *Columbus* prevented their mutiny, by encouraging some with assurances of the shortness and good success of their voyage; or by threatening others with the force of the royal authority.

As they were under the torrid zone, and impatient of heats, which they had never before experienced in the temperate climates of *Europe*, their uneasiness still increased with their distance from *Spain*: so that they renewed their instances for returning back again; while *Columbus*, with a generous and undaunted mind, remained deaf to all their persuasions, and pursued his voyage with courage and constancy. As the sailors every day perceived the consumption of their water and provisions, they began to call that temerity in the admiral, which before they said might be resolution: for they alleged, that the time was increased, their provisions lessened, the winds scarce, and calms to be feared; no land in view, and its distance not to be known, or guessed at; that the danger was certain, and there was no avoiding to perish if they continued any longer; therefore, they seemed determined to discontinue the voyage. Some of them even went so far, as to say, that, to put an end to all debates, the best way would be to throw the admiral privately into the sea, and say he had unfortunately fell in, as he was attentively gazing at the stars. It cannot be denied, but this was an urgent danger, and greater perhaps than can be imagined by those who never were in the like trials: besides, these allegations were of themselves of great consideration, and capable of shaking the greatest constancy

and valour : yet the courage of *Columbus* was invincible, and his prudence so singular, that sometimes dissembling, and sometimes taking no notice of what he heard, but talking with one man or other in private, and then comforting them all in general, he at last brought his project to a happy issue.

THEIR catholic majesties had offered an annuity of ten thousand maravedies, being about 3 *l.* 10 *s.* sterling, as a reward, to the first person who should discover land ; which made all the mariners diligently attend that part of their duty. But they were now so disconsolate about the discovery, and so anxious about their return, that every hour seemed a year, until the 25th of *September*, at sun-setting ; when *Columbus*, as he was talking to *Vincent Yanez Pinzon*, cried out, *Land ! Land !* and shewed a body towards the south-west, that appeared like an island, about twenty-five leagues from the ships. This greatly encouraged the men ; and the admiral steered his course that way a great part of the night, as if he believed it to be land : though this was only an artifice, between *Columbus* and *Pinzon*, to give a short joy to men who were sinking under despair.

IF *Columbus* had inclined a little more to the southward, he would have made either the *Caribbee-Islands*, *Hispaniola*, or *Cuba*, which lay on the left or larboard side of him ; some of them a-stern, or rather on his larboard quarter : but he held his course towards the *Bahama-Islands*. However, the next morning they all perceived that what they had taken for land, were clouds, which often look like land : but *Columbus* held on his course westward,

to

to the great regret of his men; curbing the insolence of some of them with fear, and encouraging others with hope. They observed many weeds in a line from west-north-west to east-south-east, and saw several water-wagtails; which gave them fresh hopes of land: they also perceived that the currents were not so strong as before, and turned back with the tides. But the admiral observed, that the polar stars were on the west quarter at night, and when day came on they were at the north-east quarter. He also perceived, that towards night the needles varied a whole degree, and that in the morning they were right with the star; which very much troubled and confounded the pilots, till he told them, that the occasion of it was the compass which the north star took about the pole; and this gave them some satisfaction: for that variation made them apprehensive of danger, as being so far distant from land.

ON the 1st of *October*, the pilot told the admiral, that they were then 588 leagues to the westward of the island of *Ferro*: but the admiral said it was 584 by his reckoning; though he was of opinion it was 607. On the 3d of *October*, the pilot of the caravel *Nina* said he found they had sailed 650 leagues, and the pilot of the *Pinta* said 634; wherein they were mistaken, for they had always sailed before the wind: but *Columbus* still took no notice, for fear his men should be dispirited at this great run; because the greatest sea, till then known, was nothing like that extent.

THE admiral still continued his course due west; as he would not lose the credit of his undertaking by turning at random from one side to the other, to discover that which he always affirmed he knew

for a certainty. This renewed the mutiny among his men; nor was it strange, considering that so many men were led by one, of whom few of them had any knowledge, exposed to so many dangers, and without knowing what would be the end of such a long voyage. But, on the 4th of *October*, they saw above forty sparrows and two gulls, which pacified them a little; and they were encouraged to proceed, by the good words given them by the admiral.

ON the 7th of *October*, some sign of land appeared to the westward: but no man would venture to speak of it, because of the thickness of the weather; especially as it was agreed, to prevent their crying land at every foot, in hopes of getting the annuity, "that whoever said it, if the same was not made good in three days, should be forever excluded from that reward, though he should really afterwards make the discovery." However, those on board the caravel *Nina*, which was much a-head, concluded it was certainly land, fired their guns, and put out their colours: but the farther they sailed, the more their joy abated, till it entirely vanished.

THEIR comfort was again revived with the sight of great numbers of birds, and among them many land-fowls, flying from the west to the south west; so that, considering, after he had sailed so great a length, such small birds could not be far from land, *Columbus* concluded it must certainly be near; therefore, he altered the course he then held due west, and steered south-west; alledging, that though he altered his course, he deviated little from his first design, following the example of the *Portuguese*,

tuguese, who discovered most of the islands in the *East-Indies*, by pursuing the flight of such birds.

THE mariners still continued to treat *Columbus* with contradiction and contempt: but, on *Thursday*, the 11th of *October*, they perceived several manifest tokens of their being near land: for the men aboard the admiral saw a green ruff near the ship, and a kind of large green fish which keep generally close about the rocks. Those on board the caravel *Pinta*, took up a cane artificially wrought; and saw abundance of weeds, fresh torn off from the shore. Those aboard the caravel *Nina*, saw the branch of a thorn, with the berries on it, which appeared to be newly broke off. These signs confirmed them in the opinion that they were approaching to some land, especially as they brought up sand upon sounding, and as the wind shifted, which seemed to come from the shore.

COLUMBUS, being satisfied that he was near land, assembled his men together, and told them how merciful the Almighty had been to them, in carrying them with so much health and safety through so long and perillous a voyage; and that, as the signs of land were hourly more conspicuous, he desired them to be strictly upon the watch all night; since they knew, by the first article of the instructions he had given them when they came out of *Spain*, that, when they had run seven hundred leagues without discovering land, they were to lie by after midnight till day, and be upon the watch; which he now strongly recommended to them, as he was very confident they would discover land that night; and that, besides the annuity of ten thousand maravedies, he would also give a

velvet doublet to the person who should make the discovery.

ABOUT ten at night, as he stood on the poop, *Columbus* saw a light: upon which he called *Peter Gutierrez*, groom of the chamber to the king, and desired him to look at it; who answered, that he saw it: but *Roderic Sanabez*, purser of the fleet, could not discern it, till it was afterwards seen twice, appearing like a little candle raised up, and then taken down. However, *Columbus* was assured it was a true light, and that they were near land; which was soon proved to be the case; for the light was made by people passing from one house to another; and, about two in the morning, the ship called the *Pinta*, being the best sailer of the three, and therefore usually a-head of the admiral, gave the signal of land, which was first seen with the naked eye, when they were within two leagues of the shore, by *Roderic de Triana*, one of the common seamen on board the *Pinta*: but their Catholic majesties afterwards adjudged that the admiral was intitled to the reward offered to the first discoverer of land, because he saw a light on the island before; and ordered him to be paid out of the shambles of *Seville*, as the best fund for his security.

ON the appearance of day, they perceived it was an island about fifteen leagues in length, plain, watered with a great lake, and well planted; but generally flat low lands, without hills. The island was very populous, and the natives came crowding down to the shore, expressing the greatest astonishment at the sight of the ships, which they imagined to be some monsters, and waited with the utmost impatience

impatience to know what they were; while the *Spaniards* were equally eager to get upon land, and met with no opposition from the natives. *Columbus* believed there was no danger to be apprehended from the *Indians*, and went on shore in his boat, with the royal colours flying; being followed by the captains *Martin Alonso Pinzon*, and *Vincent Yanez Pinzon*, who carried the colours of their enterprize, adorned with a green cross and some crowns, about which were inscribed the names of their Catholic majesties.

As soon as they came on shore, they prostrated themselves to the earth, which they kissed on their knees; returning thanks to the Almighty God for the goodness he had shewn them in making this discovery of another world. The admiral then stood up, and gave the name of *St. Salvador*, or *St. Saviour*, to the island, which the natives called *Guanabam*; being one of those afterwards called the *Lucayo*, or *Bahama* islands, 950 leagues from the *Canaries*, and discovered after they had sailed thirty-three days. *Columbus* immediately afterwards formally took possession of the island, in the name of their Catholic majesties, for the crowns of *Castille* and *Leon*, testified by *Roderic de Escovedo*, notary of the fleet, in the presence of a great multitude of the natives. After this, the *Spaniards* acknowledged him for their admiral and viceroy; swearing obedience to him, as the representative of their king in that country, with all the joy and satisfaction that naturally resulted from so great and singular an event; all of them imploring his pardon, for the trouble and uneasiness which they had given him, by their timidity and inconstancy.

THE *Indians*, all this time, stood amazed, and gazing at the *Spaniards*; without attempting to give them the least interruption, while they were thus taking possession of their country, which was to be soon after followed by the destruction of its inhabitants; who conceived, from the motion of the ships, that they were living things; and, from their magnitude, they took them for some strange sea monsters never before seen on those coasts. But, when the *Spaniards* landed, the natives were more astonished at their beards, complexion, and apparel: nor were the *Spaniards* in less admiration at the mien and shape of the *Indians*; who, being in their original simplicity, were, both men and women, entirely naked; most of them young, or not above thirty years of age. They were of a middle stature, well shaped, fleshy, and their skins of an olive colour, like the natives of the *Canaries*. They had good features, though their faces were somewhat disguised by their extraordinary high foreheads; as also by painting themselves with black, white, and red colours, not only on their faces, but on their bodies. They wore their hair, which was black, down to their ears, and some of them to their necks, tied to the head with a string like tresses; but the principal ornament among them was a thin gold plate, in the form of a crescent, which hung from the nose over the upper lip. Their arms were spears pointed with the bones of fish; for they had no knowledge of iron metal, instead of which they made use of sharp stones in their timber-work.

THE admiral, believing the *Indians* to be a gentle and simple people, ordered some strings of glass-

glafs-beads, caps, and toys of small value, to be distributed among them; at which they seemed infinitely pleased, and immediately hung the beads about their necks; testifying, by all imaginable signs, the esteem they had for these presents: in return for which, they gave the *Spaniards* gold, provisions, and javelins.

WHEN the admiral returned to his ships, the *Indians* followed him; some swimming, and others rowing themselves in their canoes, which are vessels made out of the body of a tree, some of them holding forty men, and others only two. The *Spaniards* invited them on board, where they brought parrots and cotton yarn, being all the merchandize they had, to exchange for European trifles; on which they set so high a value, that they gathered up the bits of glazed dishes, or broken earthen-ware, with as much joy as the *Spaniards* would have taken up pearls and gold. But all things borrow their value from their rarity; for which reason the *Indians* little esteemed gold and pearls; as they were as common and unnecessary among them, as bells, and other toys, were among the *Spaniards*, whom they looked upon with admiration, imagining they were men come from heaven; and therefore they were anxious of having any thing from them to keep as a memorial to their honour.

THE admiral enquired of the *Indians*, as well as could be done by signs, how several of them came by scars on their bodies; when they made him understand, that the people of some other islands wanted to make them prisoners, and that they received those wounds in defending themselves. Co-

lumbus

Columbus also perceived, that the *Indians* had much sensibility and ingenuity; which made him enquire, from whence they had their gold plates? They answered, it came from the southward; where they gave the *Spaniards* to understand, there were several large countries well replenished with that metal.

THE admiral, having this information that there were other lands, was determined to go in search of them. Indeed, the island he had discovered, was but a very inconsiderable part of what was to be found among the other islands, exclusive of the grand continent of *America*: for this island was only one of the *Lucayas* or *Bahamas*, which are very numerous, and about twelve of them of a considerable extent; being situated between 73 and 81 degrees of west-longitude, and between 21 and 27 degrees of north-latitude. Accordingly, on the 14th of *October* in the morning, the admiral, with the boats, took a view of the coast to the north-west, till he came to a ridge of rocks, where there was a safe and spacious harbour: but, as the seamen were tired with rowing, and as *Columbus* perceived that it was improper to make any long continuance upon the island, he took seven *Indians* to learn the *Spanish* tongue, and returned to the ships; after which, he set out on the discovery of the other islands.

ON the 15th of *October*, they arrived at an island, about seven leagues distant from the first; having observed a great many others in their passage. The admiral called this island *St. Mary of Conception*; and, finding that the natives were like those of *Saint Salvador*, he proceeded farther, till the

the 17th, when he came to another island, which he called *Ferdinanda*, in honour of the king. This island appeared to abound in water; being beautified with many meadows and groves, interspersed with some little agreeable hills, which there were not in the others; and affording a great variety of birds, that sung sweetly, and flew in flocks together, different from what are to be seen in *Europe*. There were also several lakes, and near one of them they saw an alligator, about seven feet long, which they killed. The inhabitants were like the other *Indians*; but appeared to have more sagacity, covering their nakedness with cotton cloths, and managing the exchange of their commodities to a greater advantage.

ALL the *Indians*, which the *Spaniards* had hitherto discovered, inhabited little towns, consisting of ten or twelve houses, like tents; some round, and others long, with an open portal before them, covered with leaves of trees, well fitted against the inclemency of the weather, with vents for the smoke, and ridges at the top; but they had no household furniture. Finding nothing more in *Ferdinanda* than in *St. Salvador*, and the *Conception*, the admiral proceeded to another island, called *Saomoto*, by the *Indians*, which he named *Isabella*, in honour of the Catholic queen; taking possession of it before witnesses, and the notary, as he had done in the others. The natives were like those of the other islands, and informed the *Spaniards*, by pointing to the south, that there was a large island, called *Cuba*; which the admiral believed to be *Cipango*, and therefore would not lose time to visit the adjacent islands; but steered west south-west,
and

and afterwards south-east, when he discovered eight islands, lying north and south, which he called *del Arena*, or sand islands, because there was shoal-water about them; and, on the 27th of *October*, he discovered the island of *Cuba*, to which he gave the name of *Juana*, or *Johanna*.

THIS island, which still retains the name of *Cuba*, is situated between 74 and 87 degrees of west longitude, and between 20 and 23 degrees of north latitude; being about 800 miles long, and about 70 broad. The country yielded a beautiful prospect of hills and plains, rising grounds and shores; the woods looking very thick, and the trees tall, being loaded with fair blossoms, and rich fruit, about which were abundance of birds. The admiral anchored in a great river, and called it *St. Salvador*; from whence he discerned two houses; and, being desirous of obtaining some information about the country, sent some of his men there; at whose approach the *Indians* fled, leaving their nets and fishing-tackle behind, as many others did wherever the ships appeared. Upon this, the admiral sent two *Spaniards* on shore, accompanied with two *Indians*, supplying them with things to barter, and setting them six days for their return, with instructions how to speak in the name of their Catholic majesties; ordering them to go up the country, and get him what intelligence they were able, without committing the least prejudice to any of the natives.

In the mean time, the ships were refitted, and the *Spaniards* returned on the 5th of *November*, with three of the native *Indians*; when they informed the admiral that they had travelled twenty-two leagues, and

and found a village of fifty houses, containing about a thousand inhabitants, who came out to meet them, led them by the arms, and lodged them in one of their best houses, where they treated them with the most extraordinary respect, kissing their feet and hands, as believing they came from heaven; and giving them boiled roots to eat, which tasted like chefnuts. They also intreated the *Spaniards* to continue among them, or at least to repose themselves for a short time; and, when they saw them returning to their ships, they offered to bear them company; for the two *Indians* had informed the natives there was no danger to be apprehended from the *Spaniards*. The *Spanish* sailors likewise reported, that they had seen several other towns in their journey, where they were entertained with great hospitality: they also said, the country was well planted with roots, and indian corn or maize; that it abounded in oaks, pines, palms, and cotton shrubs; that they saw a great variety of birds, among which were partridges and nightingales; but found no other beasts than a few dogs, which never barked; that the *Indians* had great quantities of cotton-yarn, which they made into nets for their beds, and little cloths to cover their privities, all the rest of their bodies being naked; but that they would exchange a little basket full of cotton, for a leather thong, a piece of glazed ware, or a bit of a looking-glass; and, on being asked if they had any gold or pearls, they pointed to the eastward, saying, there was abundance at *Bobio*.

THE admiral then enquired of the *Indians*, on board the ships, if they knew where gold was to
be

be had; when they answered, *Cubanacan*; by which the *Spaniards* imagined they meant the Great Cham, and that *Tartary* or *China* was not far off, because the *Indians* made signs as if it was only four days journey; but they soon understood that *Cubanacan* was a province in the middle of the island of *Cuba*, where there were mines of gold.

UPON this intelligence, the admiral ordered some *Indians* to be taken from several parts, and carried into *Spain*, that every one might give an account of his own country, as witnesses of the discovery. Accordingly, twelve men, women, and children, were taken; which was so far from giving any offence, that, as they were ready to sail, an *Indian*, who was husband to one of the women, and father to two boys on board, came to the ship, and desired to be taken along with his wife and children; when he was admitted, and all of them treated with great civility.

ON the 14th of *November*, the admiral stood to the eastward, for the discovery of *Bobio*, or a land full of cottages; the word *Bobio* signifying a cottage among the *Indians*: but the wind was contrary, and obliged *Columbus* to spend three or four days about the island of *Isabella*, where he was afraid of landing, lest the *Indians* should make their escape. As there were great hopes of discovering gold in *Bobio*, *Martin Alonzo Pinzon* deserted the admiral, with a view of getting there before him, and enriching himself; which occasioned *Columbus*, as the wind continued against him, to return to *Cuba*, where he sailed 107 leagues to the eastward along the coast; and set out from the eastern point, on the 5th of *December*, for *Bobio*; where

where he arrived the next day, being 18 leagues from *Cuba*.

THE admiral entered a port, which he called *St. Nicholas*; being safe, spacious, and deep, encompassed with thick woods; though the land was hilly, and the trees small. A pleasant river disembogued itself into the harbour; and there were several canoes on the shore capable of carrying 50 or 60 persons. However, as they found no people, the admiral proceeded farther to the northward, till he came to a place which he called the port of *Conception*, to the southward of an island, which he called *Tortuga*, ten leagues from *Bobio*. He now found that the island of *Bobio* was very large; that the soil and the trees were like those of *Spain*; as also that they took several fish known in *Spain*; and that they had heard the nightingale sing, with other *European* birds: he therefore called the island *la Espanola*, or the *Spanish* island, afterwards corruptly called *Hispaniola*: for having named the first island *San Salvador*, or *St. Saviour*, in honour of God; the second the *Conception*, with respect to the virgin *Mary*; the third *Ferdinanda*, for king *Ferdinand*; the fourth *Isabella*, in honour of the queen; and the fifth *Juana* for the prince their son; he thought proper the name of *Spain* should have the sixth place; though some of his people told him, it would be more proper to call it *Castellana*; because only the kingdoms of *Castille* and *Leon* were concerned in that conquest.

THE admiral was desirous of taking a view of the country, and of making an enquiry about the gold which he expected to find there: but the natives fled from the *Spaniards*, and gave one another

ther notice where they were by fires. *Columbus* then sent six men well armed to travel up the country, who returned without finding any people, and represented it as a very delightful place: but, as three failors were in a wood adjacent to the mouth of the harbour, they saw a great number of naked *Indians*, who fled from them; when the failors run after them, and seized a woman, who had a little plate of gold hanging at her nose. The *Spaniards* conducted her to the admiral, who gave her hawk-bells, and strings of glass beads: he also caused a shirt to be put upon her, and sent her away with three of the *Indians* he had brought with him, and three *Spaniards* to accompany her to her habitation, which was four leagues distant to the south-east; where the next day he sent nine *Spaniards* more, with an *Indian* of *Sal Salvador*.

THE *Spaniards* found a town consisting of about a thousand houses, which, on their approach, were abandoned by the inhabitants: but an *Indian* went after, and overtook them; who extolled the *Spaniards* in so high a manner, as to prevail on the natives to return. The *Indians* were astonished at the *Spaniards*, laid their hands on their heads by way of honour and respect, carried them provisions, and desired they would stay that night among them. The *Spaniards* returned with an account that the country abounded in provisions; that the people were whiter, and of better countenances, than those of the other islands, and more tractable; as also, that the country which produced gold was more to the eastward.

HAVING received this information, though the wind was contrary, the admiral departed from the west end of the island, and sailed along the north coast:

Coast : in which passage, he took an *Indian* with his canoe into the ship, gave him some toys, and sent him to land ; when the *Indian* spoke so favourably of the *Spaniards* to his countrymen, that many of them were encouraged to come on board the ships. The *Indians* brought only some small grains of pure gold, hanging at their noses, which they freely gave to the *Spaniards* ; and being asked from whence that gold was brought, they answered by signs, that there was great plenty of it farther on. But when the admiral enquired for the island of *Cipango*, they imagined he meant *Cibao*, where most gold was found upon the island, and pointed to the place.

THE admiral was informed, that the cazique, or the king of this part of the island, was coming to pay him a visit, attended by two hundred men, with his tutor and counsellors ; the cazique being carried on a bier on their shoulders ; and when he came on board, the *Spaniards* were surprized to see what great respect they paid him, and how sedately he behaved himself. The admiral gave the cazique a piece of cloth, some amber beads, a pair of red shoes, and a bottle of orange flower-water ; with which he was extremely well pleased, and gave the admiral a gold girdle, that looked like those in *Spain*, though the workmanship was different, and some plates of gold. The cazique offered the admiral any thing in his country, and expressed great concern that they could not understand one another. The admiral, by means of the *Indian* interpreter, informed the cazique, that he was commander for their catholic majesties, who were the greatest sovereigns in the world : but neither the cazique, nor

his attendants, would believe any other, than that the *Spaniards* came from heaven. The *Indians* were treated with great civility and generosity; the admiral paying great honour to the cazique, who returned with great satisfaction to the town where he resided, which was twelve miles up the country.

THE admiral was resolved to make a further discovery of the country, and set sail on the 19th of *December*; being persuaded that *Hispaniola* had many capes and harbours, with a temperate air, and a delightful soil. Several towns appeared on the shore, and many *Indians* brought provisions to the ships; informing the admiral, that their king, or cazique, desired he would make a visit to his town; and that he was waiting for him, with several of his people, on a point of land. The admiral accepted the invitation, and went ashore in his boats; when the king sent him provisions and parrots: the admiral also presenting the *Indians* with hawk-bells, glass toys, and some pieces of tin; after which, he returned to the ships, though the *Indians*, particularly the women and children, greatly regretted his departure, all of them believing that the *Spaniards* were celestial beings.

ON the 22d of *December*, a messenger came to the admiral from *Guacanagari*, the king of the country, desiring him to come to his town, and that he would give him all his possessions, which were extensive, as he was one of the five sovereigns of the island. The messenger brought the admiral a girdle, adorned with small fish-bones, like seed pearl, curiously wrought, and four fingers broad; as also a vizor of beaten gold: upon which, the admiral sent his notary, and six *Spaniards*, to pay his
com-

compliments to *Guacanagari*, who came out to meet them; all his people gazing on them with joy and admiration. The king gave the notary some cotton cloths, parrots, and pieces of gold; his people giving the *Spaniards* what they were able; and valuing the *Spanish* toys as religious relics.

ON the 24th, the admiral visited *Guacanagari*, whose principal town was about fourteen miles from the port; where he continued sometime, and then returned on board; having met with a very hospitable reception. The weather being fair, and the sea calm, the sailer that was at the helm left it to a grummet; though the admiral, during the whole voyage, ordered the steersmen never to quit the helm: but the still calm invited the seamen to sleep, who imagined they were out of all danger, when the current carried the ship along very greatly, till it struck on a rock, with such a dreadful noise, that it could be heard at the distance of a league. When the rudder struck, the admiral was first up; though he had not slept two days and a night before: the master then came up, and was ordered, as the boat was out, to let fall an anchor at the stern; by which means they might work out the ship with the help of the captain. However, instead of finding his orders properly executed, the admiral perceived some of his men were making away in the boat to the caravel that lay to the windward, half a league from his own ship. The admiral then ordered the ship to be lightened, and the mast to be cut down: but she sprung a leak between the ribs, and lay down on a side, opened near the keels, and was soon full of water: so that if the

wind had blown, or the sea been rough, every man on board must have perished; though, if the master had done what the admiral ordered him, the ship would have been got off safe. The boat returned to their assistance, with some additional hands from the caravel *Nina*: but, as there was no possibility of preserving the ship, proper care was taken for saving the men. Accordingly, the admiral sent a message to *Guacanagari*, acquainting him of this misfortune; upon which the king and his brothers immediately brought their canoes to the wreck, took off all upon decks, and carried them safe to land; with strong assurances of their remaining untouched.

Two days after *Guacanagari* went aboard the caravel *Nina*, where he found the admiral in great affliction for the loss of his ship; but told him what had been gathered from the wreck was ready to be delivered to him on shore, comforted him in his distress, and offered him all the assistance in his power: he also presented him with some gold; and, observing the admiral valued this metal, he told him he would cause some to be brought him from *Cibao*. The *Indian* prince complained of the *Caribbees*, who carried away his people; assuring the admiral, it was on that account his people fled at first from the *Spaniards*, whom they imagined to be their enemies. The admiral shewed his arms to *Guacanagari*, offering to defend him, which gave him great satisfaction; but he chiefly admired the cannon, upon whose firing the *Indians* fell down as if they had been dead. After this the king returned to shore; having invited the admiral to pay him another visit, to eat *Axis* and *Cazabi*, which was their principal diet.

As

As the admiral found the *Indians* were such inoffensive and hospitable people, so ready to afford assistance to strangers in distress, and their king so willing to accommodate the *Spaniards* with whatever they desired; he came to a resolution of leaving some men in that part of the country, that they might make farther discoveries, trade with the people, and learn the language; because he intended soon to sail back to *Spain*, and when he returned to *Hispaniola*, he expected to find some persons capable of giving directions how to form the settlements, which he thought it would be necessary to make upon the island. In pursuance of this resolution, the admiral built a fort with the timber of his wrecked ship, in a harbour, which he called the port of *Nativity*. The fort had a ditch round it, and was finished in ten days; being strong enough to be defended against the natives, who were shewn, and dreaded the effect of the *Spanish* arms, especially the artillery.

THE admiral had several motives for leaving a garrison here; because, when it was known in *Spain*, that people had been left there to settle, the *Spaniards* would be more inclinable to go over: besides, as he had only his own ship, all his people could not be contained in it, without great inconvenience: to which may be added, that he found several of his people very willing to continue among the *Indians*, who had shewn them so much friendship and affability; as also, that the admiral intended to carry with him some of the natives of the country, and of the most valuable things produced in it, in confirmation of the discovery. He made choice of thirty-nine men to stay in the fort,

under the command of *James de Arana*, with full power, as he had received it from their majesties; leaving with them a ship-carpenter, a caulker, a cooper, a tailor, and a gunner; who were furnished with provisions for a year, some seeds to sow, and several things to barter; as also, all the great guns, and other arms in the ship, with the boat belonging to it. He exhorted the men to obey their commander, to pay respect to *Guacanagari*, and offer no offence to his people; giving them the strongest assurances, that he would speedily return to them with a greater power.

BEFORE his departure, the admiral paid another visit to *Guacanagari*, who received him with great state; being attended by five of his caziques, or tributary princes, all with crowns of gold upon their heads. The king presented his crown to the admiral; and the caziques made him a present of some plates of gold, made of grains beat together between two stones. The admiral gave *Guacanagari* a collar of beautiful beads, recommended the *Spaniards* to his friendship, and told him he had commanded them to assist him against the *Caribbees*. The admiral also promised that he would soon return with presents from the king of *Spain*; and *Guacanagari* answered him with great signs of sorrow for his departure; which the admiral would not have made so soon, if he had not been apprehensive that the caravel *Pinta* would get home safe, and her people give some information against him to conceal their own crime.

ON the 4th of *January* 1493, the admiral left the port of the *Nativity*, sailing eastward till the 6th, when he discovered the caravel *Pinta* sailing toward

toward him before the wind. They returned towards *Hispaniola*, and *Martin Alonso Pinzon* made his excuse for having parted company, pretending to have been forced away by stresses of weather: but the admiral thought it improper to enter into a dispute about the matter; though he knew he left him voluntarily, and understood he had got a great deal of gold by bartering with the natives of *Hispaniola* for trifles, half of which the captain took for himself, and gave the other half among his seamen.

THE admiral was now in spirits, on being happily joined by the other ship; and continued for several days sailing along the island, giving names to several capes and harbours. He sent seven men with the boat for water, on the 12th of *January*, who saw fifty-five naked *Indians*, with long hair, like the women in *Spain*, armed with bows and arrows, swords made of hard palm wood, and heavy spears; their heads being adorned with a kind of coronets made of beautiful feathers. They were at first prevailed on to sell two of their bows to the *Spaniards*; but were so far from selling any more, that they began to offer them violence; upon which the *Spaniards* fired, and wounded three of the *Indians*, who immediately fled, and left their arms behind them. This was the first time that the *Spaniards* received any act of hostility from the *Indians* of *Hispaniola*, which gave the admiral some uneasiness; though he knew it would make them sensible of the weight of the *Spanish* arms,

ON the 14th, a great number of *Indians* appeared on the shore, and the admiral ordered the boat's crew to be upon their guard: but the *Indians*

came as if nothing had happened, and their cazique went on board the caravel, where he was treated with great respect, and presented the admiral with his crown of gold. The next day, four young *Indians* came to the caravel in canoes; who acquainted the admiral with many particulars, shewed him the island of *St. John*, and appeared so intelligent, that the admiral resolved to carry them into *Spain*.

As the caravels were leaky, the admiral set sail on his return to *Europe*, on the 16th of *January*; advancing sixteen leagues with the wind at west-north-west; when the *Indians* he had on board, pointed to the islands of *St. John*, *Martinico*, and the *Caribbees*: but, though the admiral was desirous of taking a view of those islands, he was afraid of dispiriting his men, as the wind freshened; and, therefore, steered directly for *Spain*, advancing successfully for several days.

THE caravel *Pinta* was no good sailer on a bowling, because she had little benefit of her mizen-mast, so that they made little way, as the admiral was sometimes obliged to lie by for her. Having sailed several days, changing their course according to the winds, they endeavoured to keep their reckoning, and imagined they were to the eastward of the *Azores*; because they reckoned more leagues than they really sailed, being entirely mistaken in the way they made to the northward; so that, instead of any of the *Azores*, they would more probably have fallen in with some of the *Madeira* islands: but the admiral, who was now experienced at reckoning their run, found one hundred and fifty leagues less than the others.

ON the 12th of *February*, the sea began to swell with great and dangerous storms; which obliged the ships to drive without any sail, during the night. The next morning the wind slackened; but, on the 13th at night, it arose again, with dreadful waves: so that, as the danger was imminent, and as there was no other way to avoid it, the admiral let his ship run before the wind; his example being followed by the captain of the *Pinta*, who soon after disappeared. On the 14th, after sun-rising, the wind blew fiercer; and the admiral was now the more afraid of perishing, as all his people believed the *Pinta* was already lost.

THE admiral thought it was impossible to sur- vive the danger of this terrible storm; but, that some knowledge might come to their Catholic ma- jesties of what he had done in their service, he wrote a narrative on parchment of what he had discovered, in how many days he performed the voyage, and what way he had done it; with an account of the nature of those lands, and of the inhabitants; as also informing them, that their majesties subjects were left in possession of what he had discovered. This writing was folded up, sealed, and addressed to their Catholic majesties; with the promise of a reward, on the outside, of a thousand ducats, to any person who should deli- ver it to them sealed; because, that, if any foreigner found it, the promised reward might in- duce him not to give it to another. The admiral then wrapped the writing in an oiled cloth, inclosed in a ball of wax, which he put into an empty cask, bunged it close up, and threw it into the sea. He also placed another cask on the highest part of the ship,

ship, with a copy of the same writing inclosed in the same manner; so that, if the ship sunk, the cask might still remain above water.

ALL the seamen expected to perish in the storm, and went to their devotions: after which, they cast lots who should go on pilgrimage to the lady of *Guadalupe*, if they escaped, and the lot fell upon the admiral. Then they drew again, who should go to the lady of *Loretto* in *Italy*, on their arrival in *Europe*, which fell on *Peter de Villa*, a mariner. As the storm still increased, they all made a vow to go barefoot, in their shirts, at their landing, to some church dedicated to the *Virgin Mary*; besides which, every one made private vows for himself. But heaven, having just favoured the discovery of a new world, now also favoured its discoverer: the storm began to abate; and, on the 15th of *February*, they saw land a-head, bearing from them east-north-east; which some took for the island of *Madeira*, and others for *Cape Roxent*, or the rock of *Lisbon*: though the admiral insisted they were the *Azores*, which they really were.

THEY plied to and fro with great difficulty; and, on the 18th, came to an anchor on the north side of the island of *St. Mary*. Soon after, three men made a signal to the caravel; upon which the admiral sent the boat for them, who brought him refreshments of bread and fowl from the governor, whose name was *Don John de Castenada*. The next day, he ordered one half of his men to go out in procession to an adjacent hermitage, where was a chapel, dedicated to the *Virgin Mary*, to perform their vow; telling them, that when they returned, he

he would go out with the other half; and sent to the *Portuguese*, to bring him a clergyman to celebrate mass. The men went barefoot, and in their shirts, to the hermitage; where the *Portuguese* governor fell upon them, and made them prisoners. The governor, and several *Portuguese*, then came into the boat, and made towards the admiral, to demand hostages, which were offered him; but the governor would not venture his person. The admiral then asked him, why, after having sent him refreshments, and invited him on shore, he had so basely detained his men, notwithstanding the two nations of *Castille* and *Portugal* were at peace? He also offered to shew the governor his commission, to convince him that he was employed in the service of their Catholic majesties: but the governor answered, "He knew nothing of them, or their commissions, nor did he fear them." He likewise told the admiral, that what he had done was pursuant to the order of his *Portuguese* majesty; when the admiral replied, "That, if his men and boat were not immediately restored, he would take and carry away double the number of *Portuguese* prisoners, into *Spain*." But, the next day, the *Portuguese* governor sent the boat, with two clergymen, a notary, and five seamen, to the admiral, who gave them security to come on board the caravel, where he shewed them his commission; upon which, they returned, released his men, and restored the boat; when the admiral understood, that the king of *Portugal* had sent orders, to all places under his dominion, to secure the person of the admiral by any means in their power.

HAVING

HAVING recovered his men, and the weather being fit to sail for *Spain*, he left the *Azores*, the 24th of *February*, and steered his course east: but, on the 2d of *March*, he met with another terrible storm; when they all cast lots who should go on a pilgrimage to *St. Mary de Cinta en Guelva*, and the lot fell upon the admiral. They drove with all their sails furled, in the greatest danger, till the 4th of *March*, when the admiral discovered the land and the rock of *Lisbon*, where he resolved to put into harbour to avoid the storm; being unable to continue at *Cascais*, a town situated at the mouth of the river *Tagus*, 17 miles east of *Lisbon*.

THE king of *Portugal* was then at *Valparaiso*, to whom the admiral wrote a letter, signifying, "That their majesties of *Spain*, his sovereigns, had given him orders not to avoid entering the ports of *Portugal*, to get what he wanted for his money." The admiral also desired permission to go up to *Lisbon*, for the better security of his ship; as likewise to satisfy his majesty, that he came not from *Guinea*, but from the *Indies*. The master of a galeon went on board the admiral in an armed boat, and ordered him to go up with him, to give an account of himself before the officers of *Lisbon*: but *Columbus* answered, "That he was admiral to their majesties of *Spain*, and that it was not incumbent upon him to give such an account of himself; nor would he go out of his ship, unless he was compelled by force." The *Portuguese* master, then desired that the admiral would condescend to shew him his commission; which he readily produced: whereupon the master returned to the galeon, and reported what had passed;

passed; when the captain went on board the caravel, with drums, trumpets, and hautboys; offering to serve *Columbus*, in whatever he should command.

As soon as it was publickly known at *Lisbon*, that the admiral came from the *Indies*, and had some *Indians* in the ship, the citizens crouded on board to have the pleasure of seeing so enterprizing a man, and so strange a people; some of them applauding the glorious undertaking; while others reviled the ministers of *Portugal*, whose avarice and incredulity had lost their king and country the honour and advantage of the discovery.

THE next day, the admiral received a letter from the king of *Portugal*, giving him an invitation to come to his palace of *Valparaiso*; which the admiral was obliged to do, to avoid shewing any mistrust. The nobility, and officers of state, were ordered to attend the admiral, and conduct him to the king, who received him with much honour, admitted him to sit covered in his presence, and expressed great satisfaction at the success of his voyage. His majesty then asked him some particulars concerning his expedition; saying, he was of opinion, that, according to the articles stipulated with the kings of *Castille*, the conquest of the new discovered country belonged to the kings of *Portugal*, rather than to those of *Castille*. To which the admiral replied, "He had not seen those articles; nor knew any more, than that their Catholic majesties had commanded him not to go to the gold mine, nor to *Guinea*; which had been proclaimed in all the ports of *Andalusia*, before he set out upon his voyage." The king graciously answered,

"He

“ He believed he wanted no vouchers in that particular;” and then ordered the prior of *Crato*, who was the principal person attending his majesty, to entertain the admiral. The next day, the king acquainted the admiral, that if he wanted any thing he should have it: he then made him sit down, and asked many questions relating to the voyage, the new countries, the latitudes, the people, and other things about those parts; expressing great concern for having lost the good fortune of such a discovery: and there were also some persons about the king, who offered to kill the admiral, that what he had discovered might be concealed: but his majesty disdained so ignoble a thought, and abhorred so infamous an action. However, the king intimated to *Columbus*, he thought the discovery belonged to *Portugal*; because the admiral had resided most of his life in that kingdom. To which the admiral answered, that, as his majesty would not accept of the overtures he had made him, he went out with a commission from their Catholic majesties.

ON the 11th of *March*, the admiral took leave of the king, who had ordered several of his nobility to attend him to *Lisbon*. They conducted him through *Villa Franca*, where the queen was in the monastery of *St. Anthony*, whose hand *Columbus* had the honour to kiss, and gave her an account of his voyage. Upon his departure from the queen, the king sent a messenger to inform him, that if he was inclined to go into *Castille* by land, he would order him to be properly attended, find him carriages, and every thing else he had an occasion for in his journey. But the admiral chose to return by
 sea,

sea, and, on the 13th of *March*, set sail from the *Tagus*. On the 15th, he arrived at *Palos* in *Andalusia*, from whence he had set out on his enterprize on the 3d of *August*, the year before: so that he spent seven months and thirteen days upon the expedition.

THE admiral was informed, on his arrival at *Palos*, that their Catholic majesties were at *Barcelona*, the capital of *Catalonia*: upon which, he seemed inclined to go to them by sea in his caravel. However, he was prevailed on to land at *Palos*, where the inhabitants received him with a solemn procession, and thanksgiving, for his return; all admiring so great an action, which they never imagined the admiral would have been able to perform.

THE admiral received information, that *Martin Alonso Pinzon*, the captain of his other ship, was arrived in *Galicia*, and had given notice of his arrival to the court of *Spain*; proposing to have brought the first intelligence of the important discovery, whereby a new world was to be made known, for the aggrandizement of the old; and particularly for the advantage of the *Spanish* nation: but their Catholic majesties sent him orders to attend on the admiral; which gave *Pinzon* such mortification, that he retired in discontent to *Palos*, where he soon afterwards died with grief and vexation.

THE admiral, having altered his former resolution of going by sea to *Barcelona*, sent advice of his arrival to their Catholic majesties, with a summary account of what had happened to him, during his voyage; reserving a more ample relation to be given in person. Their majesties returned him a gracious answer, purporting, that they rejoiced at
his

his safe return, and the success of his enterprize; ordering him to be expeditious in coming to *Barcelona*, that a conference might be held concerning this great discovery, and to consult of the most convenient means for advancing what had been so happily begun. The superscription of the letter was, “to Don *Christopher Columbus*, “our admiral of the ocean, vice-roy and governor of the islands, that have been discovered “in the *Indies* :” for it was then imagined that *America* lay contiguous to the *East Indies*. Their Catholic majesties also ordered *Columbus* to consider, whether it was proper to leave any orders at *Seville*, before he came to *Barcelona* : and, in his answer, he sent a memorial of the ships, men, ammunition, and provisions that were proper to return to the *Indies* : after which, he set out for *Barcelona*, with seven *Indians* ; carrying with him some party-coloured parrots, and other things, which had never before been seen in *Europe*.

THE joy of their Catholic majesties was inexpressible, the satisfaction of the whole court was unparalleled, and the admiration of the people was great, to see so important a discovery thus happily effected, when the generality of men entertained no manner of hopes about the expedition. As the admiral drew near the city of *Barcelona*, the whole court went out to meet him, the city was crowded with spectators, their majesties ordered their throne to be placed in public, and received the admiral with all the honours due to a sovereign prince. He was attended by a multitude of gentlemen ; and, as he approached the throne, the king stood up, gave him his hand to kiss, bade him rise, ordered a chair to be brought, and de-
fired

fired him to sit down in the royal presence, where he gave him a particular account of his voyage and discovery; as also, of the hopes he conceived of finding greater countries: nor, was it easy to determine, whether their majesties had more satisfaction in hearing of these discoveries, or the admiral in relating them.

As the articles concluded with the admiral, were only in the form of a contract, which he had performed, their majesties ratified the agreement concluded at *Santa-Fe*; and, by their charters, appointed *Columbus*, admiral, vice-roy, and governor-general of all the islands, and continent to the westward of the *Azores*, and the *Cape Verd* islands, which he already had discovered, or should discover and conquer, with power of appointing all officers, both civil and military. Their majesties also gave him the royal arms of *Castile* and *Leon*, to bear together with those of his family, with other additions, expressing his difficult and wonderful discovery. The king always had the admiral by his side, as he went along the city of *Barcelona*, and the grandees contended who should give him the most honourable reception at their tables; all which was due to the merit of this illustrious man, by whose enterprising genius the *Spanish* monarchy became the most formidable of any in *Europe*, till their opulence in *America* damped all the spirit of industry among the *Spaniards*; which gave an opportunity to other nations, to strike out a grand and new tract of commerce, whereby they enriched themselves at the expence of *Spain*, whom they drained of her treasures, in the purchase of their commodities.

THEIR Catholic majesties acquainted pope *Alexander* VIth, with the particulars of this discovery of a new world ; informing him, that it had been made without encroaching on the crown of *Portugal* ; and desiring his holiness to grant to the kings of *Castile* and *Leon*, the lands already discovered, or that should be discovered, and to expedite his bulls accordingly. The pope readily granted this request, and gave their Catholic majesties the sovereign dominion of the *Indies*, with supreme jurisdiction over all that hemisphere ; for which purpose, a bull was passed, with the consent and approbation of the college of cardinals, on the 2d of *May* 1493, containing the same formalities, prerogatives, and powers, which had been before granted to the kings of *Portugal*, in relation to *Africa*, and the *East-Indies*. Besides, by another bull of the 3d of *May*, the pope granted their Catholic majesties all the islands and continents abroad, discovered, or that should be discovered, drawing a line from pole to pole, at the distance of a hundred leagues to the westward of the *Azores*, and the *Cape Verd* islands ; and that all which should be discovered beyond that line to the west, or south, should appertain to the navigation and discovery of the kings of *Castile* and *Leon*, if they were not in the possession of any christian prince before *Christmas-day* ; and that no person should pass into those parts, under penalties and censures.

In the mean time, the necessary preparations were made for sending the admiral out on another voyage. The *Indians* he had brought with him were baptized ; the king, and his son prince *John*, being godfathers ; after which, the admiral was ordered

ordered to expedite his departure, and to endeavour, as soon as possible, to discover whether *Cuba*, which he had called *Juana*, was a continent or an island. *Columbus* took leave of their majesties, and the whole court attended him out of the gates of *Barcelona*. When he came to *Seville*, he found that seventeen sail of ships were fitted out, well furnished for the voyage, with great stores of provision, ammunition, artillery, corn, seeds, horses, and mares; with tools to work the gold mines, and great quantities of merchandize to barter, as also for the admiral to give to whom he thought proper. The news of this discovery, and of the gold which was to be found, incited one thousand five hundred men to undertake this second expedition with the admiral; several of whom were gentlemen, many were handicrafts of different trades, and a great number were labouring people to dig and cleanse the gold.

THEIR majesties, by a new commission, appointed the admiral commander in chief of the fleet, and was to command the ships that should return: *Francis de Penaloza*, and *Alonso de Vallejo*, were made commanders of the land forces: *Bernal Diaz de Piza*, was made accomptant of the *Indies*; and *James Marques* inspector: with whom several priests were sent for the conversion of the *Indians* to christianity, who had particular orders to draw them over to religion, by making them presents, and treating them with the utmost tenderness. Besides, the whole body of these adventurers severally took a solemn oath, to be obedient to their majesties,

and to the admiral, in their names, as also to his justice, and to be careful of the royal revenue.

As it was apprehended that the king of *Portugal* had some intention of interrupting the admiral in his voyage, the fleet was put into a stronger condition of defence by an additional supply of arms. The king still promised the admiral great rewards; directing him, before his departure, to cause a sea-chart to be drawn, with the rhumbs, and other particulars, requisite for the voyage to the *Indies*, which he desired might be undertaken immediately, as every thing was ready, and as the further discovery daily appeared to be of greater consequence than was at first imagined. This fleet was assembled at *Cadiz*, where the admiral was received on board with all the demonstrations of joy, that a people, full of the most sanguine expectations, could express at the appearance of a man, whose expedition was to be the foundation of an inexhaustible fund of wealth to the *Spanish* nation in general, and more particularly to the citizens of *Cadiz*.

THE admiral had several trees and plants carried on board; as also, wheat, barley, oats, rye, and all kinds of seeds, some cows, lime, bricks, and all sorts of materials for building and planting. The men being all embarked, the whole fleet set sail from the bay of *Cadiz*, on the 25th of *September*, 1493, with orders to steer south-west for the *Canaries*, where they arrived on the 2d of *October*, and on the 5th anchored at *Gomera*. The fleet continued two days at this island, taking in wood and water; as also calves, goats, sheep, and swine; from which, those that were afterwards found in several parts of *America*, had their origin.

Each

Each pilot had sealed instructions given him how to steer his course to the dominions of king *Guacana-gari*; which they were not to open, unless they were separated from the admiral by stress of weather; because he would not have them know that course without such necessity, for fear it should be communicated to the king of *Portugal*, who was desirous of making some acquisition in the new discovered regions, which he afterwards obtained in an accidental manner.

His *Portugueze* majesty was so much concerned that he had rejected the proposals of *Columbus*, and thereby deprived himself of the benefit of a new empire, that he was unable to conceal his inquietude: therefore, he pretended, that the same belonged to him, and ordered a fleet to be fitted out, to take possession of those new countries, before *Columbus* undertook his second voyage. In the mean time, he sent an ambassador to their Catholic majesties, to inform them, “ How well he had treated the
 “ admiral at *Lisbon*, and how much he was re-
 “ joiced at the success of his expedition: as also,
 “ that since countries were discovered which be-
 “ longed to him, he confided, that they would
 “ deal as honourably and amicably towards him,
 “ as he would towards them upon the same occa-
 “ sion: therefore, as he understood they intended
 “ to continue the discovery, from the *Canaries* di-
 “ rectly west, without turning to the southward,
 “ he requested them to command the admiral to
 “ observe that order; and he would direct his
 “ ships, when they went upon any discovery, to
 “ incline as little as possible to the northward.”
 Their Catholic majesties also sent an ambassador to

Lisbon, to desire that the king of *Portugal* would restrain his subjects from going, or sending, to the new discovered countries, because they belonged to the crown of *Spain*. But his *Portugueze* majesty endeavoured to deceive the *Spanish* ambaffador, by pretending that the fleet intended to follow *Columbus*, was destined for an expedition against the *Moors* in *Africa*: he also preferred a complaint at the court of *Rome*, against their Catholic majesties, alledging, that they had prevented the progress of his discoveries; and excepted against the bulls granted there by his holiness; asserting, that they broke in upon his limits, and that it was requisite to set boundaries to prevent the troubles which might otherwise happen between the subjects of the two crowns. The pope, for the prevention of any occasion of complaints, marked out what belonged to each of them, ordering the line to be drawn from pole to pole; and again, granted to the kings of *Castile*, all that should be conquered in the islands to the east, west, and south, not in the possession of any other prince; for which purpose, another bull was passed on the 26th of *September*.

HOWEVER, the king of *Portugal* was still dissatisfied, pretending that he was injured, because the line of partition ought to be drawn farther on to the westward. He then proposed a method to divide the ocean between the two crowns, by a line drawn directly from the *Canary* islands to the westward; that all the seas, islands, and countries from that strait line to the northward, should belong to their Catholic majesties, except the islands then in the possession of the king of *Portugal*: and that all the seas, islands,

islands, and continents, from that land to the southward, should belong to *Portugal*; except the *Canary* islands, which belonged to the crown of *Castile*. To which their Catholic majesties answered, that what they proposed was of little signification; because nothing belonged to the king of *Portugal*, but what they had mentioned. However, commissioners were appointed to adjust this difference, either by setting boundaries north and south, or from east to west, or such other limits as they should think proper, either by sea or land: who, on the 7th of *June* 1493, came to an agreement, "That the line for settling the boundaries should be drawn two hundred and seventy leagues farther than that mentioned in the papal bull, from the *Cape Verd* islands westward. That all beyond that meridian westward, should belong to the kings of *Castile*; and all to the eastward should appertain to the navigations, conquests, and discovery of the kings of *Portugal*; but that their Catholic majesties might freely sail through the seas belonging to his *Portugueze* majesty, on condition of holding a direct course." This agreement was ratified by their Catholic and *Portugueze* majesties; but it was never carried into execution, by making the partition; nor was it of any consequence, as other nations would not acquiesce in such an exclusion to all other states, and soon convinced both the *Spaniards* and *Portugueze*, that they had an equal right to make discoveries, and establish settlements in both the *Indies*.

C H A P. IV.

The second voyage of Christopher Columbus to the West-Indies: with his discovery of Dominica, and some other of the Caribbee-Islands; as also of the Virgin-Islands, and Porto Rico. His return to Hispaniola; and the transactions there. His discovery of Jamaica; and his return to Spain, to answer some complaints exhibited against him to their Catholic majesties: with the reception which they gave him, and the account which he gave them of the natives of Hispaniola. How he vindicated himself; and undertook a third voyage to discover the continent of America: his discoveries there, and return to Hispaniola. — A short account of the voyage, undertaken by Alonso de Ojeda, and Americus Vesputius; as also by Peter Alonso Nino, Vincent Yanez Pinzon, and James de Lepe, for the farther discovery of the continent of America. — In what manner Columbus was recalled from his government of Hispaniola, and sent a prisoner to Spain. How he was employed on a fourth expedition: with his farther discoveries on the continent; and what distresses he met with at Jamaica. His arrival at Hispaniola; and in what condition he found the island. His return to Spain; where the neglect shewn him at court, occasioned his death at Valladolid. His character, and epitaph.

WHILE the courts of Spain and Portugal were contending about these limits, the admiral, Columbus, was proceeding on his second voyage to the new discovered countries. He departed from

from the *Canaries*, on the 7th of *October*, 1493; and, after sailing between 750 and 800 leagues, according to their reckoning, discovered land on the 3d of *November*, which proved to be one of the *Caribbee-Islands*. The admiral called this island *Dominica*, as it was discovered on *Sunday*, which in the *Spanish* language is called *Domingo*. Soon after, they saw several other islands; and, as there was no convenient harbour in *Dominica*, the admiral sailed to another island, which he called *Mari-galante*, after the name of his ship. He landed, and formally took possession of this island for their Catholic majesties; and then struck over to another, to which he gave the name of *St. Mary of Guadalupe*, at the request of some priests who belonged to a monastery of that name in *Spain*.

THE admiral sent his boats ashore on the island of *Guadalupe*; but, though there were several houses, the inhabitants fled to the mountains: however, the *Spaniards* took two *Indian* youths, and six women, who made them understand, by signs, that there was a continent thereabouts, and many islands which they distinguished by their particular names; and, being asked for *Hispaniola*, which in their language was called *Ayti*, they pointed towards that part where it lay. They also signified, that they belonged to the island of *Borriquen*, which was afterwards called *Porto Rico*; and intimated to the *Spaniards*, that the natives of *Guadalupe* were *Caribbees*, or *Canibals*. The admiral also went ashore, where he saw many hawks, haggards, kites, herons, daws, pigeons, turtles, geese, nightingales, and partridges: he also found great quantities of cotton in some of the houses,
with

with looms, in which the natives wove it; and several human heads, with baskets full of human bones, were hung up about these houses, which were better furnished with provisions, than those he had discovered in the first voyage. But there is little probability that the natives of these islands were *Canibals*, or fond of devouring human flesh; notwithstanding that, from this opinion, these islands were afterwards called the *Caribbees*: they might, indeed, sacrifice some of their prisoners to their idols; which custom is not only still continued among the independant *Indian* nations of *America*, but is also practised in several kingdoms of *Africa*, as it formerly was by many *European* nations, and particularly by the ancient *Saxons*, as well as the primitive *Britons*.

ON the 10th of *November*, as the admiral was coasting along the island of *Guadalupe*, towards the north-west, in search of *Hispaniola*, he discovered a very high island, which he called *Montserat*; because it appeared like the mountain of *Montserat* in *Catalonia*, in *Spain*. He next came to a very round island, that looked to be inaccessible; for which reason he called it *Santa Maria la Redonda*, or *St. Mary the Round*. He named another island *Santa Maria la Antigua*: several others appeared to the northward, and he anchored in one which he called *St. Martin*. He afterwards discovered a great number of islands, lying contiguous together; the greatest of which he called *St. Ursula*; and the others, the *Eleven Thousand Virgins*. He then arrived at the island of *Borriquen*, to which he gave the name of *St. John Baptist*, and anchored in a bay, on the west side of it, where he met with several

veral houses pleasantly situated, built with timber and thatched, with a square in the middle of them, and the walls of canes interwoven with greens artificially wrought; but the inhabitants were fled up the country. On the 22d of *November*, the admiral arrived at *Hispaniola*, and landed one of the *Indians* he had brought back from *Spain*, that he might inform his countrymen what great things he had seen among the *Spaniards*, and induce them to be their friends: on the 27th, the fleet came to an anchor at the mouth of the port of *Navidad*, or the *Nativity*; when some *Indians* came on board the admiral, and acquainted him that the *Spaniards* he had left behind him in the fort were all dead, which gave him great uneasiness.

THE admiral saw the fort in ruins, and the *Indians* at first secreted themselves: but the brother of king *Guacanagari*, and some *Indians*, who had learnt a little *Spanish*, came to the admiral, and informed him, that the *Spaniards* he had left behind him, soon disagreed among themselves, and disobeyed their commander; going about in an insolent manner to take what women and gold they pleased from the *Indians*: that eleven of them went into that part of the country which was governed by the cazique *Caunabo*, who was lord of the mines, and put all those *Spaniards* to death; after which, he went and demolished the fort, where he drove six *Spaniards* into the sea, who were drowned, and the rest were dispersed over the country: as also that *Guacanagari* came to the assistance of the *Spaniards*, and received some wounds, from which he was not recovered.

THE admiral went to the town where *Guacanagari*

gari resided, who convinced him that he had assisted the *Spaniards*, by shewing him his wounds, which were made by *Indian* weapons; and he corroborated what his brother had told the admiral, to whom he presented eight hundred small beads made of stone, one hundred of gold, a crown of the same metal, and a large quantity of gold dust: for which the admiral made a return to the king, by giving him some glass trinkets, knives, scissars, hawks-bells, pins, needles, and little looking-glasses.

THE admiral observed, that this part of the country was very low land, and had no stone, or other materials for building, though it had good harbours, and fresh water: he therefore resolved to turn back along the coast to the eastward, to find out a more convenient place for erecting a town, and establishing a settlement. Adjacent to a mountain, which he had named *Monte Christo*, he found a commodious harbour near the mouth of a river; and, perceiving there was a rock which would form a good natural fortification, he disembarked his men, and laid out the plan of a town, for which there were such proper necessaries of lime and stone, that it was soon built; being called *Isabella*, in honour of the queen of *Spain*.

THE admiral, being desirous of discovering the gold mines, sent fifteen men, under the command of *Alonso de Ojeda*, to examine the country; who travelled as far as the mines of *Cibao*, about fifty miles distant from the new town of *Isabella*; and returned with such specimens as he thought sufficient to prove the great plenty of that metal; which gave great satisfaction to the admiral and his people. In the mean time, the admiral sent twelve of the
ships

ships back again to *Spain*, under the command of *Anthony de Torres*, with all the gold he was able to get for their Catholic majesties; reserving for himself, in the *Indies*, two large ships and three caravels.

THE adventurers flattered themselves, that they should immediately come into the possession of mountains of gold: but, as they found it would be attended with much labour and difficulty, some of them repented of undertaking the voyage, and entered into a conspiracy against the admiral, to seize the remaining five ships, and return to *Spain*. *Bernal Diaz de Piza*, accomptant of the *Indies*, was the chief of these conspirators: but the admiral discovered the plot, ordered *Piza* to be sent home on board one of the ships, and punished the rest of the mutineers: after which, he ordered the great guns, ammunition, and naval stores belonging to the four ships, to be all brought on board his own ship, and placed under the guard of such persons in whom he could most confide.

THE admiral then set out for the country of *Cibao*, with a strong party of men; leaving his brother *James Columbus*, to command in his absence at *Isabella*. The admiral marched his men through several towns in military order; which struck a great impression upon the *Indians*, who were astonished to see the horses and mules. The *Spaniards* entered the country of *Cibao*, which they found full of high mountains, with a great number of rivers and brooks, where they got considerable quantities of gold, but chiefly in small grains. The *Indians* came out to receive the admiral; bringing him provisions, and gold dust,
when

when they saw it was so acceptable among the *Spaniards*; who also discovered several mines of gold, one of fine blue, and another of amber. But, as the country was bad for travelling, the admiral erected a fort, which he called *St. Thomas*, on an eminence, almost surrounded by the river *Xanique*; where he left a garrison of fifty-six men, under the command of *Pedro Margarite*, for the reduction of the province; and returned to *Isabella* on the 29th of *March*. The admiral found many of his men dead at *Isabella*, and the rest in a very declining condition; occasioned by the heat, and dampness of the country, which was rendered more intolerable by a scarcity of provisions. This calamity was increased by advice from *St. Thomas* that the *Indians* had abandoned their towns; and that the cazique *Caunabo* was making preparations to attack the fort: upon which the admiral immediately sent sixty of the most healthy men, to reinforce the garrison, who were soon followed by all the others, except the mechanics, commanded by *Alonso de Ojeda*; the whole amounting to four hundred men. *Ojeda* took some *Indians* prisoners; and the rest were so much afraid of the *Spaniards*, that one horseman drove above four hundred *Indians* before him; though they would venture to engage any *Spaniard* on foot.

ON the suppression of the troubles which were apprehended in *Hispaniola*, the admiral was determined to go upon new discoveries. After appointing a council of his principal officers, in which his brother *James* was president; and having given proper directions for the security of the island, he sailed to the westward, on the 24th of *April*, with
one

one ship, and two caravels; for the more particular discovery of *Cuba*; because it was not yet certainly known, whether it was an island, or a part of some continent. He discovered several excellent harbours, and many rivers, on the coast of *Cuba*; from the south side of which he observed the island of *Jamaica*, and arrived there on the 14th of *May*; when a great multitude of *Indians* resorted to the ships, in their canoes: but, when the admiral sent out his boats to sound, and find out some harbour, many armed canoes came out to prevent the *Spaniards* from landing: upon which the admiral returned to *Cuba*, where he met with such bad weather, and so many shoals, that he was obliged to quit his discovery, and return to *Hispaniola*, where he arrived on the 29th of *September*; after having sailed above three hundred leagues, and being in great want of provisions; though well assured that *Cuba* was a large island.

ON his return to *Hispaniola*, the admiral received the agreeable intelligence, that his brother, *Bartholomew Columbus*, was arrived there; who informed him of his transactions in *England*, and that their Catholic majesties had sent him over with three ships, laden with provisions. The admiral gave his brother *Bartholomew* the title of adelantado, or lord lieutenant; which their Catholic majesties very much resented, saying, that it belonged only to them to confer that title; though some years after they confirmed what the admiral had done.

HOWEVER, the joy which the admiral received on the arrival of his brother, was greatly interrupted, by finding the island in a general confusion: for Don *Pedro Margarite*, had permitted the

the soldiers to live without any order or discipline among the *Indians*, whom they continually plundered; and, fearing to be punished for disobeying the orders of the council, he returned to *Spain*, with several of his party, in the three ships brought by *Bartholomew Columbus*. On the departure of that commander, the *Spanish* soldiers licentiously dispersed themselves about the country, where several of them were killed by the *Indians*; and such an ill report was spread of their behaviour, that they were hated by *Guarinoex*, *Caunabo*, *Bebechico*, and *Higuanama*, the four principal kings of the island, and their subjects, who were impatient to expel the *Spaniards* out of their country: though *Guacanagari* still continued to treat them with great friendship and affection.

THE admiral assembled his scattered troops, with a resolution of chastising the *Indians*; in which *Guacanagari* offered him his assistance. *Caunabo*, king of *Maguana*, was the most potent and valiant prince upon the island; which made the admiral principally aim at making him his prisoner: but, as this could not be readily effected by force, he thought of subduing him by policy. Accordingly, he sent *Alonso de Ojeda*, with only nine *Spaniards*, under the pretence of carrying a present to *Caunabo*. On the arrival of *Ojeda* in the province of *Maguana*, which was about 160 miles from *Isabella*, the *Indians* were in a consternation to see him on horseback; believing that the man and horse were only one animal. *Caunabo* was told that the *Spaniards* had brought him a present from the admiral; when *Ojeda* was introduced to him, kissed his hand, and shewed him the present; which were
feters,

fetters, bright and well polished, that looked like silver. *Ojeda* told *Caunabo*, that the kings of *Spain* wore such ornaments, because they came from heaven : that they put them on at festivals ; and that *Caunabo* would look like the kings of *Spain* if he wore them in the same manner, and returned from bathing on horseback. The *Indian* prince had no suspicion that so small a number of men should have any design upon him, in a place where he was so formidable by the multitude of his subjects ; and therefore went to bathe himself in a river, attended with *Ojeda*, and a few of his own servants. After refreshing himself in the water, he ordered his attendants to keep at a distance ; when the *Spaniards* set him on horseback behind *Ojeda*, put on the fetters and hand-cuffs, and *Ojeda* rode off, with the *Spaniards* about the horse, till they lost sight of the *Indians*. They then bound him with cords, and carried him to *Isabella*, where they delivered him to the admiral, who embarked him, with several other *Indians*, for *Spain* ; but they were shipwrecked, and all of them perished in the passage.

THE seizing of *Caunabo*, gave the admiral a prospect of great inquietude ; because the brothers of that prince were highly irritated at such an unexpected procedure, and were determined to make war upon the *Spaniards*, with the utmost of their abilities. They assembled about one hundred thousand men together : but the admiral took the field with two hundred foot, twenty horse, and twenty wolf dogs ; which came up with, and entirely routed the *Indians* ; a great number of whom were slain, many taken prisoners, and some of them

sent to *Spain*: for what were the unarmed, and undisciplined multitude of naked *Indians*, to a well formed troop of *Spaniards*, armed with weapons unknown and horrible to this innocent people, who dreaded the sight of a horse, and were mangled to pieces by the dogs? The admiral continued ranging about the island nine or ten months, and severely punishing those who made any resistance; though the resistance was only the law of nature, exerted against the rapacity of foreign invaders. The brothers of *Caunabo* had several other encounters with the *Spaniards*: but, conscious that their power was ineffectual, they at last submitted to the admiral, who imposed a tribute upon all the inhabitants of the island, and exacted obedience from them to their Catholic majesties. The inhabitants of the province of *Cibao* were each of them to pay a small hawk's-bell full of gold every quarter of a year; and every other person was to pay a quarter of a hundred weight of cotton: but this tribute was too heavy to be paid; which made several *Indians* fly to the mountains, or escape into the other provinces; so that above one third of the natives perished with hunger, and fatigue.

THE return of *Anthony de Torres*, with the twelve ships, into *Spain*, gave infinite satisfaction to their Catholic majesties, who sent a letter to *Columbus*, again repeating their thanks for his good services, promising to promote his interest to the utmost of their power; because every thing he had advanced was now evidently demonstrated: they also desired he would give them an explicit account of all his later discoveries; and, that they might frequently hear from him, they acquainted him that

that a ship should be sent from *Spain* every month, and one return from the *Indies*, as the affair with *Portugal* was adjusted: but desired he would be present at drawing the line of partition, or send his brother *Bartholomew* with draughts, and his opinion what ought to be done in so difficult a matter.

HOWEVER, Don *Pedro Margarite*, and some others who had deserted the admiral, combined together in alledging many things prejudicial to his character, on their arrival in *Spain*; which occasioned their Catholic majesties to send *John Aguado*, one of the grooms of the bed-chamber, to *Hispaniola*, to give an account of the situation of affairs in the island. *Aguado* arrived at *Hispaniola*, in *October* 1495, while the admiral was carrying on the war against the brothers of *Caunabo*: but, having information that *Aguado* began to assume too much authority, he came to *Isabella*; where he found that his people were in great distress for provisions, and other necessaries; which occasioned them, as well as the tributary *Indians*, to make their complaint to *Aguado*, who behaved with such presumption to the admiral, that he found it necessary to return to *Spain*, with a view of vindicating himself before their Catholic majesties, and to give them his opinion about the partition that was to be made of the ocean between the two crowns of *Castile* and *Portugal*. The admiral erected the forts of *Magdalen*, *St. Catharine*, and *Esperanza*, for the protection and security of the island: he then appointed his brother *Bartholomew Columbus* lieutenant-governor, and set sail on the 10th of *March* 1496, in one of the caravals, being accompanied by *Aguado* in another, and both of them

carried over two hundred and twenty men, who were desirous of returning to *Spain*. The contrary winds, and the currents, obliged the admiral to make for the eastward; so that it was the 10th of *April*, before he could arrive at the *Caribbee* islands, when he supplied himself with provisions at *Guadalupe*. On the 20th of *April*, he continued his voyage: but, being then unacquainted with the nature of the trade-winds, which constantly sit from the north-east, or thereabouts, near the tropic of *Cancer*, he made it the 19th of *June*, before he came upon the coast of *Spain*, when he entered the bay of *Cadiz*; having spent three months in the voyage: though if he had run up at least to thirty degrees of latitude, on his departure from *Hispaniola*, he would have met with the trade-winds, which might have carried him to *Spain*, in the same time as he spent in getting to the *Caribbees*.

THE admiral repaired immediately to the court, which was then at *Burgos*, the capital of old *Castile*; where he met with a gracious reception from their majesties; though they signified to him, that he ought to have used less severity. He acquainted them with the condition of the island; as also, with the discovery of *Cuba*, and the mines, presenting them with some gold plate, and gold dust, among which, there were some grains as big as peas, others like beans, and some like walnuts.

THE admiral, very satisfactorily, cleared up his character and conduct, against all the informations that had been made against him by his enemies. He then assured their majesties, that he could discover another continent adjacent to his other discoveries,

coveries, and demanded six ships for the expedition: but he was two years before he could procure them; because he had not brought a sufficient quantity of gold to satisfy the great expectations of his employers. However, it was agreed, by the advice of the admiral, that three hundred and thirty men should be always kept on the royal pay at *Hispaniola*. Their majesties likewise granted to all those who would voluntarily settle there, a third part of all the gold they should get out of the mines; and that they should pay only a tenth of all other things to the crown. The admiral also obtained permission to transport all criminals into the *Indies*, to serve there for a certain number of years: but this was a very imprudent step; because infant colonies should be supported by a better foundation than the refuse of mankind. Their majesties empowered the admiral to make a division of the lands in *Hispaniola*, among the colonists; reserving to themselves all the gold, silver, and other metals. They also promised to supply the admiral with six millions of maravedies, or 2100*l.* sterling, for the intended expedition to discover the continent, and victualling the fleet; but it was a long time before he received the money.

IN the account which the admiral gave to their majesties of the natives of *Hispaniola*, he informed them, that all their kings, or caziques, had a house at some distance from their towns, where there were some uncommon images made of stone, or wood, and sometimes painted; which they called *Cemis*, and honoured them with the names of their ancestors. The people paid great adoration to these images; praying to some for health, and to others for plenty, seasonable weather, or prosperous enter-

prizes : yet, they considered them only as inferior deities, having much greater veneration for the sun. Each cazique was a kind of chief priest, as well as sovereign of his people, whom they kept in subjection by many religious impostures. Most of the caziques had also three stones; to which they paid much devotion; the one they held good for the growth of the land, another for the easy delivery of women with child, and the third for rain or sun-shine, according as they had occasion. When a cazique died, he was opened and dried by the fire, for the preservation of his body; which was interred in a cave, together with his arms, and provision; the wife who bore him the greatest affection, being also shut up with the corps till she died. It was customary to strangle all people at the point of death: but they only preserved the heads of the common sort. They were of opinion, that after death they went to a valley, which every great cazique believed was in his own dominions; where they imagined they should find their parents and predecessors, be blest with the most beautiful wives, the most delicate food, and enjoy an eternal scene of uninterrupted pleasures. They thought their idols were immortal, and that the dead appeared to the living; on which account every *Indian* was afraid to go any where alone at the approach of night. Their physicians pretended to effect cures by the assistance of demons. The men were addicted to sodomy, which was abhorred by the women, who were continent with the natives, but lewd with the *Spaniards*. Mothers, sisters, and daughters were excepted: but the men had no regard to any other degrees of consanguinity.

DURING

DURING the residence of the admiral in *Spain*, his brother *Bartholomew* had great troubles to encounter with in *Hispaniola* : but their Catholic majesties confirmed the title of *Adelantado*, which had been conferred on him by his brother. The death of his *Portuguese* majesty, and of the infant *Don John* of *Spain*, with some other accidents, deferred the departure of *Columbus*, on his third voyage, to discover new lands, till the 30th of *May*, 1498, when he set sail from *St. Lucar*, the port town of *Seville*, with six ships; having been detained almost two years in *Spain*.

THE admiral received intelligence that a *Portuguese* fleet lay in wait for him at *Cape St. Vincent*; upon which, he sailed directly to the *Madeiras*, and afterwards to the *Canaries*; from whence he sent three of his ships laden with provisions to *Hispaniola*, and then proceeded himself towards the *Cape Verd* islands. He intended, in the name of the most Holy Trinity, as he was always used to say, to sail to the southward, till he came under the line; and to proceed to the westward, till *Hispaniola* bore north-west from him; for he wanted to see what islands or continent were in that part; it being his own opinion no man had ever sailed that course, and that the sea there was entirely unknown: in which conjecture he was very right; and by the same course *Brazil* was afterwards accidentally discovered by the *Portuguese*. King *John* of *Portugal* had affirmed, there was a continent to the southward; and *Columbus* was determined to try whether he was right or wrong in such an assertion: besides, by holding such a course, the admiral designed to find out the truth of what the *Indians* of

Hispaniola reported; which was, that a black people, from the south and south-west, had come to that island, who had the heads of their javelins made of a sort of metal called guanin, some of which he had sent to *Spain*, where it appeared on the assay to be of 32 parts, 18 of gold, 6 of brass, and 8 of copper.

THE admiral continued his course south-west, till he found some of the same kind of weeds he had met with in the direct way to *Hispaniola*, and sailed within five degrees of the line; where, on the 13th of *July*, the heat of the weather was so violent, that he was afraid the ships would take fire, and the men perish: but, on the 19th, they met with a fair gale, and sailed seventeen days to the westward, designing to turn again to the south, so that *Hispaniola* might bear north, where the admiral believed he should find land, either before or after he came to that point. On the 31st of *July*, he discovered land to the south-east; and it proved to be an island, which the admiral called *la Trinidad*, or the *Trinity*; having promised to give that name to the first land he should discover. This island lies near the mouth of the great river *Oronoque*, in south *America*; and the inhabitants gave the admiral a friendly reception; who, from thence, discovered more land, which he took for an island, and called it *Isla Santa*, or *Holy Island*: but, it proved to be that part of the continent called *Paria*, or *Guiana*. On the 5th of *August*, he discovered several good harbours, great tracts of cultivated land, and many rivers; which invited him on shore, where he found well tasted grapes, mirabollans, apples, and a sort of fruit that looked like oranges,

oranges, but had figs within. The *Indians* came down in great numbers, and bartered several things for *Spanish* toys: they had some little plates of gold about their necks, which they said was very plentiful in those parts, and shewed how they gathered it: they wore collars and beads of several sorts, having their hair cut short, with little caps and aprons made of cotton, for covering their heads and their privities. The admiral observed, that these *Indians* were a polite and warlike people: he discovered, and gave names to several capes and harbours, as also to four islands; and he was now well assured, that this land was the continent: but, as his men grew uneasy, and as they wanted provisions, he desisted from making any farther discovery at present; and, on the 15th of *August*, steered his course for *Hispaniola*, where he arrived on the 22d at the town of *St. Domingo*, which his brother *Bartholomew* had built on the south-side of the island; giving it this name in memory of their father *Dominic*.

THE adelantado, in the absence of his brother the admiral, had contracted a friendship with *Bobeckio*, king of the province of *Xaragua*, and prevailed upon him to pay a tribute to their Catholic majesties. But *Guarinoex*, king of the *Indians* about *Cibao*, took up arms against the *Spaniards*, and assembled fifteen thousand men together, who were defeated by the adelantado; when *Guarinoex*, and some of his caziques, were taken prisoners; though they were soon afterwards set at liberty. This revolt of the *Indians* was followed by an insurrection among the *Spaniards*, headed by *Francis Roldan*, the chief alcalde, or chief justice; who intimated

intimated to several seamen and labourers, that the adelantado, and his brother *James*, intended to pay no obedience to their Catholic majesties; but to keep the island to themselves, and make all the people slaves to employ them in building their forts and houses, and in collecting their tributes. The mutineers broke open the royal magazine at *Isabella*, from whence *Roldan* took all the arms and ammunition he thought proper for his followers; as also several cows, mares, and colts, with which he went about the *Indian* towns, and persuaded the *Indians* to discontinue the payment of their tribute. *Roldan* aspired to the chief authority, imagining the admiral would not return again to *Hispaniola*, after the informations were laid against him by *Aguada*. He had seventy men well armed, which were afterwards increased by other revolvers, who intended to besiege the adelantado in the *Conception*. But, on the 3d of *February*, 1498, two ships arrived from *Spain*, laden with provisions, and the adelantado secured them by repairing to *St. Domingo*; where he was followed by *Roldan*, who also intended to get the provisions into his possession. These disturbances among the *Spaniards*, occasioned *Guarinoex* to quit his country, and retire into the territory of *Mayobanex*, king of the *Ciguayos*, who inhabited the mountains, wore their hair down to the waist, and looked upon themselves as the bravest people upon the island. The adelantado marched against these *Indians*, and sent a messenger to *Mayobanex*, desiring him to deliver up *Guarinoex*, because he had absconded, and refused to pay his tribute: but, the *Indian* answered, that he despised the friendship of
the

the *Spaniards*, and would protect *Guarinoes*. The adelantado then plundered the country; and *Mayobanex* assembled a numerous body of *Indians* to oppose the *Spaniards*: but they were so much terrified at the *Spanish* arms, that they deserted their prince, who, with a few faithful attendants, retreated to the mountains, where he was soon afterwards taken prisoner, together with his wife and children, *Guarinoes*, and some others, who were all conducted to the *Conception*.

IN the mean time, the three ships which the admiral had sent before him to *Hispaniola*, arrived on the south-side of the island, where *Roldan* had posted himself with his mutineers, and persuaded some of the men belonging to these ships to join his people. But, when the admiral arrived, *Roldan* returned to his duty, on receiving a general pardon, and a confirmation of his office as chief judge of the island: after which, the admiral diligently applied himself to the discovery of the mines, and found such plenty of gold, that his family soon accumulated abundance of riches.

THE commanders of the ships which the admiral had sent to *Spain*, delivered an account to their Catholic majesties of the discovery he had made of the continent; and of the pearls he had found, which had not been expected from those parts. Great rejoicings were made upon this information, which inclined several people to solicit for the privilege of making farther discoveries; and particularly *Alonso de Ojeda*, who had four ships fitted out by the merchants of *Seville*, and set sail from port *St. Mary*, on the 20th of *May*, 1499, being accompanied by *Americus Vesputius*. After sailing
twenty-

twenty-seven days to the westward, they discovered the continent, and went on shore, where they traded with the *Indians* along the coast till they came to a town built in the water, containing twenty-six large houses like bells, raised on pillars, with draw-bridges to go from one house to another. The *Indians* at first were in a great consternation at the sight of the ships, drew up their bridges, and retired into their houses: but the *Spaniards* made signs of friendship, and they soon had courage enough to venture on board the ships, which proceeded down the coast of *Paria*, where the admiral *Columbus* had been before; though *Americus Vesputius*, by many artifices, assumed to himself the honour of having discovered the continent. They afterwards landed in some of the *Caribbee* islands, where they met with opposition, and killed several of the natives: after which, they went to *Hispaniola*, and carried with them two hundred and twenty two *Indian* slaves.

ALONSO de OJEDA, on his arrival at *Hispaniola*, refused to pay any submission to the admiral, and created an insurrection more formidable than that which had been lately suppressed. However, this sudden storm soon subsided, and *Ojedo* returned to *Spain*: though, after his departure, *Hernando de Guevera*, kindled another commotion, which was soon suppressed by the bravery of the admiral, who ordered some of the mutineers to be executed.

THE inhabitants of *Seville* were informed, that *Ojeda* was directed in his voyage by the draught which the admiral had made of what he had discovered on the continent; and therefore several others followed his example, by undertaking new discoveries.

veries. *Peter Alonso Nino*, who was with the admiral when *Paria* was discovered, obtained the royal licence to undertake a voyage, on condition that he should not come to an anchor, nor land any where within fifty leagues of what the admiral had discovered. *Lewis Guerra* of *Seville*, defrayed the expence of the expedition, and appointed his brother *Christopher* captain of the ship, who set sail soon after *Alonso de Ojeda*, and also traded along the coast of *Paria*, where he was well entertained by the natives; and, having 1200 ounces of beautiful pearls given him in exchange for a few toys, he returned to *Spain*, on the 6th of *February* 1500.

VINCENT YANEZ PINSON, who accompanied the admiral in the first discovery, equipped four ships at his own expence, and set sail from *Palos* about the beginning of the year 1500; being the first *Spaniard* who crossed the equinoctial line. On the 26th of *February*, he discovered land, went on shore, and took possession of the country, which was a part of *Brazil*: but he met with great opposition from the natives, who killed and wounded several of the *Spaniards*. He afterwards sailed along the coast of *Paria*, and then proceeded towards the *Caribbees*: but two of his ships were lost in the passage with all the men, and the others arrived in *Spain* about the end of *September*; having discovered six hundred leagues along the coast of *Paria*.

JAMES de LEPE, in the beginning of the year 1500, set sail from *Palos* with two ships upon a discovery, and pursued the same course as *Pinson* had done: but met with more obstructions from the *Indians*.

THOUGH

THOUGH *Columbus* had given *Spain* the honour of having discovered a new world; the *Spanish* court treated this great man with the greatest ingratitude. The account which he had transmitted of the insurrection of *Roldan*, was contradicted by complaints against the admiral; who, like all other eminent men, had too many enemies to depreciate his worth. They represented him to the king as ambitious and tyrannical, cruel and avaricious: that he exercised no proper form of government; using both *Indians* and *Spaniards* as slaves: as also that he had the possession of immense treasures, while he concealed the richest mines from the royal officers. Such unjust complaints, and malicious suggestions, deprived the admiral of that royal patronage and protection which he had so deservedly obtained; so that his Catholic majesty was determined to recal him from his government; though, perhaps, his greatest inducement to so ungenerous an action, was the report of the immense opulence that the admiral had acquired, and which he imagined would flow into the royal treasury upon his removal.

UPON these presumptions, their Catholic majesties came to the resolution of removing the admiral from his government: though it was pretended, he requested that a judge might be sent over to examine into the insolencies committed by *Roldan* and *Ojeda*. However, it was acknowledged, the admiral also desired that their majesties would pay a proper regard to the services he had performed; and that no incroachment should be made upon his rights: which is a strong proof that he was afraid of being neglected, and of meeting with injustice, when

when he had merited all the favours that royal munificence could bestow.

FRANCIS de BOVADILLA, commendary of the order of *Calatrava*, was appointed by their majesties to go over to *Hispaniola*, with the title and commission of examiner, as also of governor; giving him several blank warrants to fill up as he thought proper; as also an authority to apprehend the admiral, and send him to *Spain*, if the complaints alledged against him were put into proof. All the officers and commanders of the island were ordered to assist *Bovadilla*; and a letter was also sent to the admiral, commanding him to obey the new governor.

ON the 23d of *August*, 1500, *Francis de Bovadilla* arrived at *Hispaniola*; at which time, the admiral, and his brother the adelantado, were punishing some of the mutineers, and settling the tranquillity of the island, so that the *Indians* might soon be brought to pay their tributes. *Bovadilla* immediately exerted all the force of his commission; demanded all the royal stores, arms, and provisions to be delivered up to him; took possession of the fort, and seized upon every thing belonging to the admiral; who could not imagine that their majesties would have suffered him to be treated with such injustice and indignity. *Bovadilla* soon ingratiated himself into the affections of many discontented people, whom he countenanced in their complaints against the admiral. The accusers alledged, that the admiral treated the *Spaniards* with great severity, by compelling them to work, when they were afflicted with illness, and perishing with hunger: that he had refused to allow them provisions, and would not permit the *Indians*

to

to be baptized, while he made war on them unjustly, and took many slaves, to send into *Spain*: and that he would not grant any permission for digging of gold, because he was willing to conceal the wealth of the *Indies*, with a view of retaining the possession of them by the assistance of some other monarch. All these allegations were false; yet *Bovadilla* seized the admiral, and both his brothers; without so much as seeing or speaking to them. They were all put into irons, and no person permitted to converse with them: which was so inhuman an action, considering the dignity of the person, and the inestimable service he had done the crown of *Spain*, that the admiral afterwards kept his fetters, and ordered they should be buried with him, in testimony of the ingratitude he had received. In this condition, the admiral and his brothers were sent prisoners into *Spain*, under the guard of *Alonso de Vallejo*, who was ordered to deliver the prisoners, as soon as he arrived at *Cadiz*, to *John Rodrigues de Fonseca*, a *Spanish* bishop; and it was universally believed, that *Bovadilla* put this affront upon the admiral only to win the favour of that prelate. The prisoners were carried from *Hispaniola*, about the beginning of *October*, when *Vallejo* offered to strike off their fetters; which the admiral would not suffer, till it was done by the order of their majesties.

THE ship arrived at *Cadiz* on the 25th of *November*; at which time their majesties were at *Granada*: but, being informed how the admiral was treated, they ordered him to be released, and to have a thousand ducats to carry him to court, where he met with a very favourable reception; their majesties

jesties assuring him, it had never been their design that he should be any way molested, and promising to redress all his grievances; but particularly the queen, who had always been more favourable to him than the king. The admiral was upon his knees a considerable time before their majesties; being unable to utter a word, through the greatness of his concern. They ordered him to rise, when he made a pathetic speech, protesting that it had always been his intention to serve their majesties with the utmost fidelity; and that, if he had been guilty of any mistakes, they proceeded from his want of knowledge in the art of government, not from a want of zeal to their majesties, or any disaffection to their subjects, notwithstanding they had treated him with the utmost disrespect and insolence.

THE admiral exhibited several complaints against *Bovadilla*, upon which their majesties resolved to send another governor to *Hispaniola*; and appointed *Nicholas de Obando*, knight of the order of *Alcantara*, to hold the government for two years. Among his instructions, he was ordered to bring *Bovadilla* to a trial; and to examine into the insurrection of *Roldan*. He was also particularly charged by the queen, that all the *Indians* of *Hispaniola*, should be free from servitude, be protected like the *Spaniards*, and be carefully instructed in the christian faith. All that the admiral and his brothers had been dispossessed of by *Bovadilla*, was ordered to be restored by *Obando*; but no *Jews*, *Moors*, or new converts, were to be tolerated in the *Indies*.

THE fleet appointed to carry over *Nicholas de*
VOL. I I *Obando,*

Obando, consisted of thirty two sail, commanded by *Anthony de Torres*; having on board two thousand five hundred men, with ten *Franciscan* friars. They set sail from *St. Lucar*, on the 13th of *February*, 1502; and, after meeting with a terrible tempest, the new governor arrived at *Hispaniola* on the 15th of *April*, where he immediately put his orders into execution, by sending *Bovadilla* on board the fleet, together with *Roldan*, and all the men who had been concerned in his insurrection; as also the cazique *Guarinoex*, and two hundred thousand castillans, or two thousand pounds weight of gold: but all of them were lost in their passage.

THE report was daily increasing among the *Spaniards*, that pearls and gold were brought from the new discovered continent, in exchange for hawks-bells, and other things of inconsiderable value: which excited several enterprising persons to continue the discovery. *Roderic de Bastidas* obtained a licence for fitting out two ships in *January* 1501, and sailed to the continent, where he touched at several places to trade with the *Indians*, who came down in great multitudes to barter with the *Spaniards*; particularly along that part of the coast which was afterwards called *Terra Firma*. *Bastidas* then went to *Hispaniola*, where he was imprisoned by *Bovadilla*, who pretended he had bartered for gold with the *Indians* of *Xaragua*: but he soon released him; when *Bastidas* returned to *Spain*, where he paid their majesties the fifth part of the gold and pearls he had brought; and the whole court was rejoiced to hear that he got them on the continent. About the same time, *Alonso de Ojeda* sailed from *Cadiz*, on his second voyage; being

being again accompanied by *Americus Vesputius*, who still persisted in arrogating to himself the honour of having discovered the continent; though he was sensible that honour was due to the admiral *Columbus*. They followed the same course that *Bastidas* had taken, and coasted along the same shore, without knowing that he had been there; but they were not so successful in their expedition.

NOTWITHSTANDING the admiral *Columbus* had fully proved himself innocent of what he had been accused by his enemies, he was deprived of his government of *Hispaniola*; though he retained the titles of admiral and vice-roy of the *Indies*. He still solicited to be restored to his full rights and prerogatives; since he had performed all he had promised, and had been so great a sufferer in the service of the crown; offering to make considerable discoveries, without regarding his age and infirmity; because he was strongly of opinion, that he might find a straight or passage, about that part which was called the isthmus of *Darien*. Their majesties amused him only with promises, till they could hear what account *Obando* would send them, about the affairs of the island; when they granted the admiral four ships, and provisions for two years; with an assurance, that, if he died in the voyage, his son *Don James* should succeed him in all his rights and prerogatives.

THE admiral set sail, on his fourth expedition to the *Indies*, from *Cadiz*, on the 9th of *May*, 1502; the largest of his ships being not above seventy ton, and the least not under fifty; having one hundred and forty men on board, with his brother the adelantado. The admiral arrived at

the grand *Canary* on the 20th, where he took in wood and water: from whence he sailed on the 25th, and on the 2d of *June*, landed his men at *Martinico*, one of the *Caribbee* islands, where they refreshed themselves for three days, and then continued their voyage among a great number of very delightful islands, whose verdure made them like so many beautiful gardens: but, as one of his ships was disabled, the admiral was obliged to make towards *Hispaniola*, and came before *St. Domingo* on the 29th. He sent *Peter de Terreros*, one of his captains, to acquaint the governor with the necessity he was under of leaving his disabled ship in port; and to desire he would permit him to enter the harbour with his ships, not only to get another, but also to shelter himself from a great storm which he was certain would soon happen, from the porpoises playing upon the surface of the water, and other observations made by mariners on such occasions. *Obando* refused this request, and informed the admiral, that the fleet of thirty-two sail was ready to put to sea: but the admiral advised him not to permit these ships to go out in less than eight days, because he was certain a dangerous tempest was approaching; for which reason he was going to put into the next harbour he could find. The governor rejected this admonition; and the pilots, in derision of the admiral, called him the prophet: but most of them lost their lives by their folly and obstinacy; for they set sail on the 1st of *July*, and within forty hours there arose a violent storm, which separated the fleet, and cast away twenty of the ships, wherein *Bovadilla* and *Roldan* perished, with many others: while

while the admiral securely shielded himself from the danger, by getting into the little creek of *Porto Hermoso*. A great mortality also happened among the *Spaniards* upon the island, occasioned by their excessive fatigue in opening the mines; with which employment they were entirely unacquainted: besides, *Obando* was also disturbed by an insurrection among the *Indians*.

THE admiral sailed from *Hispaniola* on the 14th of *July*, and made towards the continent; passing by the south-side of *Jamaica*, from whence he continued his course till he arrived at the island of *Guayana*, in the gulph of *Honduras*. An *Indian* canoe came to the admiral, being as long as a galley, and eight feet broad: in the middle of which was an awning made of mats of palm-tree leaves, and under it were twenty-five men, with several women and children, who had been trading upon the coast of *Yucatan*, and were returning to the coast of *Mexico*, with great quantities of large pieces of cloth, quilts, and quilted waistcoats of several colours. The admiral treated them with great civility, and dismissed them all but one elderly man, whom he detained to give him an account of the neighbouring continent, and to serve him as an interpreter among the natives. The *Indian* was asked by signs, if he knew where there was any gold? and he pointed to shew that there was some to the eastward: so that the admiral imagined, he should either hear of, or discover *China*, if he continued along that coast; and, therefore, he forbore proceeding to the westward; though in returning back, he laboured against the trade-winds and currents, which constantly set to the

west in the north sea. However, he ran up as far as the present town of *Porto Bello*, to which he gave this name, on account of its beautiful situation. He landed at several places, and traded with the natives, who gave him large quantities of gold plates, for a few hawks-bells and other toys: they also furnished the *Spaniards* with several kinds of provisions, and seemed a well civilized people. Upon many parts of the coast, were discovered an infinite number of pine trees and oaks; as also six or seven sorts of palm, and many myrabolan trees bearing a pleasant and odoriferous fruit. Some of the natives were entirely naked, others only covered their privities, and others wore jackets without sleeves which reached down to their navels. There were many who had their faces and bodies painted with several colours: a few of them were distinguished by a kind of coloured cotton turbans on their heads, instead of caps; and several of them adorned their ears and noses with thin plates of gold; but those who hung them to their ears, stretched them to such an enormous size, that the admiral called their country *La Costa de la Orejas*, or *The Coast of Ears*. The houses in some towns were built with timber, and thatched with reeds; having tombs adjacent to them, wherein dead bodies were embalmed, and wrapt in cotton cloths, without any disagreeable scent: over which were planks carved with the figures of beasts, and on some the resemblance of the person deceased. In some parts, the *Indians* came down armed in great numbers, with bows, arrows, spears, and clubs, as if they intended to prevent the *Spaniards* from landing: but they were soon pacified, and traded
very

very civilly afterwards : though, when the admiral asked them some questions, and ordered his notary to take down their answers in writing, they were in such a consternation at seeing the pen, ink, and paper, that most of them ran away, imagining that writing was a kind of exorcism.

THE admiral left *Porto Bello* on the 9th of *November*, and a little to the eastward of it discovered some small islands, where he found several refreshments ; which made him call them *de Bastimentos*, or *The Islands of Provision*. But, as the stormy east and north-east winds obstructed him from proceeding in his intended course, he returned again to the westward, on the 5th of *December*, being informed that there were gold mines in the province of *Veragua*. He met with such bad weather, that he called this part of the country *la Costa de los Contrastes*, or *The Coast of Opposition* : however, on the 6th of *January*, 1503, the ships arrived on the coast of *Veragua*, and entered a river which the admiral called *Bethlehem* : they traded with the natives, who brought them great quantities of gold ; particularly, one of the caziques of the country, whose name was *Quibia*, and who also conducted them to the mines of *Urirá*, where the Spaniards gathered some gold among the roots of the trees ; returning to their ships with great satisfaction at finding the precious metal so near the surface of the earth.

THE admiral likewise received information, that there were very considerable mines of gold farther up the country ; which occasioned him to come to the resolution of establishing a colony upon the river of *Bethlehem*, where he intended to leave his

brother, with most of the men, while he returned to *Spain* for farther reinforcements.

ACCORDINGLY, some houses were built, a fort erected, and a garrison of eighty men appointed; who had proper supplies of arms, stores, and provisions. This was the first colony which the *Spaniards* planted on the continent, though it was of short duration: for the adelantado being apprehensive that the cazique *Quibia*, was preparing to dispossess him of his settlement, sent a body of men to secure him and his family; which was expeditiously performed, and all of them carried on board one of the ships, except the cazique, who made his escape, returned to his people, and assembled a numerous body of them to attack the *Spaniards*. The *Indians* were as private in coming to attack the *Spanish* forts, as the *Spaniards* were in seizing the *Indian* prince; but they were not equally successful, being repulsed, and many of them slain. However, the *Indians* afterwards killed several of the *Spaniards*; which so much intimidated those in garrison, that they abandoned the fort, and returned on board the ships; leaving the hulk of one ship behind, which was all worm-eaten. They returned to *Porto Bello*, where they left another of the ships, and proceeded to *Cuba*, where they escaped a violent storm, and refreshed themselves: after which, they stood for *Jamaica*, and arrived there on *Midsummer-eve*. The two remaining ships were so leaky, that it was impossible to keep them afloat: and therefore the admiral ran them both aground, in a small creek, called *Santa Gloria*, as close together, and as near the shore as possible; where they supported and shored up the ships with timber,

timber, to prevent them from bulging: but, as they were filled with water almost to the decks, cabbins were made on the heads and sterns, to shelter the men from the weather.

WHEN the ships were thus secured, the *Indians* came in their canoes to sell provisions, and a very friendly intercourse was carried on between them and the *Spaniards*; whom the admiral kept on board the ships, for fear they should go up the country and disoblige the natives. The admiral then consulted with his officers about the best means of getting away from the island; when it was agreed to send advice to the governor of *Hispaniola*, of their unhappy condition, and to request that he would send a ship to convoy them all away. But this was an affair which must necessarily be attended with the utmost danger and difficulty; because the distance between the two nearest points of *Jamaica* and *Hispaniola*, was about twenty-four leagues, besides thirty more to the points where it was proper to cross over; and this passage was to be undertaken in canoes, made of one piece of timber, which are in danger of being overfet by any violent agitation of the waves. *James Mendez de Segura*, chief notary of the fleet, and *Bartholomew Fiesco* were appointed to undertake this passage, with six *Spaniards*, and ten *Indians* to row; who underwent great fatigue for ten days, before they arrived at *Hispaniola*. *James Mendez* waited upon the governor, who was very dilatory in dispatching the business which the admiral requested: however, *Mendez* bought a ship at *St. Domingo*; though it was a considerable time before he was able to send it to *Jamaica*.

THE admiral gave *Mendez* some dispatches to be sent immediately to their Catholic majesties, containing a full relation of his voyage, the dangers and troubles he had undergone, and of his discovery of the rich mines at *Veragua*: at the same time complaining of the ungenerous treatment which had been shewn him by his imprisonment, and the seizure of all his effects; praying redress; as also lamenting, that, after having spent twenty years in the service of the crown, he had not any habitation to take shelter in, when he should return to *Spain*, and must be obliged to take up his lodgings at a public inn. But the admiral had still greater difficulties to encounter; for the succour which he expected from *Hispaniola*, was so long in coming over, that his men began to be discontented, and to despair of their safety. *Francis de Porras*, one of his captains, was at the head of the mutineers, and publickly told the admiral, that if he would not leave the island immediately, they would leave him behind: after which, they seized some canoes which the admiral had bought of the *Indians*, and went in them to the eastern point of *Jamaica*, where they were unable to make their intended passage to *Hispaniola*.

THE admiral found about half the people faithful to their commander: but the *Indians* began to shew him some disrespect, when they found such a considerable number of his men had revolted: though he was soon relieved from this distress in the following manner. He knew there would be a lunar eclipse in three days, and sent an *Indian*, who could speak *Spanish*, to invite the caziques, with the other principal inhabitants of those parts,

to pay him a visit. They accepted the invitation, and waited upon the admiral the day before the eclipse happened: when he told them, that the revolted *Spaniards* had so much offended heaven, that the Great God, to whom they were servants, would not permit the mutineers to pass over into *Hispaniola*. He also acquainted the *Indians*, that they themselves had also incurred the displeasure of this Great God of the christians, who was the Supreme Lord of the whole universe; and was resolved to chastise them with famine and other calamities, because they would not supply him with provisions in exchange for his commodities. And he further told them, that, to convince them of the truth of what he asserted, his Omnipotent God was pleased they should see a certain sign of his anger in the sky: wherefore, they might that night observe, that the moon would appear of a bloody hue soon after she rose, to denote the punishment which God would inflict upon the *Indians*. When the admiral had made this speech, some of the *Indians* went away greatly terrified, and others derided the prediction: but the latter were soon put into an equal consternation with the former; for the eclipse began as soon as the moon was up, and increased as she advanced in the horizon: which gave all the *Indians* such horrible apprehensions of the anger of that deity they imagined they had offended, that they expeditiously returned to the admiral, intreating him to pray to his God to pardon them; and assuring him they would supply him with all the provisions he would demand. The admiral answered, he would offer up his prayers to God; shut himself up; and waited till the eclipse was at
its

its greatest height; when he came out again to the *Indians*, telling them that God had forgiven them, on his promises that they would supply the christians for the future: and, as a proof that this pardon was obtained, they would see that the moon would be gradually appeased, and return to her usual complexion. The *Indians* soon perceived the eclipse to go off; upon which they admired the God of the christians, returned the admiral the most grateful acknowledgment of his favour, and afterwards plentifully supplied him with provisions.

EIGHT months were now elapsed since the departure of *Mendez* and *Fiesco*, without any advice of their arrival at *Hispaniola*; which made those, who continued with the admiral, despair of ever receiving any relief; and, while the mutineers under *Porras* were committing great ravages upon the *Indians* in the eastern part of the island, another mutiny was ready to break out among those who were with the admiral. But this was prevented by the arrival of a small caravel, sent by the governor of *Hispaniola*, only to see in what condition the admiral and his men were in: for the commander was ordered not to go on shore, and to return as soon as he had delivered a letter to the admiral, with a present of a cask of wine, and two fitches of bacon. The admiral told his men, the caravel was too small to carry them all together, and was returned for more assistance; which satisfied them, and brought them to their obedience. But *Porras* persisted in his revolt; though he was soon reduced by the adelantado, who marched against the rebels, defeated them, and took their leader prisoner; after which they all submitted.

THE

THE joy of the admiral for this success was increased by the arrival of a ship and caravel from *Hispaniola*, freighted by *James Mendez*, without any assistance from the governor; on board of which the admiral embarked, with all his people, on the 28th of *June*, 1504, and arrived at *St. Domingo*, on the 13th of *August*.

HE found the island in peace; but was informed of many cruelties which the *Spaniards* had committed on the *Indians*, before this tranquility ensued: particularly, by the barbarous murder of *Anacaona*, a woman of great authority; and many of her subordinate *caziques*, who were surrounded and burnt in one of their principal houses, as they were preparing an entertainment for the *Spaniards*. *Cotubanama*, the principal *cazique* in the island, was also taken prisoner, and hanged by the order of the governor, who had taken such precaution to suppress the *Indians*, that the admiral now found there were seventeen *Spanish* towns on the island; as also, that their Catholic majesties had granted liberty for the *Spaniards* to make slaves of the *Indians*, though they had formerly ordered that no violence should be offered to these now truly unhappy and miserable people.

THE governor paid the admiral all marks of external respect; but privately infringed upon his jurisdiction and authority, by releasing *Porras*, and threatening to punish those who had stood honourably by the admiral. But the admiral settled his affairs in the island, where he had a noble estate, and many valuable effects: after which, he set sail for *Europe*, on the 12th of *September*, and arrived safely at *St. Lucar*; from whence he went to the
court,

court, which was then at *Segovia* in old *Castile*. The king gave him all the appearance of a gracious reception: but the admiral soon had the mortification to perceive that all his services were neglected. His great patroness, queen *Isabella*, was dead: the courtiers envied him the wealth and honours he had acquired; while the king continued his old practice of amusing him with fair and delusive promises. The admiral presented several petitions, setting forth his great services and sufferings; as also desiring the performance of what had been promised him by their majesties: but the king was so far from having any intention to fulfil his engagements, that he caused his ministers to offer the admiral a large estate in *Spain*, in exchange for his possessions in the *Indies*. This gave the admiral such perplexity, that he complained of his injuries to the archbishop of *Seville*, and retired to *Valladolid*, where he died on the 20th of *May*, 1506, with all the resignation of a man, under a sense, that the most important services, attended by the most unexpected success, were thrown away upon an ingrateful nation.

THUS obscurely died the glorious *Christopher Columbus*, the discoverer of a new world; whose name will ever appear more illustrious among mankind, than the names of any of the heroes of antiquity; for their greatest glory was to form a city, or conquer a state; but *Columbus* paved the way for the conquest of a world, and the civilizing of nations. He in person discovered the *Bahama* islands; the great islands of *Cuba*, *Hispaniola*, and *Porto Rico*, with several of the *Caribbee* islands: he afterwards discovered a great part of the

the continent, and received some intelligence of the south sea. So that all those adventurers, who afterwards extended the discoveries of the *Spaniards*, only made improvements upon what the great *Columbus* had begun; though *Americus Vesputius* had the good fortune, and the great vanity, to have this great region called after his own name, to the manifest prejudice of the honour of the real discoverer. However, if *Columbus* had performed such a wonderful enterprize in the remoter ages, as the discovery of a new world, he would not only have had temples and statues erected to his honour; but, like *Hercules* and *Bacchus*, some star would have been dedicated to his memory, which had been held in as much veneration as their deities. His body was magnificently conveyed to the monastery of the carthusians at *Seville*, and from thence to the city of *St. Domingo* in *Hispaniola*, where it was honourably interred in the chancel of the cathedral: his Catholic majesty being so just to the memory of this excellent man, that he conferred many honours upon his family, and erected a beautiful monument in the cathedral of *Seville*, with an inscription to the following effect.

On Christopher Columbus, the first discoverer of America; who was born at Nervi, in the state of Genoa, and died in Spain, in 1506; being buried in the cathedral church of Seville.

COLUMBUS, born on the *Ligurian* soil,
 Inspir'd by Heav'n, first bore the seaman's toil,
 Advent'rous o'er the vast *Atlantic* main,
 To find another, richer world, for *Spain*:
 Success his labours crown'd; yet still remain'd
 Great deeds, by men as great, to be attain'd.

C H A P.

C H A P. V.

In what manner Americus Vesputius got the new world called America, after his own name, in prejudice to that of Columbus. How king Henry VIIth of England, employed John Cabot, and his son Sebastian, to make discoveries on the north coast of America. The discovery of Brasil, by the Portuguese. The expedition of Vasco Nunez de Bilboa, to the continent of America; and the discovery of the south sea. A short account of what was discovered by other adventurers; particularly, the passage of Ferdinand Magellan into the south sea, the first circumnavigation round the globe, and what other commanders also performed. With a representation of the different attempts to find out a north-east and north-west passage to America: as likewise, what parts of that country are now enjoyed by the different European powers.

THE enemies of Columbus, not satisfied with having given his Catholic majesty an ill opinion of his merit, soon after he had discovered the new world, prevailed upon him to invite *Americus Vesputius*, a Florentine, over from *Lisbon*, and to employ him in the same discoveries: but, though he made two voyages in the years 1497, and 1498, he neither improved, or enlarged upon the discoveries of *Columbus*. However, *Americus* was afterwards employed in the service of *Emanuel* king of *Portugal*, who, in *May*, 1501, sent him out with three ships from *Lisbon*; when he coasted along the continent of south *America*, from five to fifty-

fifty degrees of south latitude ; from whence the cold and tempestuous weather obliged him to return to *Portugal*, where he published his voyage ; and made known that there was a continent in the new world, little inferior to that of the old, for its dimensions, he was so happy as to give his name to the whole regions of this new country, which, from him, has ever since retained the name of *America* ; though he never attempted to make one settlement in it, either for the crowns of *Spain* or *Portugal* : while *Columbus*, who was the original discoverer of the continent, and who made such acquisitions among the islands for the *Spaniards*, had not the honour to have a single place nominated to his memory.

IN this manner, the great continent of *America* was discovered, within the space of about ten years, from 67 degrees of north to 52 degrees of south latitude. In the mean time the report of these great advantages accruing to *Spain*, from the discoveries made by *Columbus*, excited other princes to make some similar experiments, and particularly king *Henry* the VIIth of *England*, who had before declared his intentions of embarking in the enterprise. This prince had a *Venetian* in his dominions, whose name was *John Cabot*, of a bold enterprising genius, and of great experience in navigation : therefore, he resolved immediately to employ him, with a view of obtaining some share of the wealth of the new *Indies*, for the benefit of his own subjects. Accordingly, on the 5th of *March*, 1490, the king granted his letters patent to *John Cabot*, and his three sons, *Lewis*, *Sebastian*, and *Sancius*, for making discoveries in

any part of the world, possessed by heathens or infidels, and to get the possession of them under his title and jurisdiction, reserving a fifth part of the profits thereof to the crown. By virtue of this patent, *John Cabot*, and his son *Sebastian*, set sail from *Bristol*; and in *June*, 1497, discovered the island of *Newfoundland*, from whence they brought home three of the natives, and named a port there *Sancius Haven*. Upon the death of *John Cabot*, his son *Sebastian* was employed by king *Henry VIIIth*, to find out a passage to *China* and the *East Indies*, by the north-west: in consequence of which, he set sail from *England* in 1498, and proceeded as far as 58 degrees of north latitude; from whence he coasted it all the way to the southward, along the continent of north *America*, as high as *Florida*, where his provisions fell short, and obliged him to return to *England*. The commotions between the *English* and the *Scotch*, postponed the further prosecution of these discoveries: upon which, *Sebastian Cabot* went to *Spain*, where he was made chief pilot of the kingdom, and was highly carested, to prevent his engaging with any other court; though he received an annuity of 166 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.* from the king of *England*, as a reward for his services; because he was justly reputed the first discoverer of the continent in those parts.

PETER ALVAREZ CAPRALIS, an admiral in the service of *Emanuel*, king of *Portugal*, was sent with a fleet to the *East Indies*; but was carried by a storm on the coast of *Brazil*, which he first discovered, and which has since proved of infinite benefit to his nation. From whence it is natural to believe, that if *Columbus* had not expressly
gone

gone in search of the new world eight years before, a passage to it would now have been opened by means of this accidental discovery.

THE *Pinzons*, and others, who had accompanied the admiral *Columbus* in his voyages, also made some further discoveries at their own expence, by virtue of commissions given them by king *Ferdinand*, who gave little encouragement to *Columbus*; because he was jealous of the authority which that great man had acquired, on account of the agreement made with him, when he first failed in search of the *Indies*: which appears the more probable, from the conduct of the king, after the death of the admiral; for his majesty then readily granted commissions for new discoveries, and treated all such as made them very favourably. But, after the death of *Columbus*, there were two causes which principally prevented the progress that might otherwise have been expected in these parts from the diligence of the *Spaniards*. The first was, the avarice of the *Spanish* government, which calculated the worth of adventures barely by such returns of wealth as they sent into *Spain*; whereby they were induced to act so rapaciously, as frequently to hazard, for the sake of a little gold, the possession of whole countries full of commodities of great value. And the second cause was, the distance the *Spaniards* were at from their own country, and the necessity there was of trusting several commanders with independent commissions: which not only occasioned several mutinies, but inspired the *Spanish* officers with such a spirit of cruelty against the native *Indians*, as tended to the depopulating of those well inhabited countries, and

rendered them far less beneficial than they otherwise would have been to the barbarous invaders.

COLUMBUS died in a full conviction, that what he had discovered on the coast of *Darien*, was the same continent with the *East-Indies*: for the natives confirmed him in his mistakes, by their reports; because, whatever questions he asked, they answered in the affirmative, from a mean desire of flattering their new masters. But, when the admiral was dead, the succeeding adventurers were led by chance, or reports, never pretending to make discoveries by rule or reason; which sometimes was attended with happy consequences; and at others, drew them into great inconveniencies; for, being ignorant in what manner to proportion their forces to the exploits upon which they went, the *Spanish* commanders frequently lost the greatest part of their men by war and sickness; so that they were sometimes brought to ruin, instead of making any acquisitions either of wealth or territory.

VASCO NUNEZ de BILBOA, was the next considerable discoverer, being a man of great parts, and high spirit. He made an entire conquest of *Cuba*, and found it to be an island: after which, he sailed to the river of *Darien*, on the isthmus of *America*, where *Columbus* had ineffectually attempted to make a settlement. *Nunez* erected a fort, and built a town, which he called *Santa Maria del Antigua*, or *Old St. Mary's*: he also cultivated a friendship with the caziques, or *Indian* princes; and, by the advice of one of them, undertook a very troublesome march through the mountains that run along the middle of the isthmus, parallel to the north and south seas. After travelling

travelling 25 days, on the 25th of *September*, 1513, he discovered the *South Seas*, which no *European* had ever seen before, and received an imperfect account of the great empire of *Peru*; which opened a new field for discoveries; being in itself a much greater exploit than any of his countrymen had yet undertaken. But the *Indians*, who raised his hopes by reporting prodigious things of the wealth of the great kingdom, as they called it; at the same time, greatly embarrassed him by positively asserting, that the inhabitants of this country were a numerous and warlike people; and that it was in vain for him to think of the conquest of that country, with the handful of men under his command.

UPON this information, *Nunez* resolved to attempt nothing, till such time as he received a commission and a reinforcement from *Spain*: but *Peter Arias* was sent over as governor by king *Ferdinand*, who also appointed *Nunez* adelantado, or lieutenant of the *South Seas*. This naturally produced bad consequences, as *Nunez* and *Arias* were always at variance: though they came to a reconciliation, and *Nunez* was sent with three hundred men to make discoveries in the *South Seas*; who settled in that part of the country where *Panama* was afterwards built. The confidence the *Spaniards* had in the conduct of this commander, occasioned every thing to go on very cheerfully, and great expectations were formed from the success of his enterprize, when he was suddenly recalled to *Darien*, where he was brought to a formal trial, upon a charge of treasonable expressions, supported by false witnesses, whose perjury gave *Arias* a colour for striking off the head of his rival; though,

at the same time, he blasted the hopes, and broke the spirits of his people.

PORTO RICO was discovered by *Columbus*, but it was not settled till 1509; when *John Ponce de Leon* caused it to be inhabited by a colony of *Spaniards*; and, in 1512, sailed upon new discoveries to the continent, where he went on shore, took possession of a large tract, and called it *Florida*. However, he was no more than a bare discoverer, or at most he took but a nominal possession of the country: for the natives obliged him to reembark his forces, and return to *Porto Rico*, without being able to make any settlement upon the continent.

NOR was *Ferdinand de Soto*, who undertook the conquest of *Florida* several years afterwards, more successful, though he had a much superior force: but the *Spaniards* were not fond of planting colonies upon this part of the continent, leaving it to the *English* and *French*; the former beginning their settlements in 1584, under the direction of *Sir Walter Raleigh*; and the latter, in 1534, first appeared upon these coasts, under the command of *James Cartier* of *St. Malo*, who first discovered the river of *St. Laurence*.

FERDINAND CORTEZ, who was born at *Medellin*, a small town of *Estramadura* in *Spain*, in 1485, was the most illustrious person of all the adventurers, who succeeded the admiral *Columbus*; and distinguished himself most in *America*, by the reduction of the great empire of *Mexico*, which he began in 1518, and completed in 1521.

IN 1525, *Francis Pizarro*, and *Diego de Almagro*, undertook the conquest of *Peru*, which they accomplished in 1532.

AND,

AND, in 1540, Don *Baldivia*, entered upon the conquest of *Chili*, in which he partly succeeded, but was unable to get possession of the whole.

THUS it may be seen how *Columbus* first thought the design of discovering a new world was practicable, and how he happily made the discovery; after this opinion, for many centuries, had been maintained by some learned men, and exploded by others. *Nunez* afterwards obtained a knowledge of the *South Seas*, or of a sea to the south of the new discovered continent; and a passage was soon after made into that sea by *Ferdinand de Magallanes*, who is generally called *Magellan*, and *Ruy Falero*, both natives of *Portugal*, and men of very great experience in the art of navigation.

FROM the time of the discoveries made under the commissions granted by their Catholic majesties, the *Portuguese* grew extremely jealous of their possessions in the *East-Indies*; till the pope interposed, and by a bull, which then had a decisive authority among princes of his own communion, decreed all countries discovered in the east to *Portugal*, and all such as were found in the west to *Spain*. But this rather smothered, than extinguished the flames of contention; both powers continuing to give the greatest regard to any such propositions, as tended to the aggrandizement of the one, at the expence of the other; which encouraged such enterprising men, as were not gratified at one court, to make immediate applications to the other; though it is not easy to be determined, whether this was a greater advantage to their princes in particular, or an advantage to *Europe* in general.

THE court of *Portugal* disgusted both *Magellan* and *Falero*, on a very trivial account ; upon which, they retired to *Spain*, and made propositions of new discoveries to cardinal *Ximenes*, then archbishop of *Toledo*, and governor of *Spain*, upon the death of king *Ferdinand* ; who gave them all proper encouragement ; notwithstanding the *Portuguese* ministry used their utmost endeavours to depreciate the characters and merit of those men whom they had neglected in their own country.

THE position which *Columbus* had laid down, of the possibility of arriving at the *East-Indies*, by sailing west, was certainly true, though he had not proved it by demonstration : but this was the foundation upon which *Magellan* formed his design. He knew it was very possible to sail from the *South Seas*, which had been then discovered, to the *Molucca* islands ; and that it was very probable, a passage might be found into those seas, through the *Rio de la Plata*, or some other opening upon that coast : therefore, if such a discovery could be effected, it would fall expressly under the words of the papal bull, as it would be made from the west ; whereby *Spain* might reap the profit of both *Indies*.

IN consequence of these proposals, it was agreed, that the undertakers should have the twentieth part of the clear profits : that the government of any islands they should discover, should belong to them and their heirs for ever, with the title of adelantados : and that the crown should furnish them with five ships, and two hundred and thirty-four men, with provisions for two years.

THE fleet sailed from *Seville*, on the 10th of *August*, 1519, under the sole command of *Ferdinand Magellan*, who arrived on the coast of *Brazil*, and proceeded southwards; carefully examining all the rivers and bays he could discover: but, being harrassed with continual storms, the sailors grew very uneasy; and his officers, when they perceived that *Magellan* intended to proceed towards the antarctic pole, remonstrated against what they took to be a romantic proceeding. On this occasion, *Magellan* imitated the example of *Columbus*; shewing himself both a brave and skilful officer. He called all his people together, to whom he addressed himself in a long and spirited speech; insisting much on the bravery of the *Spanish* nation, as also on the great advantages which would accrue from their going through with this undertaking. By this means he acquired great popularity, and authority sufficient to punish some of the mutineers with remarkable severity: after which, he proceeded on his enterprize, suffering incredible hardships till the beginning of *November*, when he arrived in fifty-two degrees of south latitude, and discovered those streights, which have been since called by his name, and will perpetuate his fame with the memory of *Columbus*. Through these streights *Magellan* came into the *South Seas*, on the 27th of *November*; and continued his course, for three months and twenty days, through this vast ocean towards the *Moluccas*: but, in his passage, he discovered the *Philippines*, and landed on the island of *Cebu*, where he met with a friendly reception by a pagan prince, whom he converted to christianity: though, by endeavouring to reduce the whole island to the obedience of that prince,

prince, *Magellan* was unfortunately killed, in a battle, on the 27th of *April*, 1521. The death of this great man was of bad consequence to his people; who assumed a power of appointing and deposing their commanders, which brought most of them to destruction. However, *John Sebastian del Cano*, who commanded one of the ships called the *Victory*, happily conducted that vessel, with about thirty-five men on board, safe to the port of *St. Lucar*, on the 6th of *September*, 1522; having spent three years, and twenty-seven days, in this circumnavigation of the globe; being the first who performed so extensive a voyage; which now fully demonstrated the folly of those persons who held the opinion of the antipodes, as fictitious and heretical.

THE valuable cargo of spices brought home by the *Victory*, and a prospect of carrying on a most beneficial trade to the *Indies*, by this new route, engaged the *Spanish* government to send *Garcia de Lovisa*, with seven ships, and 450 men, to acquire a more perfect knowledge of these streights; which he had the good fortune to pass; though it proved a most unfortunate voyage; for, by one accident or other, all the ships were either stopped in *America*, or lost in the *Moluccas*. *Sebastian Cabot*, and *Americus Vesputius*, were neither of them able to discover the streights of *Magellan*; though they were both employed for that purpose by the king of *Portugal*. Many other misfortunes also happened in the prosecution of the same design; so that it was neglected, till 1578, when *Sir Francis Drake* happily passed these streights, and furrounded the world; in which he was followed by several others at different times; particularly, by *Sir Thomas Cavendish*

Cavendish in 1586, by Sir *Richard Hawkins* in 1593, by *Oliver Van Noort* in 1599, by *George Spilbergen* in 1615, and in 1616 by *William Cornelius Van Schoton*. This last adventurer had *James le Maire* on board his ship, whose name was given to a new strait, that they discovered on the 10th of *January*, 1616: since which time the straits of *Magellan* have not been so much frequented; because the straits *Le Maire* are found much the safer of the two; and, therefore, lord *Anson* passed through them, on the 7th of *March*, 1741, when he made his remarkable expedition into the *South Seas*, and round the world, which he performed in three years and nine months. But the circum-navigation of the globe was also performed by captain *Dampier* in 1683; by captain *Woodes Rogers* in 1708; by captain *Clipperton*, and captain *Shelvocke*, in 1719; and by commodore *Roggewein* in 1721.

IF the discovery of *America* had not been made, the trade to the *East-Indies* must have eat up, and destroyed the people of *Europe* in general: for, whatever may be gained by the *European* powers, it is an incontrovertible point, that immense sums, in silver, are annually sent from *Europe* to the *East-Indies*, to make up the ballance of trade in favour of the latter. Upon this account, it was projected to make a discovery, by a north-east, or north-west passage, to *India* and *America*: for it was then esteemed, as ungenerous, and dishonourable, to encroach upon, or supplant, any other nation in trade, to take the advantage of their discoveries.

THE many attempts that have been made to find out a north-east passage to *Japan* and *China*, sufficiently prove, that the trading nations of *Europe*
are

are fully sensible of the many advantages that would necessarily result from such a discovery : because ships are now obliged to go round the *Cape of Good Hope* ; or, which is still a larger navigation, by the streights of *Magellan*, those of *Le Maire*, or round *Cape Horn* : but, if this north-east passage could be made, they might then pass by the coast of *Russia*, and *Great Tartary*, into the sea of *Japan*, in little more than a three-months voyage. Besides, such a discovery would change the very nature of the *East-India* trade, by bringing the ballance over to *Europe* ; for *Europeans* might then hope to gain as much, by cloathing the inhabitants of the northern countries, as would ballance their commerce with those in other parts. The first northern discoveries were made at the charge of a company of *English* merchants, incorporated in the reign of *Edward VIth*, and called, *The merchant adventurers for discovering lands unknown* : who employed *Sir Hugh Willoughby*, in 1553, to make the first attempt ; but himself, and all his company, were frozen to death, at the mouth of the river *Arsina* in *Lapland* ; where they retired for safety from the ice, after having advanced as far as 72 degrees of north latitude.

THE *English* company still persisted in their endeavours to discover a north-east passage ; and, in 1556, fitted out a ship under the command of captain *Burroughs* ; who discovered *Nova Zembla*, and the streights of *Weigatz*, or *Waigats*, which divide *Nova Zembla* from the continent of *Russia*. Captain *Burroughs* was of opinion, that the gulph on the east of that streight was a free and open sea : which occasioned a third voyage, in 1580, by captain *Pett*,
and

and captain *Jackman* : but they were both unsuccessful, and the former was lost in his return home ; whereby the *English* company were discouraged from pursuing such a discovery to the north-east : though the *Dutch*, and some private *English* adventurers, afterwards attempted it, when the former shook off the *Spanish* yoke, and were desirous of establishing a trade to the *East-Indies* : however, they were unable to find out this passage ; notwithstanding captain *Barents*, and captain *Ryp*, failed as far as 80 degrees, and discovered *Spitzbergen*, or *Greenland*. The difficulty in making a north-east passage to *America*, appears to be either in sailing through the streights of *Weigatz*, or round *Nova Zembla*, or more northwards round *Greenland* : but the *Russians* seem confident of making such a discovery, by the sea of *Tartary*, which will enable them to trade with more facility to *Japan*, *China*, and the *East-Indies*, as also to *America*.

WHEN this passage, by the north-east, was declined in *England*, some experienced navigators turned their thoughts to the north-west part of *America* ; where there seemed a greater probability of obtaining a passage ; because the difficulties would be less ; and the distance no way so great between *Hudson's Bay*, or *Davis's Streights*, and the north coast of *America*, above *California*, as between *Nova Zembla*, and the supposed streights of *Anian*, near *Japan*.

THERE are several arguments urged, not only to prove the probability, but even the reality of a north-west passage into the *South Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*. For it is thought probable, there must be a free communication of the waters at the pole ;
because,

because, if it was otherwise, it would be difficult to apprehend how the equilibrium of land and water is maintained; or that regularity which is observed in the tides, where the shores are not covered by islands, rocks, or broken lands. Besides, if there was no such passage, there would be much greater changes in the tides towards the pole; as is seen in the *Mediterranean*, and *Baltic*, which are close seas, and therefore differ from the ocean; there being a sensible tide only in some parts of the former, and none at all in the latter: but the tides are high, and very regular, in the most northern seas; which give the strongest probability, that there must be some passage, or communication, with the rest of the ocean. And this argument has the greater force, when confined to *Hudson's Bay*, where there are such irregular tides, in some places, as seem to indicate a greater reception of water into that bay, than comes from *Hudson's Straights*, or any other known passage, into the bay: but, from the nature and height of these tides, as also from the situation of the places where they are observed, it seems almost indisputable that they come by the west, either through some large and practicable passage, or through some icy and impassable channel: the former being the opinion of Mr. *Dobbs*; and the latter having been asserted by captain *Middleton*. Indeed, from the discoveries already made on the north-west coasts of *America*, the general opinion of a passage is so strong and prevalent, that in the charter granted to the *Hudson's Bay* company, which invests them with very extensive privileges, such as a power of making peace or war, raising troops, and the sovereignty of the lands they should discover,

cover, not possessed by any christian power; it is recited, as a chief motive for the grant, that they should use all means for the discovery of such a passage; to the success of which, it was supposed, that their settlement and trade in *Hudson's Bay*, would greatly contribute: but it is now more reasonable to imagine, that the company, who monopolize the rich fur trade to themselves, would be very unwilling to suffer any great diminution of such a private beneficial branch of commerce; which will certainly be the case, if such a discovery be happily effected.

SIR *Martin Forbisher* was the first person that attempted to find out a north-west passage into *America*; who, in 1576 and 1578, made several new discoveries of large bays, streights, islands, and capes; to which he gave different names, and took possession of the land in the name of queen *Elizabeth*, calling it, *Meta incognita*. He was followed by Sir *Humphrey Gilbert*, in 1582; by captain *John Davis*, in 1585 and 1586, who sailed as high as 72 deg. 12 min. of north latitude; by captain *Henry Hudson*, in 1610, who proceeded 100 leagues farther than any had done before, and gave several names to many places, besides the streights and bays that still bear his own name; by Sir *Thomas Button*, in 1611, who searched out the whole bay known by his name, and discovered a large continent, which he called, *New Wales*; by captain *William Baffin*, in 1612 and 1616; as also by several others, and particularly by captain *James*, in 1631, who published an account of his discoveries, by the special command of king *Charles Ist*, and declared he was of opinion, that no passage could be found by
the

the north-west; or that, if it was, it would prove of very little advantage.

HOWEVER, some public-spirited gentlemen, from close observations, still retained the opinion, that this passage was practicable, and to be discovered: but no one has distinguished himself so much in this affair, as *Arthur Dobbs*, Esq; the present governor of *North Carolina*; who, in 1730, drew up his reasons for maintaining this opinion, and pointed out the many advantages which must arise to *Great-Britain*, from such a discovery. After several difficulties, his *Britannic* majesty was pleased to approve of the scheme communicated by Mr. *Dobbs*; and, in 1741, two vessels were sent out on this expedition, under the command of captain *Middleton*, who had been several years in the service of the *Hudson's Bay* company: but, after proceeding to 66 deg. 44 min. of N. latitude, he returned without making any discovery.

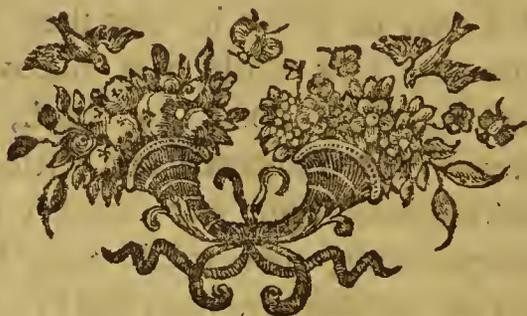
THE principal reasons which induced Mr. *Dobbs* to think there was a passage about the *Welcome*, on the north-west part of *Hudson's Bay*, near the latitude of 64 degrees, were, 1st. That, by all accounts, the coast in those parts was broken land, or islands, with large openings between them. 2d. That there were strong tides from the west and north-west; also that large black whales were seen there in plenty, which must come from some western ocean, none of those animals being found in any other part of the *Bay*. Mr. *Dobbs* had still strong reasons to persist in this opinion, notwithstanding the unsuccessful expedition made by captain *Middleton*; and, the probability of the passage being grounded on such proofs, application was made

made to the parliament, to have the discovery encouraged by a reward from the public. Accordingly, a law passed for that purpose, in 1744; the preamble of which recited, that the discovering a north-west passage through *Hudson's Streight*, to the western *American* ocean, would be of great benefit and advantage to the kingdom; and that it would be a great encouragement for adventurers to attempt the same, if a public reward was given to such persons as should make a perfect discovery of the said passage. It was therefore enacted, "That if any ships or vessels, belonging to his majesty's subjects, should find out, and fall through, any passage by sea, between *Hudson's Bay* and the western ocean of *America*, the owners of such ships, or vessels, should be intitled to receive, as a reward for such discoveries, the sum of twenty thousand pounds."

THUS it may be seen, in how short a space of time, after the new world was discovered, the whole of it, from north to south, was not only surveyed, but conquered and settled; whereby great improvements were made; though, it is highly probable, they would have been much greater, if the noblest provinces had fallen into any other hands but the *Spaniards*, whose indolence has been adequate to their pride, and their cruelty to their avarice.

HOWEVER, great parts of *America* are now under the dominion of other *European* powers, who would not stand idle spectators of the acquisitions and conquests made by the *Spaniards*, without endeavouring to obtain some share in the new discovered countries. The *Portuguese* fell upon the southern, and the *English* upon the northern parts of *America*;

by which the former got possession of *Brasil*; while the latter made themselves masters of *Virginia*, *Maryland*, *Carolina*, and other provinces on the continent; as also of *Jamaica*, *Barbadoes*, *Antigua*, *Bermudas*, *Newfoundland*, and other islands. The *French* obtained a great tract of land along the river *Canada*, and some islands: the *Dutch* secured to themselves a good settlement at *Curassow*, as also at *Surinam* in south *America*: and the *Danes* took possession of one of the *Caribbee* islands.



Spanish

Spanish AMERICA.

PART II.

STANFORD UNIVERSITY

LIBRARY



A
NEW HISTORY
OF
AMERICA.

PART II.

CHAP. I.

The DESCRIPTION of CHILL.

SECTION I.

The general division of AMERICA: with an account of the possessions belonging to the SPANIARDS, and in what manner their provinces are governed.

THIS new and extensive world, is variously divided by geographers, but generally into continent and islands: though the former is commonly subdivided into north and south *America*; which, sometimes, are distinguished by the particular names of *Mexico* and *Peru*: for these two large territories

ries are almost cut asunder by the sea, on the eastern and western side; being only joined by the isthmus of *Darien*, about 54 miles broad; which separates the north and south seas, by a line drawn across the isthmus from *Porto Bello* to *Panama*; the one town lying in 9 degrees, 39 minutes; and the other in 9 degrees, of north latitude: so that these two continents, being subdivided into their several kingdoms, districts, or provinces; south *America* contains the eight provinces of *Terra Firma*, *Peru*, the land of the *Amazons*, *Brasil*, *Chili*, *Paraguay*, *Terra Magellanica*, and *Terra Antartica*, or *Terra Australis Incognita*. And north *America* comprehends the five provinces of *Mexico*, or new *Spain*, new *Mexico*, or *Granada*, *Florida*, *Canada*, and *Terra Arctica*.

THE *American* islands are commonly divided into northern, middlemost, and southern. The chief northern islands are *Newfoundland*, *Cape Breton*, and some others of inferior note. The middlemost are called by the general name of *Antilles*; which are divided into the greater or lesser: *Cuba*, *Jamaica*, *Hispaniola*, and *Porto Rico*, being among the former; and those called the *Caribbees*, the *Lucayes*, *Sotto Vento*, and *Bermudas*, being among the latter.

UPON the discovery of *America*, the *Spaniards* possessed themselves of the most extensive parts, and which abounded most in opulence: from whence they have annually derived such immense treasures, that it may well be said, the kingdom of old *Spain* is entirely dependent on new *Spain*, for the support of her finances; so as to owe all her former grandeur, and her present existence, to the *American* colonies.

THE

THE Spaniards have all south *America* on the continent, except *Brasil* on the western ocean, which belongs to the *Portuguese*; and also, except some parts either of *Chili*, or in the *Magellanic* land, and on the isthmus of *Darien*, whose inhabitants they have not yet been able to bring under their subjection; on which account, they call them *Indios Bravos*, or brave *Indians*: to which may be added, the great country of the *Amazons*, and almost the whole country of *Guiana*, where the *French* and *Dutch* have some settlements; but where the *Spaniards* have no considerable possessions.

SPAIN is also in possession of the richest and best part of north *America*, as far as *Mississippi*, *California*, and *Florida*: besides which, they have the islands of *Cuba*, *Porto Rico*, the south part of *Hispaniola*, and some others of less consideration.

BUT the *Spaniards* give the general name of *Peruviana* to all their possessions in south *America*, where the several provinces are all under one governor, whose residence is at *Lima*, and whose title is that of vice-roy and captain-general of *Peru*. However, some distinction has been made between these two offices; because the commissions, salaries, and powers of both are different, though invested in the same person: yet, in *Mexico*, there are sometimes a vice-roy, and a distinct captain-general.

As it appears almost an impossibility for one man to govern territories of such great extent, and so far from each other, the vice-roy of *Peru* has his government divided into the several districts of *Peru*, *Chili*, *Terra Firma*, and *La Plata*, or *Paraguay*: so that the vice-roy only enjoys a

pre-eminence, with a reservation of some cases in appeal, and the supreme direction of military affairs; for, in other respects, the governors of the other districts seem independent of his authority.

THE government is divided into several audiences, which are somewhat similar to the present parliaments of *France*; each of them consisting of a certain number of judges, appointed by his Catholic majesty, with officers dependent upon them; and the whole is under the direction of a president, who is supreme throughout his jurisdiction. Every audience is divided into four chambers, or royal courts: the first is called the *Chamber of Justice*, where all things are transacted relating to the administration of public affairs: the next is the *Criminal Court*: the third is a kind of *Royal Exchequer*, for the management of all matters concerning the revenue: and the last is stiled the *Chamber of Treasure*, or *Court of Aids*, which takes care of the royal funds, and whatever property appertains to the crown; because the exchequer manages only the rents, duties, fines, and the current revenue.

THE vice-roy, and the presidents, are usually constituted for seven years; and the governors of some places of importance for five years: but the far greater part of the governors enjoy their authority only for three years, and owe their preferment entirely to the will and pleasure of the vice-roys. The settled appointment of the vice-roy is forty thousand pieces of eight, or about seven thousand one hundred and fifty four pounds sterling a year; exclusive of occasional salaries and perquisites; the former of which amount to double that sum, and the

the latter exceed all computation. But when this high office is vacant, either by death or dismissal, the government is administered by the royal audience, which is that of *Lima*.

S E C T I O N II.

Containing a description of the audience of Chili; with its boundaries, the face of the country, the seasons, airs, and climate. An account of the Andes, or Cordillera mountains; with their phænomenas, vulcanoes, springs, lakes, and rivers. And also, a short account of the Chilefian Indians; their persons, customs, and government.

THOUGH *Mexico* was conquered in 1521, by *Cortez*, and *Peru* was reduced in 1532, by *Pizarro*; both of which were before the time that *Baldivia* made any settlement in *Chili*; it will be more eligible to trace the *Spanish* territories in *America*, according as they geographically appear upon the face of the maps, than to adhere to the method and time of conquest, which would necessarily bring confusion upon the face of the history: therefore, it will be proper to begin with the province of *Chili*, which extends to the most southern part of the continent; and so proceed down to the northern provinces, as far as *Florida*.

SOME writers, particularly *Ovalle*, extend this country southwards, as far as the streight of *Magellan*; and some of them also include the whole island of *Terra del Fogo*, as also part of *Patagonia*, in this district, making it run from 26 to 57 degrees

degrees of south latitude ; but its real bounds are far from being so extensive : for the proper division of *Chili*, lies along the coast of the *South Sea*, between 26 and 45 degrees of south latitude, and between 47 and 54 degrees of west longitude : being bounded by *Peru* on the north, by the province of *La Plata* on the east, by *Patagonia* on the south, and by the *Pacific Ocean* on the west : so that it is about twelve hundred miles long, and six hundred broad in some places ; for though the country, which is properly called *Chili*, is not above sixty or ninety miles from the sea, to the great chain of mountains called, by the *Spaniards*, *Cordillera*, or *Sierra Nevada de los Andes* ; yet his Catholic majesty, in the division of the bounds of the several governments of *America*, added to *Chili* the large plains of *Cuyo* or *Chicuito*, which extend, on the other side of the mountains, the whole length of *Chili*, and are above twice as broad.

THE face of this country is beautiful, and the climate very temperate. The coast is a high bold shore, and the interior part of the country abounds with hills ; but above them all, are the *Andes*, which are the highest mountains in the known world, extending the whole length of south *America*, through the countries of *Peru* and *Chili*, parallel to, and at a little distance from the *Pacific Ocean* ; being covered with snow in the warmest climate, and from thence called the *Sierras Nevada*, or *snowy mountains*.

As this country lies to the south of the equator, the seasons here are almost opposite to those in the northern parts of the hemisphere : for the spring in *Chili*, begins about the middle of *August*, and
continues

continues to the middle of *November*; when the summer begins, which lasts to the middle of *February*: then the autumn follows, and holds to the middle of *May*; being succeeded by winter, which bares all the trees of their leaves, and covers the earth with white frost. There is little snow in the vallies, or low ground: but such great quantities fall upon the mountains, as sometimes to fill up all the hollow places to a great height; from whence it afterwards streams out, or supplies many springs and rivers, which give such fertility to the plains and vallies, as to make them produce infinite crops of all sorts in their proper seasons.

THE air is very temperate in summer; though it lies so near the torrid zone: for it is covered on the east by the *Andes*, which are all prodigiously elevated: while, on the west, it receives the fresh and cooling breezes from the sea. Besides, the tides greatly contribute towards refreshing the air; because they penetrate as far as the foot of the mountains: so that neither the heat, in summer, is intense; nor the cold, in winter, severe; especially from about the 34th degree: for which reason, the inhabitants of the city of *Conception*, who lie in that situation, have the same covering for their beds both in winter and summer. But, in some other parts, it is as cold as most places in *Europe*; which proceeds chiefly from some of the neighbouring mountains, that send out such sharp and piercing winds, as are sometimes intolerable: therefore, the sea-coast is more temperate and mild; though more exposed to vehement storms than the inland parts, because the storms are almost spent before they arrive far up the country. Thunder is sometimes heard;

heard ; but it is at so great a distance, up in the mountains, that the country is free from lightening. There is no hail in spring or summer ; nor are there so many cloudy days in winter as in other parts ; but generally, after the rain has continued two or three days, the sky clears up with great serenity : for, as soon as the north-wind ceases, the south-wind succeeds, and in a few hours drives away the rain : or, if it happens during the night, the dew falls, and the sun rises with additional lustre. Some trees lose their leaves in winter, and others preserve a perennial verdure : for, though they are covered with ice and snow, the cold is so far from injuring them, that, when the sun dissolves the frost, they look more green and beautiful.

THE country of *Chili* has still another advantage, which consists in its being free from poisonous creatures ; such as vipers, snakes, scorpions, and toads : nor are there any tygers, panthers, or other rapacious animals, except some lions of a small kind, which sometimes prey upon flocks of sheep, or herds of goats ; but always shun the appearance of men, not only in cultivated lands, but in woods and solitudes.

ALL this must be understood of the countries which lie to the west of the *Andes* : for what is beyond those mountains, as the land of *Cuyo*, *Tucuman*, and *Buenos Ayres*, though situated in the same latitude with *Chili*, are very different from it in climate. In those parts it freezes with such severity, that the cattle will perish with cold, if they are left abroad. There is no rain all the winter ; for the sun shines so bright, and clear, that no cloud is to be seen : but, there is such abundance of rain in the spring,
that

that it would overflow the whole country, if it was to continue as long as in *Cbili* : at which time, some thunder-stones fall, as also hail-stones of an incredible size, according to the *Spanish* writers, particularly *Ovalle*, who asserts that he has seen some of them as big as the eggs of ostriches ; though, if he had contented himself with a much smaller dimension, he would have obtained much greater credit. All these storms, and varieties of weather, form themselves in the high mountains, which are a kind of wall to the province of *Cbili* ; and they never come so far down as to invade its territories, but stop at them as at a barricado : for, in *Cbili*, the weather is always constant, without sudden alterations all the spring, summer, and autumn ; though, in winter, there are degrees of heat and cold, as there is a difference in the length or shortness of the days, according to the degrees of the latitude, and course of the sun, which causes the same variation as in *Europe*, except that it is in opposite months : from whence, *Ovalle* says, there must be a great resemblance between the animals and other productions of *Cbili*, and those of *Europe* ; as also, that there is little difference between their climates and soils. Therefore, he concludes, it is very remarkable, that, in such variety of discoveries made in *America*, none is so conformable in every thing with the *European* constitution, as this tract of *Cbili* : for, in most of the places between the tropics, as *Brasil*, *Carthagena*, *Panama*, *Porto-Bello*, and those coasts in that situation, the heats are not only violent, but continue all the year : and, in some other places, such as *Potosi*, and the mountains of *Peru*, the cold is as excessive : in some . . . they

they have a winter without rain, and have their rain in summer when the heat is greatest; others have neither wine, oil, or wheat, of their own product; or, if there are some who have these productions, they are incapable of bearing the other fruits of *Europe*: but *Cbili* has its four periodical seasons of spring, summer, autumn, and winter, like *Europe*; and the product of *Europe* agrees with the soil of *Cbili*.

THE heavens and stars of *Cbili* are remarkable for their clearness and beauty. If the stars of the arctic pole, appear with more magnitude than those of the antarctic; yet, as to their splendor, their numbers, the light they afford, and the purity of the heavens where they are, the advantage is on the side of the antarctic; which is owing to the temperature of the climate: for, as the country of *Cbili* inclines to dryness, rather than humidity, the sun raises few vapours; therefore, the air is clearer, and the brightness of the stars more conspicuous. This also occasions the sun to rise and set in so glorious and resplendent a manner; though, on the other side of the *Andes*, the radiant beauty of its beams are clouded and enfeebled by the vapours of the earth. But the experience of this is still more admirable to those who sail from *Peru* for *Cbili*; who are immediately sensible when they come to the height of *Cbili*, by the azure beauty of the horizon, which they perceive disengaged from clouds, gilded and glorious; with its lustre increasing upon them every day, as they gain more height towards the pole. Though, on the contrary, when they sail for the line, from *Cbili*, the nearer they approach to the tropic, that light and splendor grows duller and weaker.

PETER

PETER THEODORE, a skilful navigator, and a judicious astronomer, says, there are fourteen constellations in the hemisphere of *Cbili*: the *Cameleon*, containing ten stars; the *Indian Aspic*, four; the *Flying Fish*, seven; the *Dorado Fish*, five; the *Hydra*, fifteen; the *Toncan*, eight; the *Phœnix*, fourteen; the *Crane*, thirteen; *Noab's Dove*, eleven; the *Indian Sagittary*, twelve; the *Peacock*, eleven; the *Bird of Paradise*, or *Maucodiata*, twelve; the *Triangle*, five; and the *Cruzero*, four. The *Cruzero* is the guide for mariners who sail into the *South-Sea*; as the *Cynofura* is to those who navigate the north sea; but it is thirty degrees from the pole: for, as there are no stars of that magnitude near the pole, the *Cruzero* is made use of for that effect, though not for the needle; because, *Ovalle* says, the needle in either sea, whether south or north latitude, always turns to the north; notwithstanding, when mariners are in the *South Sea*, the whole globe of the earth, or much the greatest part of it, is between them and the north, according to the circle made by the *Cruzero*.

THE *Andes*, or *Cordillera* of *Cbili*, are one of the greatest prodigies of nature; being a chain of high mountains, about four thousand five hundred miles long, and one hundred and twenty miles broad; with many intermediate vallies, which are habitable as far as the tropics, but not beyond them, because of the perpetual snows with which they are always covered. The ascent is so prodigious, that three or four days must be spent in arriving to the top of them, and as many more in the descent; that is, what may be properly called, from and to the bottom of the mountain; for, otherwise, it may
be

be affirmed, that passengers begin to mount even from the sea-side ; because the whole way is one extended shelving coast ; on which account, the rivers run with such impetuosity, that their streams are like mill-streams, especially near their sources.

ANTONIO de HERRERA says, there are two chains of mountains in the *Andes* ; one being much lower than the other, covered with stately woods and beautiful groves ; which is owing to the fine temperature of the air : but the cold is so severe upon the higher, that the mountains are bare even of bushes, without grass, or any kind of plant upon them ; though there are several animals on both mountains. The *Incas* of *Peru* caused two grand highways to be cut through the *Andes* ; one of them 2700 miles in length from *Posto* to *Chili*, and twenty-five feet broad ; being well paved, and having noble buildings at the distance of every twelve miles ; some of which are still existing ; for there are places, called *Tambos*, somewhat like *European* inns, where every thing necessary is to be found by travellers. The other way went by the plain, at the foot of the mountains ; being also twenty-five feet broad, with the same proportion of buildings ; having streams and rivulets, brought there by art, for the refreshment and recreation of travellers. But these two highways are united when they come near to *Chili*, where there are nothing but continual mountains, serving for walls and fortifications, on each side, to one which rises in the middle infinitely higher than the rest, and is, properly called, the *Cordillera*.

WHEN travellers ascend the highest point of the mountains, they feel so piercing and subtile an air,
that

that it is with much difficulty they can breathe. *Herrera* observes, that those who pass the *Andes* in *Peru*, are greatly afflicted with vomitings: but *Ovalle* asserts, it is otherwise about *Chili*; where travellers are never troubled with vomitings: though, he says, they go through these mountains as if they were treading upon clouds; sometimes seeing the vallies without any opposition to their sight; and, when they look up, being unable to see the heavens for clouds: but, as soon as they are ascended to the highest part of the mountain, they can no longer perceive the earth for the clouds beneath them; the heavens being one clear and unclouded expanse, through which the sun darts out his glorious effulgence.

THE *Iris*, or *Rainbow*, which, in the vallies, is seen crossing the heavens, from this height is extended under the feet of travellers: nor is it less admirable, while they travel over these hills, and perceive tempests and storms falling into the vallies at a distance, that the serenity over their heads is so great, that no cloud is to be seen to discompose the beautiful prospect.

THERE are sixteen vulcanoes in this chain of mountains; which, at several times, have opened with such horrible explosions, as to cause very terrible and astonishing effects to all the circumjacent countries. The first of these vulcanoes, is called, the vulcano of *Copiapo*, being in about 26 degrees 20 minutes of south latitude; in 30 degrees, is that of *Coquimbo*; in $31\frac{1}{2}$, that of *Ligua*; in 35, that of *Peteroa*; in 36, that of *Cbillan*; in $36\frac{1}{2}$, that of *Antoco*; in $37\frac{1}{2}$, is that of *Notuco*; in 39, that of *Villarica*; in 40, is that of *Osorno*; about $\frac{1}{2}$ a deg.

farther, is that of *Cbuanauca*; in 42 deg. $\frac{1}{4}$, is that of *Quechucabi*; one, called *Minchimavida*, in 44; and, in 46, that of *Saint Clement*. These are the known vulcānoes of *Cbili*; though there may be others which extend as far as *Terra del Fogo*. They are represented to be as terrible as the eruptions of *Mount Etna* in *Sicily*, or *Mount Vesuvius* in *Naples*: however, the desolation which they cause, is attended with one happy consequence; for the earthquakes in *Cbili* have always been considerably less than those in *Peru*; because *Cbili* has more vents for the exhalations of combustible vapours.

THE difference which may be observed in passing the *Andes*, on the east and western side of the mountains, make them appear as if they were in very remote regions from each other: for, on the summit of the mountains, both horizons may be discovered; that towards the east, being enveloped with such thick vapours, as prevent the flow of light, and overshadow all the country: while the heavens are so bright and placid towards the west, as to give infinite pleasure to the eye of the beholder. There is also a difference in the trees, plants, and animals, on each side of the mountains. In going down to the eastward, the fountains and rivers are few and muddy; the face of the land melancholy; and no tree, or verdure, to recreate the sight, unless in those parts where the heats begin to grow intolerable: but, as soon as travellers descend to the westward, they meet with lovely springs, umbrageous trees, fragrant groves, and pleasant vallies: the mildness of the sea air is felt from the foot of the mountains; the harmony of the birds is delightful to the ears, and many other objects charming to the

the eye. On the east side, there are no cultivated lands, nor any pasture for the feeding of flocks: but on the west side of the mountains, the springs fertilize the fields below, keeping the earth fresh and green all the year; nourishing such variety of trees, and so admirably disposed, that they appear like a beautiful plantation, many of them being loaded with the fruits of the country, some of which are delicious to eat, and others afford excellent liquors for the *Indians*: the vallies are full of odoriferous flowers, and physical plants; as also of olives, almonds, and all sorts of fruit trees: the plains have flourishing vineyards, which make elegant wines; and the little hills afford the purest herbage.

THESE mountains are supposed to be very rich in mines; but two causes may be assigned, why these riches are not discovered: the first, being that general and inviolable maxim among the *Indians*, of concealing all their treasures from any other nations; for if any one among them, either out of interest, negligence, or a motive of conveniency, should discover any thing of this kind, his death would be inevitable, and no power on earth could save him from the revenge of his countrymen. The other reason for not seeking after these mines, is, the great plenty which *Chili* affords of all the necessaries for life: so that hunger, which is the prompter of avaricious desires, has no inducement to run any perilous hazards, or attempt to penetrate through extensive desarts, in search of hidden treasures; especially, as such quantities of gold are found in the vallies and rivers, as to prevent the inhabitants from working the mines in the low

countries: but, if the *Spanish* colonists should increase in this country, and raise the price of provisions, they might be more ingenious and industrious; which would oblige them to seek for sustenance under ground, from the mines and treasures concealed in the bowels of these mountains.

THE *Andes* begin to be covered with snow, as soon as the first rains of the winter descend, which happens about the middle of *May*; and the mountains are shut up by it, five or six months in the year; so that they are impassable till *October* or *November*: for, even in the middle of summer, when travellers are almost fainting with excessive perspiration at the bottom of the mountains; they are obliged to put on double cloathing, when they arrive near the summit; as also to fortify the stomach with warm things, to withstand the sharpness of the cold, and the subtileness of the air, which penetrates the body if it is not well defended. It is from this severity of cold in the mountains, that the country has received its name; for, in the language of the *Indian* natives, *Cbili* signifies *Cold*: but it is necessary to observe, that, when authors speak of the excessive coldness of the country, they mean only these mountainous parts, whereby the truth of what historians relate differently, may be reconciled; because, as most of them were unacquainted with the country, they made no distinction between the mountains and the plains; the former having all the bad effects of cold, which has been related of them, particularly the *Pampas* of *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, on the east side of the *Andes*; though the moisture of the sea-air tempers the sharpness of the blasts from the mountains, as they
rush

rush upon the vales, rendering the plains both fertile and delightful.

THERE are frightful precipices, and deep rivers, at the sides of the narrow passes in the *Andes*: which frequently occasion the loss of mules and travellers. The streams run with such violence, and so far below the roads, that they bring a dizziness in the head by looking at them: the ascents and descents are so steep, that they are difficult to pass on foot; but the difficulty of the way is somewhat alleviated by the beautiful cascades, which the water forms in the rocks and mountains: besides, the water naturally springs up to a great height in some of the vallies, like artificial fountains, among odoriferous plants, and beautiful flowers, which yield a delightful prospect. All these springs and streams are so very cool, that a man cannot drink above two or three sips at once, nor hold his hand in them above a minute: but, in some places, there are hot springs, which leave a green tincture in the channel where they pass, and are of service in several distempers.

THERE are numerous springs, lakes, and rivers, throughout the whole extent of the *Andes*: but the most considerable of the fresh-water lakes, are in the plains and vallies, such as those of *Tagatagua*, near *St. Jago*; and that of *Puren*, in which the *Chilefians* had an impregnable fortress, from whence they were never expelled by the *Spaniards*. There are also salt-water lakes, which have a communication with the sea, some part of the year: for, in stormy weather, the sea forces a way into them, and leaves them full of fish; but the communication of the sea is stopt in *January*, when

the hot weather comes on, which congeals the water, and leaves a crust of fine white salt, about a foot thick on the surface.

THERE are several salutary fountains also in the plains and vallies of *Chili*; particularly, one that rises at the foot of the vulcano of *Villarica*, and runs into an adjacent lake: besides two more, which rise near each other, and form the river *Chico*; one of them being hot, and the other cold. The baths of *Rancagua*, near *St. Jago*, are celebrated for the cure of many distempers: those of *Mayten*, *Mapocho*, and *Conchially*, are reputed to have the same healing virtue: but those fountains are best which are at the greatest distance from the *Andes*.

It is observed, that the springs and rivers rise more in the lowlands of *Chili*, than in those of *Peru*. There are upwards of fifty rivers, which rise in the *Andes*, and run through *Chili*, into the *South Sea*; being joined by many other lesser streams, which fall into them in their course: but none of them are navigable, for vessels of any considerable burthen, far beyond their mouths; because they run only a course of about 90 miles from their sources: all these rivers which flow from the *Andes* westward, and fall into the *South Sea*, being rapid torrents, generally occasioned by the melting of the snows, and the declivity of the ground. One of these rivers, called *Mendoza*, which falls from the eastern side towards *Cuyo*, has a natural bridge of rocks over it, broad enough for 3 or 4 carts to pass abreast: from whose vault several pieces of stone are seen to hang, resembling salt; which congeal like icicles, as the water drops from the rock, and are formed into several shapes and colours.

THE other principal rivers are as follow. 1. The *Salada*, or *River of Salt*, which rises on the confines of *Peru*, and falls into the *South Sea*, in about twenty-six degrees of south latitude; whose waters are too salt to be drank. 2. The *Copiapo*, which rises in 26 degrees and a half of south latitude, and runs about sixty miles from east to west; forming a bay, and a harbour, at its entrance into the sea. 3. The *Guasco*, which rises in 28 degrees of south latitude, and also makes a good harbour. 4. The *Coquimbo*, which discharges itself into the sea, in about 30 degrees of south latitude, where it forms a noble bay and port, with beautiful trees on the banks, and particularly myrtles, which make a fine and pleasant grove. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. The *Serena*, *Tongoy*, *Limacsi*, *Cbuapa*, *Longotoma*, and *La Ligua*. 11. The *Aconcagua*, a large deep river, which runs through several fruitful vallies, and falls into the sea, in about 32 degrees and a half. 12. The *Maypo*, which rises in about 33 degrees of south latitude, and runs with such rapidity as to admit only one bridge to be made over it of cables: it enters the sea with so much force, that its waters form a circle, and are distinguished a great way: it is brackish, but full of excellent trout; and the sheep which feed on its banks, afford mutton of a delicate taste. 13, 14, 15, 16. The *St. Jago*, or *Mapocho*, the *Poangue*, *Colina*, and *Lampa*, are rivers which fall into the *Maypo*. The *St. Jago* is divided into several streams, to water the district of the same name, which it sometimes overflows. The waters of the *Poangue* are extraordinary clear and sweet; flowing through veins of metal, which very much help digestion; and it runs

several leagues under ground, fertilizing the land about it, so as to produce excellent corn, and fine melons. The *Colina* and *Lampa*, unite together, at about forty miles distance from their sources, and form the remarkable lake of *Cudogues*; which is about two leagues in length, and so deep that great vessels may sail in it: the banks are covered with trees, that have a verdure all the year round: and it abounds with trouts and smelts, which are a great conveniency to the city of *St. Jago*. 17. The *Rapel*, is nothing inferior to the *Maypo*, and receives several other rapid streams, as the *Cachapoal*, *Tinguiritica*, *Malloa*, and *Chimbarongo*; after which, it falls into the sea, in about 34 degrees of south lat. 18. The *Lora*, which rises in 34 deg. and three quarters; receiving the streams of *Tono*, *Peteroa*, and *Mataquito*. 19. The *Maule*, a great river, which rises in 35 degrees, 20 minutes, and bounds the jurisdiction of *St. Jago*: it receives the *Clear River*, and the *Cauquenes*: having a dock for building of ships, near its mouth; and a ferry belonging to the king, for the convenience of passengers. 20. The *Itata*, a noble river, which enters the sea, in about 36 degrees 10 minutes of south latitude; being three times as large, and as deep as the *Maule*: about the middle of its course, it is joined by the furious torrent of the *Nuble*; and in most places it is passed upon rafts, but in some it is fordable. 21. The *Andalien*, a slow and silent river, which enters the pleasant and spacious bay of the *Conception*, in about 36 degrees and three quarters. There is also another small river that runs through the middle of the city of *Conception*; a little above which, it falls from a high rock, giving the inhabitants an opportunity of

of forming all sorts of water-works from it, among pleasant groves of laurels, myrtle, and other odoriferous plants. 22. The *Biobio*, which is the largest river in *Chili*, and enters the sea, in 37 degrees of latitude; being between two and three miles over at its mouth: its waters run through veins of gold, and fields of *Sarsaparilla*, which make them very wholesome, and efficacious in several distempers: it is also the boundary between the *Indians*, who are friends to the *Spaniards*, and those who are their enemies; for the latter make frequent incursions upon the former; though the river swells so much in the winter, that it becomes impassable, and occasions a cessation of arms on both sides. 23, 24, 25, 26. The *Colcura*, *Arauco*, *Labapi*, and *Lebo*; which empty themselves between 37 and 38 degrees: as also the *Coypo*, or *Ralemo*, which reaches the sea in 38 degrees. 27. The *Imperial*, or *Cauten*, which receives the *Curarava*, the *Eyow*, and the *Ladies River*; falling into the sea in 38 degrees and 40 min. of south latitude. 28. The *Tolten*, about 25 miles from the river *Imperial*, is deep enough for great ships where it enters the sea. 29. The *Queulen*, which is capable of small barks, and disembogues itself about 24 miles from the *Tolten*. 30. The *Valdivia*, or *Baldivia*, which discharges itself into the ocean in about 39 degrees and 40 minutes of south latitude; being navigable three leagues from the sea. 31. The *Chalbin*, which is deep, and capable of great vessels. Ten others called the *Chico*, *Ballena*, *Rabudos*, *Coronado*, *De la Esperanza*, *Riosinfundo*, the *Gallegos*, the *Martyrs*, the *Apostles*, and the *Giants*. 42. *De la Campana*. 43. and 44. *De los Paxaros*,
or

or the *River of Birds*; and *St. Victorian*. But there are several other rivers which run among the islands, or empty themselves into the streights of *Magellan*.

ALL these rivers run from east to west, and discharge themselves into the *South-Sea*: but those which run from the opposite parts of the *Andes*, towards the north sea, are not so well known; because those parts are less inhabited, or not so much frequented by *Europeans*: the most remarkable being those of *St. John*, and of *Mendoza*; which are large rivers, and empty themselves into the lake of *Guanacache*.

THE *Chilefians* are of the middle size, well-proportioned, and strong limbed; of a tawny complexion, inclining to a copper-colour, like all the natives both of south and north *America*: their hair is black, and exceeding harsh; their features are tolerably good; their teeth white, and sound; but their countenance seems somewhat dejected. They follow the general practice of the *Americans*, in pulling the hair off their chins, and other parts of their bodies, as soon as it appears, with tweezers, or nippers, made of shells. Their women are moderately tall, slender, and well-shaped; who braid and curl their hair frequently, letting it grow to an extraordinary length. But the *Chilefians*, who inhabit the province of *Cuyo*, and the plains of *Pampas*, on the eastern side of the *Andes*, are people of a larger stature than those of *Chili*; proper, and of a darker complexion; the women painting their faces, or some part of them, with a green colour.

THE first account that the *Spaniards* received of *Chili*, was from the *Peruvians*; who subdued the northern

northern part of that province, in the reign of their tenth *Inca*, *Yupanqui*: but afterwards met with such a powerful opposition from the confederated *Chilefians*, that the *Incas* determined to make the river *Maule* the utmost bounds of their empire; and accordingly fortified the banks of it against the invasions of the barbarians, as they called the *Chilefians*, who were then very uncivilized, worshipped many idols, and had only the patriarchal form of government. Every tribe, or family, was governed by its respective head, or chief; who was succeeded by his eldest son, or nearest relation, on his decease: but, when they were invaded, or had wars with their neighbours, they elected some general, who was remarkable for his military skill and bravery. Though the *Chilefians*, who inhabited that part of the country which was conquered by the *Incas*, were obliged to conform themselves to the religion and manners of the *Peruvians*; their emperors making no difference between them and the rest of their subjects;

SECTION III.

The first invasion of Chili by Don Diego de Almagro : his expedition ; and death. The second invasion, under Don Pedro Baldivia : the settlements which he established : his war with the Indians ; and death. The conduct of Francis de Velagra against Caupolican the Indian general. The war undertaken by Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoca, against the Indians ; and the death of Caupolican. In what manner the Spaniards established themselves in Chili, and made peace with the Indians. How the Dutch and English attempted to settle in Chili. Reflections on the peace between the Spaniards and Indians. The number of inhabitants in Chili : and some farther account of the Indians.

THIS country was first discovered by Don Diego de Almagro ; who began the conquest of it about the year 1535 : but the Spaniards were never able to bring it entirely under their subjection : for there are several *Indian* nations, who have made the Spaniards sensible they are to be dreaded ; especially since the middle of the last century.

DIEGO de ALMAGRO had a grant, from his Catholic majesty, of all the country between *Las Chincas* in *Peru*, and the streights of *Magellan* ; including half *Peru*, and all *Chili*, which the Spaniards then called the new kingdom of *Toledo*. Almagro was one of the three adventurers, with *Pizarro*, and *Lugne*, who undertook the conquest of *Peru*, after *Peter de Arias* had abandoned his enterprize, in 1525 : he was of such mean extraction that it was
never

never known who was his father : but he was valiant, sincere, and merciful ; though somewhat haughty, and vain-glorious. His co-adventurer *Pizarro*, had been very successful in *Peru*, where he made the emperor *Atabalippa* prisoner, and put him to death : but, when *Almagro* received the above-mentioned grant, he insisted that the government of *Cusco*, the capital of *Peru*, was under his jurisdiction, and set out to take possession of it ; though he desisted from that attempt, and turned his arms towards *Chili* ; for which purpose, he amassed a prodigious treasure, and distributed it among his men, to buy horses and arms ; promising, that what they conquered should be equally divided among the conquerors.

ALMAGRO had an army of 200 *Spanish* horse, 300 *Spanish* foot, and a great number of *Indians*, who followed one of their princes ; besides a multitude of slaves, with which he entered *Chili* ; but met with a brave opposition from the natives ; who, at first, were much intimidated at the *Spanish* horses ; though, at last, after they had killed some of them in an engagement, they took a solemn oath, by the great sun, either to die, or kill them all. The *Spaniards* marched through a desert and barren country, suffering great distress for want of provisions ; but their affliction was so much increased in passing the *Andes*, that they lost 150 men and 30 horses, besides 10,000 *Indians*, which came from *Peru*. However, *Almagro* descended into the valley of *Copiapo*, where he found an opportunity of rendering himself popular among the *Chileans*, by putting an usurper to death, who had deprived a young prince of his government, and

and oppressed his subjects. He then proceeded to the *Promocas*, a nation who inhabited the banks of the river *Maule*, where they bravely opposed him, and killed abundance of his men; but were obliged to give way, at last, to his horse and artillery: so that, in all probability, *Almagro* would have conquered the whole kingdom in a few years, if he had not returned to *Peru*, in 1537, to take possession of *Cusco*, by virtue of a royal patent, which he received by a messenger sent on purpose. This put a stop to the *Spanish* conquests in *Chili*, for that time; and proved fatal to *Almagro*, who took *Cusco* by force; but was afterwards defeated, and took prisoner by *Pizarro*, who put him to death as a criminal; which was afterwards revenged by the son and friends of *Almagro*, who assassinated *Pizarro*; though the assassins were punished for the murder.

THE next *Spanish* general who entered *Chili*, was Don *Pedro Baldivia*, or *Valdivia*: he had borne arms in *Italy*, and *Peru*, with reputation; and was therefore thought a fit person to finish this conquest; for which he obtained a permission, in 1539, from *Francis Pizarro*, and the vice-roy of *Peru*. He was a whole year in preparing for this expedition, and began it in 1540, with a considerable army of *Spaniards* and *Indians*; who, after great difficulties, arrived in the valley of *Copiapo*. The first opposition that was shewn to *Baldivia*, was at *Quillota*, where the *Indians* skirmished with him continually, but were incapable of retarding his progress: so that he advanced as far as *St. Jago*, where he erected a fort, and founded the town of that name, as a place of defence against the *Indians*,
who

who killed so many of his men, that they talked of returning again to *Peru*: but *Baldivia* easily composed the mutiny, by putting his men in hopes of acquiring immense stores of gold; which they soon discovered at the mines of *Quillota*, where he erected another fort to protect his workmen. He then sent for more assistance from *Peru*, which he received, when he had scarce men sufficient to defend his forts: though, as soon as they arrived, he pursued his conquests further, particularly against the *Promocas*, with whom he had several skirmishes, which obliged him to send for further assistance from *Peru*.

BALDIVIA, in the mean time, founded the city of *Coquimbo*, and fortified it for the security of his men: but, instead of receiving any supplies from *Peru*, his assistance was desired there by the governor, against whom one of the brothers of *Pizarro* had revolted: so that *Baldivia* was obliged to return to *Peru*, where, by his valour, and chiefly by his conduct, *Pizarro* was defeated, and put to death with his adherents.

DURING the absence of *Baldivia* from *Chili*, he left *Francis de Velagra*, or *Villagra*, for his lieutenant, who had a misunderstanding with *Pedro Sanchez de Hoz*, to whom his Catholic majesty had granted the government of the further part of *Peru* and *Chili*; but *Velagra* made him prisoner, and beheaded him: though it is uncertain, whether this was done by the order of *Baldivia*, who appeared very well satisfied with his death; because this rival had great pretensions to most of his conquests, and looked upon *Baldivia* only as an usurper.

WHILE

WHILE the Spaniards were thus engaged in civil dissensions, both in *Peru* and *Chili*, the *Chilefians* made their advantage of them, by surprizing the *Spanish* garrisons of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo*, putting them to the sword, and demolishing both the towns: it being with difficulty that *Velagra* could defend himself, even in *St. Jago*, till the return of *Baldivia*, who brought a good army with him from *Peru*, retrieved his affairs, drove the *Indians* from the vallies of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo* again; and rebuilt the towns which they had destroyed. After this, he sent a detachment under *Francis Aquerro*, who passed the *Cordillera*, and founded the towns of *Diaguítas* and *Jures*, on the other side of those mountains; while *Baldivia* himself marched against the *Promocas*, and founded the city of *Conception* in 1550; where he also erected a fort, and sent out detachments to make further discoveries. He then proceeded southward, in the beginning of 1551, with the main body of his army, and subdued such of the natives as made any opposition: but he was obliged to found the cities of *Imperial*, *Baldivia*, and *Villa Rica*, to keep the *Indians* in obedience.

BALDIVIA lost abundance of men in this expedition, and underwent a great deal of misery and fatigue: besides, he built several forts, which he garrisoned, to preserve his new conquests; and applied himself to the working of the gold mines, in hopes of accumulating a great treasure, which he intended to carry over to *Spain*; not doubting, by thus adding the weight of his gold to his merit, but he should readily obtain such titles of honour, as that court had bestowed upon other conquerors, and

and to return with such a force, as might enable him to enlarge his conquests. For this purpose, he employed twenty thousand *Indians*, in digging the mines of *Quilacoya* and *Angol*, which had never been opened before, and thereby enriched both himself and his soldiers; who afterwards grew so indolent and luxurious, as to encourage the *Indians* to a revolt, for recovering the liberty of their country.

THE *Chilefians* had never been conquered by the *Spaniards* in so many encounters, if they had not been terrified and astonished at the explosion of the artillery, and the firing of the small arms; which, at first, the *Indians* imagined to be real thunder and lightening; as also, that the *Spaniards* were somewhat more than human. But the *Chilefians* were soon undeceived, and found their enemies to be only men like themselves: therefore, they were determined to make another attempt for the recovery of their liberties; being persuaded, that, by their numbers and courage, they should be able to expel the invaders out of their territories. Nor was this resolution founded in temerity; for the *Spaniards*, without considering that the dread of their arms and their horses was much abated, grew remiss and negligent in their military discipline, attending more to the acquisition of riches, than the security of their conquests: while they daily exasperated the *Indians*, by compelling them to dig in the mines; and, by assembling so many of them together for that laborious employment, they gave the *Indians* an opportunity of forming a conspiracy, and executing it with better success, than they

could have done, if they had remained separated in their respective villages.

THE *Araucans*, or *Araucanos*, were the bravest nation among the *Chilefians*, and had opposed the *Spaniards* with the greatest success, but were obliged to submit: when *Baldivia* reserved their country for himself, in the distribution of the lands, and erected three castles for the defence of these possessions. He then marched farther southward, where he discovered so many rich mines, that he employed fifty thousand *Indians* in working them; and spent so much time in accumulating treasure, that the *Araucans* took advantage of his absence, and engaged the whole country in a conspiracy against the *Spaniards*.

THE confederate caziques were, *Tucapel*, who brought 3000 men: *Angol*, 4000: *Cayocupil*, had 3000, from the *Cordillera*: *Millarapue*, 5000: *Paicavi*, 3000: *Lemoleno*, 6000: *Mareguano*, *Gualemo*, and *Leucopie*, each 3000: *Elicuera*, 6000: *Ongolmo*, 4000: *Puren*, 6000: *Lyncoyce*, 7000: *Peteguelen*, 6000: *Thome*, 5000: *Audalican*, 4000: and *Caupolican*, 8000. The whole *Chilefian* army consisted of about eighty thousand men, who, according to their custom, assembled at a kind of festival; when it was unanimously agreed to rise against the *Spaniards*: but there was some difference about the choice of a general, every one desiring to have that command, as it generally happens in such elections. Each leader alledged some particular merit; the one his valour, another his experience, a third his good fortune, and none of them seemed to want a pretence of obtaining their desire. However, they at last concurred in electing *Caupolican*,

as the bravest foldier, and the ablest chief: to whom they all fwore obedience, and promised to execute his orders, for the promotion of their common intèrest.

THE *Spaniards* had one of their castles near the place of this rendezvous; which the *Indians* were impatient to attack openly: but they were prevented by their general, who took it by stratagem. *Baldivia* soon received intelligence of this insurrection, and returned with great expedition to the valley of *Arauca*; depending so much on his own courage and fortune, that he would not wait for reinforcements from the other garrisons.

CAUPOLICAN, with twenty thousand men, met *Baldivia* at *Tucapel*, where he represented to the *Indians*, that the *Spaniards* were only one hundred and fifty men; and that a thousand of his brave countrymen might easily maintain their ground against so small a number; notwithstanding the advantage which the enemy had in their arms and horses. Therefore, he divided his army into battalions, consisting of a thousand men in each division; ordering them to charge the *Spaniards* by turns, and to relieve each other as there should be occasion.

PURSUANT to these orders, the first battalion engaged the *Spanish* horse with great intrepidity, and held the engagement for a considerable time: after which, they leisurely retired, and were succeeded by another battalion, who followed the example of the first, and were also succeeded by others in the same manner, for seven or eight hours, without intermission; till the *Spaniards* began to faint with the labours of the day, and for

want of refreshment. *Baldivia* then attempted to make a precipitate retreat, and ordered his men to take possession of a pass, about a mile from the field of battle; where he imagined he should still be able to defend himself against all the power of *Caupolican*. But a *Chilelian*, whose name was *Lautaro*, whom *Baldivia* had baptized, and bred up in his own service as a page, went over to the *Indians*, and directed them to take possession of the pass, before the *Spaniards* could arrive there. He animated them to make use of the advantage before them; in the following bold and nervous manner.

“ What is this, brave *Araucanos*? Do ye turn
“ your backs, when your liberty is concerned;
“ when your country, your children, your posterity,
“ are at stake? Either recover your liberty,
“ or lose your lives: for it is more happiness to die
“ like soldiers, than to live like slaves. Do ye
“ intend to stain the glory of your ancestors, acquired
“ in so many ages past, in one hour? Remember ye
“ are descended from those who gained that renown
“ by resisting their enemies, and not flying from them;
“ such as feared neither life or fortune, to preserve
“ their fame. Generous soldiers, banish all fear,
“ and either live free, or die honourably.” After which,
he put himself at the head of a company of *Chilelians*, and attacked *Baldivia*; while another detachment of *Indians* secured the pass, as they were directed by *Lautaro*, who gave such courage to his countrymen, that they soon cut all the *Spaniards* in pieces, except the general *Baldivia*, whom they took prisoner, bound his hands behind him; and conducted him to *Caupolican*. The *Chilelian* general ordered *Baldivia* to be

be tied to a tree, that he might be executed with more ceremony than those that perished in the field: when the *Spanish* general petitioned for his life; which *Caupolican* would have granted him, out of esteem for his courage; especially as *Baldivia* promised, upon oath, that he would retire from the country, with the remainder of his troops. But one of the confederate caziques was so much exasperated, to find the least attention given to such a proposal, that he gave *Baldivia* a violent blow on the head, with a club: after which, they served him as the *Parthians* did *Cræsus*, by pouring melted gold down his throat; bidding him content himself, in this manner, with his insatiable thirst after that metal. Then, according to the custom of the *Indians*, they made flutes and trumpets of the bones of his arms, legs, and thighs; keeping his head as a testimony of their victory, and to animate their posterity against the *Spaniards*. Besides, they instituted public games of wrestling, running, leaping, and other proofs of their strength and agility; in commemoration of this conquest over the *Spaniards*, and their *Indian* allies; of all whom, only two *Indians* escaped, and returned to the city of *Conception*, with the news of this fatal event.

CAUPOLICAN made *Lautaro* his lieutenant-general, for this important service; who afterwards behaved himself with great bravery against the *Spaniards*. But, after the victory, the *Chilean* general thought proper to send most of his army to their respective houses, to refresh themselves; leaving guards at proper places, to observe the motions of those *Spaniards* who remained in their garrisons.

WHEN the *Spaniards*, at the city of *Conception*, received intelligence of the defeat of *Baldivia*, they assembled all their forces which were dispersed in the several provinces of *Cbili*, and were joined by a great number of their *Indian* allies. They were all commanded by *Francisco de Velagra*, who was lieutenant-general to *Baldivia*, and marched his forces to the valley of *Arauca*, to give battle to *Caupolican*: but he came to a high mountain in his way, and found *Lautaro* encamped on the top of it, with ten thousand men. The foot of this mountain was washed by the sea, on one side: the passage on the other side was not difficult; and the top was a plain proper for the engagement. The *Spanish* general attacked the *Indians* with three troops of horse, in hopes of drawing them from their post; but in vain: for, though they made three attacks, *Lautaro* maintained his situation; receiving them with showers of arrows, stones, and darts, which put the *Spanish* horse into disorder. The *Spaniards* perceived that all the movements of their horse were of no service, and that the *Indians* were taking the passes behind them: whereupon, *Velagra* ordered his men to use their fire-arms; which at first made a great slaughter among the *Indians*: but *Lautaro*, to remedy this inconvenience, sent a detachment to attack the *Spaniards* in flank, and not to stop till they came close up with their musketeers; when they were to throw themselves into their ranks, and thereby avoid the small shot, which, then would prove of little service to the *Spaniards*; because they must wound their own men, as well as the *Indians*; who have ever since practised this stratagem with good success.

cess. The battle was bravely maintained on both sides, till the *Spaniards* were obliged to make a retreat; which they did, fighting and defending themselves all the way: but the *Indians* followed so close, that they dismounted the *Spanish* general, and would have killed him, if he had not valiantly defended himself till thirteen of his men came to his assistance. The *Spaniards* retreated, and the *Indians* pursued them for eighteen miles together; the latter having killed two thousand five hundred of the former, including their auxiliary *Indians*.

AFTER this victory, *Lautaro* directed his march towards the city of *Conception*, which the *Spaniards* abandoned, leaving it to be plundered by the *Indians*; who afterwards invested the city of *Imperial*; but were obliged to raise the siege, on account of the great rains which fell at that season. The *Spaniards* then returned to *Conception*, and rebuilt the city; which *Lautaro* took again, and demolished it a second time; pursuing the *Spaniards*, with a considerable slaughter, as far as *St. Jago*, which he also intended to besiege; and erected a fort for that purpose in an adjacent valley, where he was killed in a sudden attack by the *Spaniards*, and his army defeated; though the *Indians* behaved with astonishing resolution, preferring their glory to their lives, which they so much disregarded, that they ran furiously upon the spears of their enemies to come to a close engagement; so as to revenge the death of their leader, or perish in the attempt.

THE governor of *Peru*, apprehending all *Chili* would be lost, sent his son *Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoca*, with a powerful reinforcement, to oppose

pose the confederate *Indians*. Part of these forces were sent by land, and *Mendoza* sailed with the rest to the island of *Quiriquina*, near the city of *Conception*; where the inhabitants at first seemed to oppose his landing, but fled when the cannon of his ships began to fire. As soon as he was landed, he published a proclamation, declaring that he was come to save the souls of the *Indians*, by converting them to christianity; and that, if they submitted, he would treat with them in the name of the emperor *Charles Vth*. This declaration was dispersed among the *Cbilesians*, and sixteen of their caziques assembled to consult about what was proper to be done upon this occasion; when after many debates, it was resolved, that an ambassador should be sent to *Mendoza*, to know upon what terms he would accept of their friendship. Accordingly, the cazique *Millalan* was appointed to go upon this embassy; who addressed himself in the following manner to *Mendoza*: “ That his
 “ countrymen admitted the terms of peace that
 “ were proposed, and should observe those of
 “ friendship; but not out of any terror or apprehension
 “ caused in them by the arrival of these
 “ new forces: for no power was sufficiently formidable
 “ to terrify them, having experienced their
 “ own strength in their late success: but they were
 “ incited to an accommodation, out of compassion
 “ for so many innocent people, so many women
 “ and children, who, upon occasion of
 “ this war, remained widows and orphans. That,
 “ upon fair terms, they would acknowledge the
 “ king of *Spain*; upon condition he would not
 “ concern himself in any manner about their
 “ rights

“rights and liberty: but, if the *Spaniards* had any
“intention of acting by violence, and making
“slaves of the *Chilefians*, that they would sooner
“destroy their own children, and themselves, than
“submit to so mean, servile, and inglorious a con-
“dition.” *Mendoza* answered him in a very friend-
ly manner, made him some presents, and dispatched
him back to give an account of his embassy. But
the *Indians* only wanted to ensnare the *Spaniards*,
by these assurances of amity; of which *Mendoza*
was suspicious, and took the necessary precautions
for his own security.

THE *Spaniards* erected a fort, upon the top of a
hill, which overlooks the city of *Conception*, and
fortified it with eight pieces of cannon. The
Araucanos observed their motions, and suddenly at-
tacked the fort, with great spirit, and undaunted
resolution; but were obliged to retreat with confi-
derable loss.

IMMEDIATELY after this attack, the *Spaniards*
received their horses from *St. Jago*, and a re-inforce-
ment from *Imperial*: upon which, the *Chilefians*
assembled all their forces; and the *Spaniards* ad-
vanced towards them in the valley of *Arauco*,
where they had another bloody engagement, which
was to the disadvantage of the *Chilefians*, one of
whom, named *Gaulbarino*, was taken prisoner, whose
hands were both cut off by the *Spaniards*, to strike
an impression upon his countrymen. But the
Indians were so far from being terrified, that their
general *Caupolican* sent a challenge to *Mendoza*, to
fight him with all his strength; telling him, he
would wait for him in his camp at *Millarapue*. The
challenge was accepted, and an obstinate battle en-
fued,

fued, in which the *Chilefians* were at firft fuccefsful; but were afterwards obliged to retire, and leave the field to the *Spaniards*: though their retreat was conducted with great honour and reputation. The *Spaniards* took feveral prifoners, and among them twelve of the principal *Indians*, whom they instantly hanged upon fo many trees, for an example to the reft; and alfo put many others to the moft exquisite tortures, to force them to reveal fome particular fecrets; but their courage was inflexible, and their faith to their country inviolable; fo that they feemed infenfible of the moft excruciating pains, and intrepidly fubmitted to their fate, rather than difhonourably betray their countrymen.

From this place, the *Spaniards* proceeded to the valley where *Baldivia* was defeated, and erected a fort; from whence they made excurfions, and endeavoured to advance their conquelts. While *Caupolican* called a general affembly of the *Indians*, where it was refolved never to lay down their arms; but either to conquer or die, that they might drive out the *Spaniards*, and reftore their country to its liberty.

CAUPOLICAN was unfuccefsful in fome other encounters, which rendered him fomewhat unpopular among the *Indians*: fo that he was defirous of retrieving his character, by undertaking fome noble enterprize; notwithstanding *Rengo*, *Orempello*, *Tucapel*, and fome other of the principal *Chilefians*, difapproved of his project, and refused to give him any affiftance: becaufe, he intended to furprize the *Spaniards*, in their fortrefs, by a stratagem; which the other chiefs difdained, as, at moft, it would be only obtaining a victory by furprize or treachery.

Therefore,

Therefore, *Caupolican* was determined to make this attempt by himself, and sent one of his officers in disguise to enter the fort; who communicated the intentions of his general to a young *Indian* in the *Spanish* service; but met with a traitor, where he expected a friend. The *Chilefians* were encouraged to the attack, by the young *Indian*; who had acquainted the *Spaniards* with the design, and they prepared themselves for defence. *Caupolican* led his troops to the fort, where the *Spaniards* pretended to be unguarded and asleep, till many of the *Indians* entered; when they suddenly made such a furious discharge upon the assailants, that few of them escaped from the slaughter; *Caupolican* himself being taken prisoner, after concealing himself in a wood, where he intended to abide till he could assemble another army.

CAUPOLICAN was deservedly held in higher estimation than any other of the *Chilefian* generals; having defeated *Baldivia*, and put him to death: but he was now to undergo the same fate from the resentment of his enemies, who just before trembled at the very mention of his name. *Baldivia* petitioned for his life to the *Indians*; so did *Caupolican* to the *Spaniards*, who were equally as unmerciful: for, after this brave general promised to cause all the country to submit to the king of *Spain*, and to give way for the introduction of the christian religion, his cruel and unrelenting enemies publickly sentenced him to be empaled alive, and shot to death with arrows, for a terror to the rest of the *Indians*; which sentence was as barbarously executed; though he endured it with the greatest patience and equanimity.

THE death of *Caupolican* only contributed to render the hatred of the *Indians* more implacable to the *Spaniards*, to make the wound almost incurable, and re-ignite the war with more animosity. After this victory, *Mendoza* rebuilt the cities of *Baldivia* and *Imperial*, which had been destroyed; built *Osorno* and *Mendoza*; divided the country among his principal followers; and returned with great honour to *Peru*. But the *Chileans* were determined to preserve their independency, assembled fresh forces, and attacked the *Spanish* colonies, some of which were taken and retaken several times: so that the war continued to be carried on, with great obstinacy and cruelty, for upwards of fifty years; when it appears, by the *Spaniards* own relation, that they were driven, with great slaughter, from most of their settlements in *Chili*.

ON the 24th of *November*, 1599, five thousand *Indians* took the city of *Imperial* by surprize; plundered the place, killed many of the inhabitants, and took 400 into slavery. They carried on their revenge with such indefatigable ardour, that, in 1604, out of the thirteen cities established in *Chili*, they had destroyed five; being *Imperial*, *Baldivia*, *Angol*, *Santa Cruz*, and *Conception*. They afterwards plundered *Osorno* and *Villarica*: “to which nothing can be said, says the royal historian *Garcillasso de la Vega*, but that these were judgments, permitted by God, in his secret providence, for the chastisements of mankind.” Though he might have more naturally made this observation: “That these calamities, brought on the *Spaniards*, were only the efforts of a brave and generous people, struggling for natural liberty, against the violence of their invaders.”

THE

THE *Chilefians* were fo fuccefsful againft the *Spaniards*, that the *Dutch West-India* company, in 1642, fitted out a fquadron, under the command of captain *Brewer*; who was ordered to fail to the coaft of *Cbili*, and fettle colonies there: becaufe, they imagined he might fafely poffefs himfelf of fome of the gold mines; concluding, that all nations, which were enemies to the *Spaniards*, would be received as friends by the *Chilefians*. The *Dutch* defeated a body of *Spaniards*, and took the town of *Carelmappa*, which they burnt, and retired to their fhips. They afterwards took the town of *Caftro*, on the ifland of *Chiloe*, and intended to reduce the whole country of *Cbili* under the dominion of the ftates-general of the united provinces: for which purpofe, they contracted a friendfhip with fome of the caziques, who readily entered into an alliance againft the *Spaniards*, and permitted the *Dutch* to erect a fort at *Baldivia*, who ruined the whole fcheme, by their own indifcretion. For when the *Dutch* propofed a commercial intercourfe with the *Chilefians*, and to exchange arms for their gold; the caziques immediately appeared jealous of their new allies, declared they had no gold mines, and that there was no fuch thing as gold in ufe among the natives. They alfo refufed to fupply the *Dutch* with provifions; whereby they were under a neceffity of relinquifhing the expedition, and of returning to *Brasíl*, which was then under their fubjection.

THE court of *England* was afterwards defirous of making fome fettlements in *Cbili*; to which the miniftry of king *Charles II.* was encouraged by the intelligence they received from an old *Spaniard*,
ufually

usually called *Don Carlos*, who had formerly resided in south *America*; importing, that the *Spaniards* had almost abandoned *Chili*; and that it would not be difficult for the *English* to cultivate a good understanding with the natives; as also to establish a very advantageous traffic with them, whose principal returns would be in gold: but he pointed out *Baldivia*, as the port where there would be the greatest probability of success in such an expedition. In consequence of which, the *Sweepstakes*, a man of war of 36 guns, and a pink, were fitted out, under the command of Sir *John Narborough*, who set sail from *England*, on the 26th of *September*, 1669, and arrived at *Baldivia*, on the 15th of *December*, 1670. He was expressly commanded to give no molestation to the *Spaniards* in their settlements; nor to commit any acts of hostility against *Spain*: but the *Spaniards* would not permit him to trade with the *Indians*, and seized his lieutenant, with three of his men, whom they detained as prisoners. Sir *John Narborough*, upon this occasion, thought of rescuing his men by force, but he altered his resolution; either because his force was insufficient; or else, that he recollected the fate of the great and unhappy Sir *Walter Raleigh*, who lost his head for attacking the *Spaniards* in *America*, when he had no commission for his authority: so that Sir *John* quitted the coast, on the 22d of *December*, 1670; and returned to *England* on the 10th of *June*, 1671, having been about a year and three quarters on this voyage; but not more than half a year on his passage from *Baldivia* to the *Lizard*.

THE *Chilefians* ftill continued their oppofition againft the *Spaniards*, till the year 1690; when they entered into a treaty of peace, whereby they acknowledged the king of *Spain*, for their lawful fovereign: and the *Spaniards* agreed to permit them to live in a peaceable manner, according to their own laws and customs. However, thefe *Indians* entertain an hereditary averfion to the *Spaniards*, who have never been able to reduce them to their fubjection by the force of arms, or to win them to their intereft by the effect of prefents: they have traditionary relations of the cruelties committed by the *Spaniards* on their anceftors; they glow on every feafonable occafion, with a warm fpirit of refentment againft the invaders of their country; and they ftill retain their primitive love of liberty: fo that there is the higheft probability, they would readily join with any other *European* powers to expel the *Spaniards* out of the *Chilefian* dominions.

WHEN the *Dutch* invaded *Cbili*, in 1643, the *Spaniards* had not more than fifteen hundred foldiers, either on the continent, or iflands of *Cbili*; according to the account given by captain *Brewer*, who fays, there were there hundred in *Volparifa*, and *St. Yago* on the coaft: three hundred in the city of *Conception*; one hundred in *Coquimbo*; and the fame number on the banks of the river *Biobbio*; eighty in *Tucapel*; five hundred in the forts of the valley of *Arauco*; with one hundred and twenty in *Carelmappa*, *Calimbuco*, and the ifland of *Cbiloe*. But he does not mention the particular number of the other *Spanifh* inhabitants; only in general, that they were more numerous than the garrifon foldiers. Though it is evident, that many
of

of the *Chilefians* had embraced christianity, and were intermarried with the *Spaniards* at this time: as also, that the tribes of some caziques were in alliance with the *Spaniards*, who refused to be subject to their government: but it is likewise true, that the other *Chilefian* tribes were then in a state of war with their invaders.

THOUGH the country of *Chili* is so very extensive, yet, according to the latest and best accounts, the number of inhabitants are very disproportionate to such an extent of territory. The *Spaniards*, throughout the whole, are not accounted above twenty thousand men capable of bearing arms: the mestizoes, mulattoes, and negroes, are between seventy and eighty thousand: but the bulk of the inhabitants are *Indians*; some of whom are styled *free*, and others *subjected*.

THE free *Indians* acknowledge the dominion of the king of *Spain*, but pay him no tribute; they amount to many thousands, and inhabit the greatest part of the country, especially towards the mountains, being governed by their respective chiefs, whom the *Spaniards* stile caziques; though the *Indians* never acknowledge that title: but the government and manners of these free *Indians* will be more properly represented, in that part of this history, which treats of the independent *Indian* nations.

THE subjected *Indians* are about fifteen thousand, who belong to the *Spaniards*, live among them, and serve them in the condition of a kind of vassalage, not in the state of slavery; being divided, according to their habitations, into different lordships, containing a certain number of families, called

called commanderies, which the king bestows on whom he pleases. If these *Indians* live with their lord, and serve him, he must not only afford them a maintenance, but give each of them a salary of thirty pieces of eight, or about five pound, seven shillings and six-pence sterling, annually: though, if the *Indians* are not inclinable to live with their lord, they may be exempted, on paying him a yearly tribute of ten pieces of eight, or one pound, fifteen shillings, and ten pence sterling.

THERE are also some *Indian* slaves, who are sold to the *Spaniards* by the free *Indians*: but, by the laws, they cannot be sold a second time, without their own consent.

S E C T I O N IV.

An account of the produce of Chili; its vegetables, mines, and animals: A description of the district of Cuyo; with the method of travelling through it to Buenos Ayres. Some account of the South Sea, or Pacific Ocean. And a general view of the trade of Chili.

IT is now proper to speak of the produce of *Chili*; which is very different from what is produced in the other parts of this continent: for the fruits of *Mexico* and *Peru*, are very far from coming to any perfection in *Chili*; because those countries are within the tropics, and *Chili* is out of them; for which reason also, the fruits of *Europe* take very well in *Chili*, especially apples; pears; apricots, peaches; and quinces, which bear amaz-

ingly; and, if care is not taken to lessen the quantity of fruit while it is young, it is impossible for the boughs to bear the weight of them; so that they are obliged to be propped with forks, before they are fit to be gathered. The fruit that exceeds all the rest for bearing, is the apple of all kinds, of which there are many very extensive orchards: but fruit is seldom sold here, because any person may step into a garden or orchard, and eat what he pleases, without any interruption; except strawberries, which, when cultivated, are called *Frutilla*, and are sold very dear; being, according to *Ovalle*, as big as pears; though the same author says, he has seen them grow wild for several miles together. There are great quantities of olives and grapes; particularly the muscadel grape, which yields a noble and generous wine; the branches of the vines being very thick, and the bunches of grapes extraordinary large: but there is such plenty of them, that it proves a grievance; because there is no vent for such quantities, and the *Indians* frequently kill themselves by drinking to excess.

THE principal forest-trees of this country, are the cypress, cedar, oak, paragua, cinnamon, guayac, thorn-bush, sandal, and palm. The cypress most commonly grows in the precipices of the *Cordillera*; being large and tall, shooting up till its tops can be warmed by the sun-beams: it yields a fine odorous smell; and, though it is very plentiful, bears a good price, especially in *Peru*, where it is carried, and used in building, particularly for the inside of churches. The cedar is larger than the cypress: the colour of the wood is red, when first worked; but it gradually loses that lively colour, and

and comes to the complexion of walnut-tree wood. The oaks thrive exceedingly, grow thick, and yield very large planks: some of them are white, and others red: but the wood of the former is perishable, and that of the latter durable. The paragua is a handsome branching tree, which keeps its leaves all the year; being like the elm; and affording some valuable timber. The cinnamon-tree is so called, from having some resemblance to the true cinnamon of the island of *Ceylon*, in *Asia*; but the bark wants both the fine smell and taste of the real cinnamon: however, the timber of this tree is chiefly used in their buildings. The guayac wood is almost as hard, and as heavy as iron; being good for many infirmities, when taken by way of decoction. The thorn-bush grows in clusters, or groves; which is the ordinary fuel of the people near *St. Jago*; but, in other places, they make charcoal of this wood, for their furnaces and forges: it has some resemblance of an oak, but is more durable; the heart of it being red, and scarce ever decaying. The sandal-tree is very odiferous; being reputed a preservative against the plague; so that it is used by the confessors, and others, who are obliged to approach infected people. The palm-tree grows generally in the mountains, very thick and lofty: all the body of the tree is naked to the top, or first sprout; its nature being to lose all its old branches, as the new ones come out; by which means, the body of the tree rises freely: and, being disencumbered of such boughs as grow out of the sides of other trees, is totally employed in feeding the top, and the fruit which grows within it: so that it is like a pyramid

round the fruit, to preserve it by the admirable texture of its leaves, and the branches whereby it is encompassed. The fruit of the palm-tree, is called cocoas; being like filberds, though bigger by half: the kernel is hollow, and contains a kind of milk, of an excellent taste; which, in some months, is imbibed by the shell, and is then preserved like almonds. The kernel is first covered with a hard shell, then with another cover of a green or yellow colour; which is wove so close and strongly about it, that, when green, it is easier to break than to peel it off. The fruit grows close to a stalk, which sometimes will have about a thousand upon it: this is encompassed by a great shell, that grows larger proportionally with the bunch it contains, till, at last, the fruit makes it burst and open into two parts, like small boats, each of above half a yard long, and two spans diameter in the broadest place; the branch within being all of a fine beautiful yellow, which hangs on the branches till it is ripe, and then falls to the ground, where it is gathered, and sent in great quantities to *Peru*. There are also several kinds of wild fruit-trees; as the pengue, magues, quetu, and huigan; of whose fruits the *Indians* makes some fermented liquors. Besides, there is a tree, called the murtilla, which *Herrera* says, grows in the mountains, and bears a fruit that is a common food to the natives, who call it uni, though the *Spaniards* call it murtilla: it is red, and like a small grape, yielding a pleasant kind of wine; which when turned to vinegar, has a better taste and colour than wine-vinegar; for it retains the colour of the fruit, which is very sweet and odoriferous. There is also good oil, made

made of a feed called *madi*; which was once extremely well relished; but oil of olives is now in greater estimation. It is impossible to give a particular description of all the other different sorts of trees, growing in the woods and mountains of *Chili*, where there are few that lose their leaves in winter; especially those that grow wild in the woods, which are generally aromatic, and of a very fragrant smell; but the finest of this kind grow in the territory of the *Conception*. *Ovalle*, even says, that, in travelling, he met with lovely groves bordering the high ways, and sending forth so rich a smell from their leaves, that the flowers of *jeffamine* were not more delicious. That there were also abundance of myrtles and laurels, which grew naturally in capacious groves: yet, among these, there were others whose leaves infinitely exceed them in the delicacy of their smell. There are also several kinds of plants, flowers, and medicinal herbs. The mustard-plant, according to *Ovalle*, grows so prodigiously large, that he has travelled many leagues through groves of mustard, which were taller than man and horse; so that the birds built their nests in the branches.

THE first rains prepare the earth for its ornamental dress of flowers with the spring, which begins about the middle of *August*; and they continue in bloom till the heats come in, which is in *December*; flourishing in such great variety and abundance, that *Ovalle* reckoned forty-two different sorts at one time; exclusive of the garden flowers brought from *Europe*, such as carnations, roses, lillies, and gilliflowers: besides, those wild

flowers were so odorous, that several of them, when distilled, afforded perfume-waters.

THEY have also physical herbs and plants of great virtue; particularly the quinchamali, albaquilla, and some others only known to the machis, or *Indian* physicians.

THE *Chilefians* had great plenty of maiz, or *Indian* corn, before the arrival of the *Spaniards* in this country: but they had neither wheat, barley, oats, annise, cummin, coriander-seed, linseed, flax, hemp, peas, cabbage, lettuce, raddishes, cardoons, chicory, endive, cucumbers, parsley, garlick, or onions; all which they have now in abundance, and their roots, particularly turnips, grow to a prodigious size.

THIS country abounds with mines of gold, silver, copper, tin, quicksilver, and lead. The copper is used in making of cannons for *Peru*, and the neighbouring kingdoms; in the garrisons of which there are always stores, particularly on the coast: besides, all the bells of churches, and utensils for families, are made of this metal; so that, since the working of these mines, no copper has come from *Spain*; for the *Indies* are sufficiently supplied by them with all they can want.

THERE is little lead worked, because there is small use of it; and of quicksilver less, because *Peru* affords enough of it. The mines of silver likewise lie unwrought; the golden mines being less expensive, on which account the inhabitants have turned their industry towards them.

THE gold mines are so numerous and rich, that from the confines of *Peru*, to the extreme part of *Chili*, even as far as the streights of *Magellan*, there is no part of the country in which some of these mines have

have not been discovered. All the authors, who have wrote any thing relating to this country, greatly extol it for its opulence and fecundity; which has likewise been done by all those who have navigated the streights of *Magellan*. *Antonia de Herrera*, in his general history of the *Indies*, says, "That in all the *West-Indies*, no gold is so fine as that of *Baldivia* in *Chili*, except that of the famous *Caravaya* in *Peru*; and that, when those mines were first worked, an *Indian* used to get from them every day twenty or thirty peso's of gold;" or about 12 *l.* sterling, which *Ovalle* says, was a prodigious gain. But both these authors were too apt to exaggerate.

GOLD is procured with less difficulty than silver out of the mines: first, because silver costs much pains to dig it from the hard rocks, then to beat it in the mills to powder, which mills are chargeable, as also the quicksilver necessary to be used to make the silver unite; and all the rest of the operations requisite to refine it. Whereas the advantage of getting gold, has no other trouble in it, than to carry the earth, in which it is found, to the water, and there wash it in mills for that purpose, where there is a stream to carry off the earth; and the gold, being the heaviest, goes to the bottom. It is true, sometimes they follow the gold vein through rocks, and hard places, where it grows thinner and thinner; till, at last, the profit that arises is very small; yet they persist to follow it, in hopes it will grow larger, and end, as it sometimes does, in what they call *bolsa*, which is, when coming to a softer and easier part of the rock, the vein enlarges so much, that one of these

discoveries is enough to enrich a family all their lives. There is less gold found at present than formerly; because dissensions have been long maintained between the *Spaniards* and the nation of *Araucanos*: but still some is procured; particularly about *Cochimbo*, where the greatest quantity is got, during the winter rains, which wash it down from the mountains into rivers, ponds, and rivulets; when the women go into the water, feel out the grains with their toes, and make up as much as supplies their present necessities, according to *Ovalle*: though captain *Rogers* observes, this is a very singular way to get gold. *Ovalle* adds, that he sent one of those grains, of a pretty considerable bigness, to *Seville*, to be touched; and that it was found to be twenty three caracts fine, without any manner of purification.

THE *Chileans*, as well as the other natives of *America*, had no great variety of four footed animals, till their country was discovered by the *Spaniards*; who, about two hundred years ago, transported thither almost every species, which were left to run wild in the forests, where they multiplied so greatly, that the *Chileans* can now bring a body of ten or twelve thousand horse into the field at a short warning.

THE cows have increased to such a prodigious degree, that it is astonishing to see what numerous herds of them are always feeding in the great plains of *Tucuman* and *Buenos Ayres*, without any owner; being the property of any person who is able to catch them. Their numbers are so great, that, according to *Ovalle*, a murrain is thought a necessary purge to lessen their too great abundance: because, the richness of the land fattens them to such
a de-

a degree, that one hundred and fifty pounds weight of tallow are frequently taken out of one cow : and the propagation of their species is incredible. Their hides are therefore so plentiful, that, though the consumption of them is so great in *Peru*, it is not half sufficient for the product of the cattle of *Cbili* : for which reason, it is an advantage to have a decrease of the cattle ; as the profit of the tallow and hides would be greater, while the trouble and expence of servants would be less.

SUCH is the difference of the present state of *Cbili*, to what it was formerly, that, *Herrera* says, when the settlement was first began, a horse was commonly sold for a thousand pieces of eight, or about 180*l.* sterling : but *Ovalle* says, he saw horses, accoutred for war, sold in the territory of *St. Jago*, for about ten shillings a piece, that were equal to the *Neapolitan* breed for shape, courage, and good qualities : and he also observes, that the cows were first bought at an excessive price ; but are now sold for a crown a piece, and the calves for half a crown ; the sheep being also sold for three pence, or three half-pence a piece.

THE sheep of *Cbili*, or vicunnas, which are proper to the country, are of the shape of camels ; but much smaller, and without any bunch on their backs. They are white, black, brown, and some ash-coloured ; being used by the natives to plow the land in some parts, before they had oxen : but now they are chiefly employed for the carriage of wine, wheat, and other provisions. They kneel down to be loaded, and when their burthen is well placed, they rise, and carry it very gravely : being governed by a kind of bridle,

put

put through holes in their ears; so that, by pulling the reins, the leader directs them which way he pleases. The upper lip of the animal is slit, and the neck is about three feet long. Their wool is greatly valued, for making cloaks and mantles, as fine as camblets.

THE guanacos, chamois, or wild goats, are very like these country sheep, both in shape and motion; but they are of a clear red colour. They go in herds, and feed in the fields; but never can be tamed: so that they are hunted down, and their young ones taken; whose flesh is eaten fresh, and tastes like that of a kid; though the flesh of the old ones is dried and smoaked. These goats, in a bag they have under the belly, breed the bezoar stones; which are highly valued for their efficacy against poison, and malignant fevers: the matter out of which they are made, being herbs that these animals eat to cure themselves of any wounds from the poison of venemous creatures, or other accidents.

THERE are likewise a sort of little rabbits, called pegues by the *Indians*, which are wild: but there is another kind, called cuyes, which are tame.

THERE are some squirrels in the valley of *Guasco*; whose skins are grey, or ash-coloured, and held in as great estimation, for their warmth and fineness of the touch, as furs.

MANY hares are bred in the *Pampas*, or plains of *Cuyo*; and particularly one sort, whose flesh tastes like that of sucking pigs.

THEIR birds and fowls are eagles, hawks, and parrots: as also the cauder, a prodigious large and ravenous bird of prey.

THE

THE parrots fly about screaming, in such numerous flocks, that they obscure the sight of the sun; and never fail to come down from the mountains into the valleys at the season of the year when the fruits are ripe, of which they destroy great quantities.

AT the time when the inhabitants slaughter their beef, there comes down another voracious fowl, larger than a duck; which gorges itself with the carcases that are left in the fields, so that it cannot readily fly; therefore it is hunted, and knocked on the head, by the boys at this season.

THE ostrich is another bird which is hunted by the natives; and, though he cannot fly, he runs so swiftly that he frequently escapes from the fleetest dogs and horses.

THEY have another long legged fowl, bigger than a turkey, that wades through ponds and rivers, and lives upon fish. These the *Indians* hunt for their feathers, which are red and white, and take many more fowls on the same account; for plumes of beautiful feathers are the principal ornaments of their heads: they abound also in singing birds of various kinds, many of them unknown to *Europeans*; and they have several which are found in *Europe*, such as linnets, nightingales, blackbirds, and finches. When the *Spaniards* arrived there, they had but one sort of tame fowl, which was between a duck and a hen; but now they have introduced all manner of *European* poultry, which multiply exceedingly, and are much better food here, than in warmer climates.

THE *Chilefians* only, of all the people of *America*, can say they are gainers by being acquainted with

with the *Spaniards*; for most of them still retain their liberties, and have acquired the possession of *European* cattle, fowls, grain, and fruits, which they wanted before. They have also learned several arts and sciences of the *Europeans*, and in many instances excel their masters.

THEIR lakes and rivers abound in good fish, as well as their seas. Whales and grampus's are frequently found on the coast of *Cbili*; and the former in such plenty, that *Seerteen* says, "that when he sailed through the streights of *Magellan*, he met with so many near certain islands, that they were obliged to sail with great care and attention to avoid them." They are all along the coast of *Copiapo* and *Guasco*; being of no small profit, according to *Ovalle*, on account of the amber-grease they cast on shore; as also for their oil. The tunny fish, and the albocaras, are both large kinds of fish, and are chiefly caught on the coast of *Cochimbo*. The sea-lions are said to be as large as a colt. The sea-wolves, or seals, are as big as calves, and are found in prodigious numbers all along the coast.

WHAT has been thus enumerated, relates only to the province of *Cbili* proper. For as to that of *Cuyo*, which lies on the east of the *Andes*, and between these mountains and the *Atlantic Ocean*, there is no perfect account, nor indeed of any of the inland provinces: but *Ovalle*, a native of *Cbili*, and who was procurator for the jesuits of that province at *Rome*, says, it is amazing to reflect, when there are only the mountains of *Andes* between the provinces of *Cuyo* and *Cbili* proper, they should be so different in their qualities, and in every respect almost

almost diametrically opposite to each other, though the latitude is the same.

IN *Cuyo*, he says, the heats are intolerable in summer, while the weather in *Cbili* is very temperate. Thunder, lightning, rain, and tempests, are frequent in *Cuyo*, during the summer; while in *Cbili*, they have settled serene weather, without thunder, lightning, or rain. In winter the weather is variable in *Cbili*; but never excessive cold to the westward of the mountains: whereas in *Cuyo*, they have constant serene weather in the winter, and excessive hard frosts; insomuch, that the cattle die in the fields, if they are not housed; and for five or six months every year, the passages of the mountains are so locked up by the snows, that these two provinces have no manner of communication.

IN *Cbili*, there are scarce any snakes, or poisonous insects; but they are numerous in *Cuyo*; where the natives are also tormented with bugs, musquitos, and other vermin, of which there are none, or very few, in *Cbili*.

THE Spaniards have pretty well stocked this province, as well as *Cbili*, with all manner of *European* cattle: the inhabitants have likewise great numbers of *Peruvian* sheep, and goats of their own: they abound also in corn and wine; and their fruits are said to have a better flavour than those of *Cbili*; as their summers are hotter, and of this there is such plenty that they supply the province of *La Plata*, and even *Buenos Ayres*, on the *Atlantic Ocean*, with dried grapes, and peaches; apples, oil, and excellent wine: but then this must be understood of that part of the province,
that

that lies next the mountains; for the desarts of *Pampas* extend six or seven hundred miles further eastward, over which they are obliged to pass in their way to *Buenos Ayres*. These, says *Ovalle*, are vast plains, which, like the ocean, afford an unbounded prospect, but produce neither trees or herbage: after which, the same author proceeds to relate the manner of travelling over the desarts, and gives some further light into the nature of this country.

THEY travel in covered carts and waggons, made almost as commodious as a house, with the doors to shut, and windows on each side to let in the air; laying beds or mattresses on the floor, on which they sleep most part of the journey. These waggons are drawn by oxen, and they set out two hours before sun set, travelling all night, and till the sun is an hour high the next morning; when the passengers rest, and eat the provision they carry with them, or take in hunting by the way: for those that are disposed for rural sports have horses and dogs with them, and take great numbers of the guanacoës, and vicunnas, or wild sheep, and goats, peculiar to south *America*. They take also a great many partridges, francolins, and other game; from whence a person might seem inclined to think it must be a very pleasant journey from *Chili* to *Buenos Ayres*: but travellers inform us, that they are subject to inconveniences which very much abate the pleasure of it; particularly the excessive heats, which oblige them to be still all the middle of the day; when they have no other defence from the sun or rain, than what the waggon affords, at many stages; though at some there happens

happens to be small brooks, and willows growing by them, that afford the traveller a refreshing shade. But the greatest inconvenience is the want of water, which is not met with, sometimes, for several days journey; therefore, the travellers carry water both for themselves and their cattle, which sometimes is all spent, and the travellers must perish, if they are not happily relieved by a shower of rain. However, all this might be remedied if the country was inhabited; for they meet with springs in many places, within a few yards of the surface: and the rains alone, which happen frequently in summer, might be preserved in cisterns and reservoirs, if there were any towns or villages in the country: but, at present, these are the difficulties travellers meet with in the plains of *Cuyo*, *Tucuman*, and *Rio Plata*; besides, for many leagues, they cannot see a hill, a tree, or a stone, any more than water, unless their way lies near the banks of the river *Plata*, or some other river.

THE sea bordering upon *Chili*, is called the *South-Sea*; because it lies towards the antarctic pole, from whence the south wind blows, in opposition to the north, which reigns in the ocean as far as the arctic pole; so that a south wind is esteemed favourable in *Chili*, as the north wind is in *Europe*; which made *Ovalle* call the *Europeans* sons of the north; and the natives of south *America*, children of the south. The *South-Sea* is also called the *Pacific Ocean*, on account of that constant serenity of weather, which reigns there from four degrees to thirty or thirty-five degrees of south latitude, along the greater parts of the coasts of *Chili* and *Peru*; as also indefinitely from the *American* shore westward. But it might also have been

been called the *Pacific Ocean*, on account of the singular tranquility of its navigation; which *Ovalle* says, is seldom interrupted by other *Europeans*: though, both before, and since his time, the *English* and *Dutch*, have frequently made the *Spaniards* sensible that they could navigate in these seas, and convince them of their insecurity.

VASCO NUNEZ, on the 25th of *September*, 1513, formally took possession of the *South-Sea*, and all the countries bordering upon it, for the crown of *Castile*. However, *Herrera* observes, that the motive which induced *Magellan* to call this the *Pacific Ocean*, was, because here was not, in all that element, a more spacious career for the winds and tide; and because there reigns so strong and steady a *levant* between the tropics, that the seamen, for several days together, have no occasion to hand their sails, or the steersman to move his helm; sailing through these extensive seas as if they were passing along a river or canal.

THE most frequent navigations of the *South-Sea* are from *Peru* to *Panama*, and from thence to new *Spain*, and the *Philippines*: but those from *Peru* to *Chili*, are less used: by which it appears, that the greatest part of the commerce carried on in the *South-Sea*, is between the tropics, where the sun has so much force, as to keep the winds from being furious, and from making such continued storms as are raised without the tropics, and in parts nearer the pole. Upon this account, and as there is never any winter in these climates, they might also call it the *Pacific Sea*; because they experienced the contrary effects to what they found in the north sea, where most of the navigations
are

are out of the tropics ; therefore, as the sun has less power, the winter predominates, and raises terrible storms. However, *Ovalle* says, the *South-Sea* does not deserve the name of *Pacific* southwards beyond the tropic of *Capricorn* ; because navigators undergo great hardships between 26 and 53 degrees of north latitude : for, as soon as the winter begins, the sea cannot be navigated without manifest danger ; the storms being nothing inferior to those in the north sea ; and from about the island of *Chiloe*, in 43 degrees, the sea is very dangerous in summer. According to *Dampier*, storms and hurricanes are likewise frequently met with to the northward of the tropic of *Cancer*. The same author also says, that they have no rain or dark clouds in what is properly called the *Pacific Ocean*, though it is often so thick and hazy, as to hinder an observation of the sun with a quadrant ; and there are frequently, in the morning, thick mists that wet a little ; but there are no tempests, tornadoes, or hurricanes : yet, north of the equator, they are met with in this sea, as well as in the *Atlantic Ocean*.

As for the product made by the industry of the inhabitants, it consists peculiarly in the breed of their cattle of all kinds ; whose tallow, hides, and dried flesh, are sent to *Lima* ; where, having first retained the necessary proportion for themselves, which is about twenty thousand quintals of tallow every year for that city, and hides accordingly, the merchants distribute the rest all over *Peru* : the hides, particularly, are carried up to *Potosi*, and all that inland tract of mines where most of their cloathing comes from *Chili* ; they are also carried to *Pa-*

nama, *Carthagena*, and other parts of that continent; some of this trade extending itself likewise to *Tucuman* and *Buenos Ayres*, and from thence to *Brasil*.

THE second product is the cordage and tackling, with which all the ships of the *South Seas* are furnished from *Chili*; as also the match for fire arms, with which all the *Spanish* garrisons along the coast are provided from those parts: for hemp grows no where in the *Spanish West-Indies*, but in *Chili*: and there is also pack-thread exported, with other smaller cordage.

THE third product consists of mules, which are sent to *Potosi*, through the desert of *Aracama*.

THE fourth product is the cocoa-nuts, which are the fruit of the palm-trees; and are not, indeed, produced by industry, but grow wild and thick in the mountains, without any cultivation. Almonds, and the product of gardens, which are not found in *Peru*, are likewise carried thither with great profit. *Ovalle* says, when he came to *Lima*, he observed that the anniseed which had been bought at *Chili* for two pieces of eight, was sold there for twenty; and the cummin seed, bought at twenty, was sold for fourscore; which makes merchants very willing to trade to those parts, as they hope to grow rich in a small time; and this increases the riches of *Chili*, by drawing thither every day men with good stocks. The gains made this way are so considerable, that a man who has about forty thousand crowns to employ in land, flocks, and slaves to take care of them, may every year have a revenue of ten or twelve thousand
crowns;

crowns ; which is a gain of twenty-five per cent. obtained very lawfully, and without any subjection to the dangers of the seas ; for those, who will run the hazards of that element, gain much more ; and the merchants, by many commodities, get a hundred, two hundred, nay, three hundred per cent. in a navigation of about three weeks, which is the time usually employed from *Cbili* to *Lima*. Besides, it is very seldom that any storms are felt in that voyage ; or, at least, not any that endanger the loss of the ships. The greatest danger proceeds from the avarice of the owners and merchants ; who, trusting to the tranquility of those seas, especially as they sail all the way from *Cbili* to *Lima* before the wind, load up to the mid mast. *Ovalle* says, this is not exaggeration ; because he has seen them go out of the port with provisions for the voyage, and other necessaries, as high as the ropes that held the masts : though the royal officers are present, to hinder the ships from being over-loaded. However, there are many goods left behind in the magazines of the port ; for the land is so productive of every thing, that the only misfortune of it, is to want a vent for its product, which is enough to supply another *Lima*, or another *Potosi*.

UPON this foundation, it is generally affirmed, that no country in *America* has a more solid establishment than *Cbili* : for, in proportion to the increase of the inhabitants in *Peru*, *Cbili* must also increase in riches, since it is able to supply any great consumption ; and yet have enough for its own, in all kinds of corn, wine, flesh, oil, salt, fruits, pulse, wool, flax, hides, tallow, leather,

ropes, timber, medicinal remedies, pitch, fish of all kinds, metals of all sorts, and amber. There is no silk in *Chili*; and the *Spanish* writers say, it is to be wished that it may never get there, except for ornament to the altars; because it has already impoverished the country, as the *Spaniards* go to great expence in rich cloaths; particularly the women, whose dress is not inferior to the ladies of *Madrid*, or other parts.

THE wax likewise comes from *Europe*; though there are bees which make both honey and wax. Pepper, and other *East-India* spices, come from abroad; though there is a kind of spice which supplies the want of them very well: and some authors say, that in the streights of *Magellan*, there is good cinnamon; as also that, on those coasts, there are trees of a most fragrant smell in their bark, having a taste like pepper, but of a more poignant favour.

THROUGHOUT the whole province, the herbage and the fishing are in common, as also hunting, with the woods for fuel and timber; and the same is practised as to the salt mines. Besides, there is no imposition on trade; every one being free to transport what goods he pleases, either within or without the kingdom.

SECTION V.

An account of the three grand divisions of CHILI : with a particular description of their cities, and principal towns ; their situation, government, and trade.

IT is now proper to proceed to the geographical description of this country ; which is entirely under the government of its president : the vice-roy of *Peru* seldom interfering with this province, as it is at so great a distance from *Lima*. For the more easy distribution of justice, it is divided into three quarters, or provinces ; which are subdivided into thirteen jurisdictions.

I. THE most southerly province is the bishoprick of *IMPERIAL*, or of *CONCEPTION*, which extends from $46^{\circ} 20'$ to the river *Maule*, in about 35 degrees of south latitude : the climate of this province being much like that of *Spain*.

II. THE bishoprick of *St. JAGO*, or *CHILI PROPER*, extends from the river *Maule*, to beyond that of *Copiapo*, between 25 and 26 degrees of south latitude ; which, as well as that of *Imperial*, lies between the *South-Sea*, and the *Cordillera* mountains ; being what is properly called *Chili*.

III. THE province of *CUYO*, or *CHICUITO*, beyond the mountains, which bounds it on the west : but how far it extends eastwards, towards *Paraguay*, and part of *Terra Magellanica*, is unknown.

I. THE bishoprick, or district of *IMPERIAL*, contains the following considerable cities, sea-port towns, and other places.

1st. THE city of *Imperial*, which gives the name to the bishoprick, is situated in 72 degrees, 15 minutes of west longitude, and 38 degrees 30 minutes of south latitude; in one of the most agreeable spots in the whole country, on a pleasant river, anciently called *Cauten*, and now *Imperial*, from the city. It is about 130 miles distant from *Conception*, 10 or 12 from the sea, 330 from the city of *St. Jago*, and 70 north from *Baldivia*. The territory belonging to this city is very fruitful; bearing corn, with all sorts of fruits and pulse: though the black grapes never ripen so kindly as the white ones, and the muscadines. The country is partly hills, and partly vallies; the hills being of a gentle and easy ascent, with good pastures, and shelter for cattle: nor does the ground require much watering; having frequent and large dews that fertilize it. This city was a bishop's see, and began to increase at first very much, on account of the excellency of its soil and situation; so that it would, probably, have become a very considerable place, if it had not been destroyed by the *Indians*; whereupon the episcopal see was removed to the city of *Conception*.

THE river *Imperial* is large; it runs a great way up into the country; and the banks of it are very well inhabited by *Indians*: but its mouth affords no good harbour for ships of any burthen; because of the flats, which are only about three fathoms and a half in depth.

2^d. THE city of *Conception*, otherwise called *Penco*, from the *Indian* name of the place, is seated on the edge of the sea, at the bottom of a bay of the same name, on the east side of it, in 73 degrees

degrees 15 minutes of west longitude, and 36 degrees 20 minutes of south latitude, 140 miles south of *St. Jago*. It was founded by *Peter Baldivia*, the conqueror of *Chili*, after he had subdued the neighbouring *Indians*: but the *Indians* afterwards destroyed it, under *Caupolican*; and it was rebuilt by *Mendoza*.

At this time, there are no remains of any fortification; the town being open on all sides, and commanded by five eminences, among which that of the *Hermitage* advances almost to the middle, and overlooks it all. There is no other defence but one low battery, on the edge of the sea; which commands only the anchoring place before the town, being a good quarter of a league from it, to the north-west: nor is this want of fortifications made up by men, and able officers.

THE *maestre de campo*, or colonel, is a general officer for all martial affairs without the town; being commonly one of the inhabitants, who has no experience, and whom the president of *Chili* appoints for three years. Under him is a lieutenant-general to the president, a major, and captains: but the troops he commands are not numerous; for the whites cannot make a body of two thousand men, and those very ill armed, both in the town and country about it.

THE militia consists of two companies of foot, and some horse; which were all formerly in the king's pay, who allowed money for the maintaining of three hundred and fifty men, as well for the defence of the town, as of the advanced posts and garrisons: but when *Frezier* was there, in 1712, that pay had failed for several years, and

all things were in disorder; the soldiers having been obliged to disperse themselves up and down to get their living; so that if the *Indians* should have an inclination to revolt, they would find the *Spaniards* in a defenceless condition.

THE incursions of the *Indians* have occasioned the removing of the royal court of chancery, which was established at *Conception*, in the year 1567, to the city of *St. Jago*. Since *Philip V.* ascended the throne of *Spain*, there has been only one *oidor*, or judge, of the court, who performs the functions of governor, and is the chief in the administration of justice: the court is composed of six *regidores*, or aldermen, two *alcaldes* in the nature of bailiffs, one royal ensign, an *alguazil mayor*, or head serjeant, and one depositary general: all which places are elective, and continue only a year.

WHEN the *Indians* possessed themselves of *Imperial*, the city of *Conception* became the see of a bishop, who is suffragan to the archbishop of *Lima*, the capital of *Peru*: but his chapter consists only of two canons, and some priests; who are most of them ignorant of classical learning.

FATHER *Feuillee*, who resided some time in this city, gives the following description of it. It is seated in a little valley, called *Penco*, on the sea-shore; having, on the east, high mountains, from which descend little rivers, that run across the town. On the north, it has the entrance of the bay; the bay itself on the west; and the river *Biobio* on the south. The streets, like those of all the towns in this new world, are drawn by a line; and most of
the

the houses are built with earth, in the form of oblong squares; only one story high, and covered with pantiles: they are large, but ill furnished; the inhabitants still feeling the effects of the ill usage they have received from the native *Indians*, who are such irreconcilable enemies to the *Spaniards*, that they have plundered and burnt this town three or four times. Each house has a garden belonging to it, well furnished with all sorts of fruit-trees, which produce such a prodigious quantity of fruit, that they are obliged to thin them, otherwise the branches would break, nor could the fruit come to maturity.

THERE are six monasteries in this city. Towards the middle of the town, there is a large square, on the south-side of which stands the parish church. On the east side stood the bishop's palace; and on the two other sides are shops, where the women go in the night time to buy such necessaries as they want for their families; it being against the custom of this country for women of any reputation to go abroad in the day; which is a very singular, though considerable abuse.

THE island of *Quiriquina* lies at the mouth of the bay of *Conception*; being somewhat lower than the continent, with which it forms two passages into the bay. That to the W. S. W. is not very good for large ships, though passable in case of necessity; but, unless well known, it is dangerous venturing along the ridge of rocks, which advances far towards the middle of it. The north-east passage is half a league wide, and clear of any danger. The bay itself is two leagues wide from east to west; by three, from north to south.

There

There are only two good anchoring places in winter, to be under shelter from the north winds, which are violent, and much to be apprehended during five months in the year: the one of them is at the south point of *Quiriquina*, in ten or twelve fathom water, a cable's length from the shore; which, though very good, and sheltered from those winds, is not much frequented, because too remote from the town, and from the continent: the other is at the bottom of the bay, near a village called *Talcaguana*, in five or six fathom water; which is the only place of safety, whilst the north wind prevails: but, in summer, ships may anchor before the town, north-west from the battery: and boats may go easily ashore; though in winter it is quite otherwise. There is every where conveniencies for wooding and watering; as also for building of ships.

THE country in which the town of *Conception* is seated, abounds in all things; not only to supply the necessaries of life, but also containing infinite wealth. There is gold found in several of the adjacent parts, especially about 36 miles to the eastward, at a place called *Estancia del Rey*, or the *King's Station*; where, by washing, they get those bits of gold, called by the *Spaniards* pepitas, or grains: some of which have weighed several ounces, and were extraordinary fine. Formerly much was got near *Angol*, which is about 72 miles off; and if the country was inhabited by a laborious people, it might be had in a thousand parts, where they are satisfied there are good washing places; that is, lands where gold is got by only washing the earth in water.

THE security of the town consists in its trade, which keeps a considerable number of ships in the bay, and intimidates the *Indians* from attempting any thing against the inhabitants; who, from a confidence of this, live in ease and indolence.

THERE is a beneficial trade carried on by the inhabitants of the city of *Conception*, with the *Indians* behind them, who trade with the *Spaniards* in a very particular manner; though they have never negociated a peace with *Spain*. These *Indians* are called *Aucaes*, and inhabit the mountains, where they retain the primitive customs and manners of their ancestors. When a *Spaniard* goes to trade with them, he addresses himself to the cazique, or chief; who, on perceiving the stranger, cries out, *What, are you come?* the *Spaniard* answers, *Yes, I am come*: then the cazique says, *Well! what have you brought me?* the merchant answers, *A present*; and the prince replies, *Then you are welcome*. He then provides a lodging for the merchant near his own, where all his family go to visit the stranger, in expectation of some present; and, in the mean time, a horn is sounded to give notice to the *Indians* who are abroad, that a merchant is arrived. This soon assembles them together about the merchant, who exhibits his treasure, consisting of knives, scissars, pins, needles, ribbands, small looking-glasses, and other toys; which the *Indians* carry away, after settling the price, without giving any thing in exchange: but, after a certain time is elapsed, the horn is sounded again, by the direction of the cazique; when the *Indians* immediately return, and punctually perform their respective engagements: the goods they deal in being

being cattle, skins of wild beasts, and some gold; but they bring very small quantities of the latter; as they are sensible how dear the possession of that metal cost their ancestors and their neighbours.

3d. *BALDIVIA*, or *Valdivia*, is situated in 72 degrees, of west longitude, and 39 degrees, 40 min. of south latitude; 300 miles south of *Yago*, and 140 miles N. E. of the island of *Chiloé*. It was first founded by *Peter Baldivia*, in the year 1552, in a plain about 4 or 5 fathoms above the surface of the sea; near which was a fort, to keep the *Indians* in awe: but those people were filled with such resentment at the tyrannical government of the *Spaniards*, that they took up arms, killed *Baldivia*, and emancipated themselves from the yoke of *Spanish* slavery. They also plundered and destroyed the town; but it was afterwards rebuilt a little higher up the land, on an eminence at the point of a peninsula, formed by two rivers; which, with the islands before it, make it the most secure and spacious harbour on the coast of *Chili*.

THE town is inclosed with walls, built with earth, and defended by about twelve pieces of cannon, which are sixteen pounders: but it has only one parish church, and a convent of jesuits.

THE harbour, or port, of this town, is so advantageously situated, that it has engaged the *Spaniards* to build several forts to defend the entrance of it against strangers; because they look upon it as the key of the *South Seas*.

THE passage up to the town, for great ships, is on the east-side, being about six leagues: but it is not above two leagues from the sea by another passage on the west-side, where the small vessels go
up:

up: and Sir *John Narborough* observes, that three rivers fall into the harbour, though they are not navigable much beyond the town.

THE *Dutch* were desirous of settling here, in 1643, to secure a convenient place, for facilitating their entering the *South-Seas*. And accordingly they made themselves masters of it: but want, diseases, and more particularly the death of their general, having weakened them, they were obliged to retire; leaving behind them their baggage, and thirty pieces of cannon, upon advice of the succours sent against them by the vice-roy of *Peru*.

THE *English*, under Sir *John Narborough*, visited this port, by the command of king *Charles II.* in 1670; who was of opinion, that the town might be easily taken: and commodore *Anson*, in 1741, intended to attack it, in pursuance of the resolution of a council of war, and an article contained in his majesty's instructions to him, to endeavour to secure some port in the *South Seas*, where the ships of the squadron might be careened and refitted. As *Baldivia* is the principal frontier of the district of *Chili*, lord *Anson* proposed, that the reduction of so important a place, should be his first attempt, after his arrival in the *South Seas*: in consequence of which, new instructions were given to the captains of the squadron; whereby, though they were still directed, in case of separation, to make the best of their way to the island of *Nuestra Senora del Socorro*; yet they were to cruize off that island only ten days; from whence, if not joined by the commodore, they were to proceed, and cruize off the harbour of *Baldivia*, making the land between the latitudes of 40° , and $40^{\circ} 30'$; taking care to
keep

keep to the southward of the port; and, if in fourteen days, they were not joined by the rest of the squadron, they were then to quit this station, and to direct their course to the island of *Juan Fernandez*; after which, they were to regulate their further proceedings by their former orders: but the total and almost instantaneous separation of the squadron, in passing round the island of *Terra de Fuego*, which was owing to the unseasonable time of the year when this gallant commander was sent upon the expedition, prevented his designed attack upon *Baldivia*.

THE white people of *Peru*, and *Chili*, who are banished for their crimes, are sent to this port, as well as to the town; where they are employed about the fortifications, and other services of the garrison, which is composed of none but such people, who are made soldiers and officers, even during the time of their punishment. The vice-roy is annually to send three hundred thousand pieces of eight, or about fifty-three thousand, five hundred pounds sterling, to keep up the fortifications, and maintain the garrison: yet, this sum is not exactly furnished; however, the president of *Chili* never fails to send a good supply every year, of which the governors make so considerable an advantage, that this post is the most coveted of any, on account of the revenue. Though it ought to be disagreeable, by the ill company there is in the garrison; as also on account of the rain which continues six months every winter.

THE number of inhabitants in this city may amount to between two and three thousand: but its commerce is not so considerable now as formerly;

merly; because several gold mines in its neighbourhood are not wrought at present. However, there are still eight or ten vessels, of between four and five hundred tons each, which are employed in carrying on the trade between this port and *Lima*, where they export hides, goat skins tanned, *Cordouan* leather, salt meat, corn, and some gold; bringing back chocolate, spices, sugar, and all sorts of *European* goods.

4th. *OSORNO* is an inland town, situated in about 71 degrees of west longitude, and 39 degrees of south latitude, 50 miles south of *Baldivia*, on the northern bank of the river *Bueno*; and as many from the sea coast to the east.

THE adjacent country is not fruitful, and produces few of the necessaries of life: but it is rich in gold mines; for which reason the town is very populous. *De Noort* says, that this town lies in about 42 degrees of south latitude; is larger than *Baldivia*, has a *Spanish* governor, and that they make here woollen stuffs, and linnen cloth. *De Laet* adds, that within the limits of the territory of the town, there are above two hundred thousand *Indians*, whom *Corneille* calls *Chauracabis*, who pay tribute to the *Spaniards*, and serve them without any reward. To the eastward of this town, there is a volcano in the *Cordillera* mountains.

5th. *VILLA RICA*, is about 55 miles distant from *Baldivia*, towards the north-east; and about nine or ten from the *Cordillera* mountains, being situated on the western bank of a lake called *Mallabauquen* by the *Indians*, which is three leagues long from east to west, and two broad from north to south. The soil about this city is very fruitful; being

being a clay, of which they make very good bricks. Most of the inhabitants work in wool, and make tolerable cloth; as also linnen waist-coats.

THE *Pebuenches*, an *Indian* nation, inhabit the foot of the mountains, and live chiefly by hunting, in which exercise they are prodigiously dexterous: but most of their country is very cold, and produces hardly any corn or wine.

6th. *ANGOL*, or *Villa Nueva de los Infantes*, is situated in 71 degrees of west longitude, and 37 degrees of south latitude, 130 miles N. of *Baldivia*, and about 32 from the *Cordillera*. It stands in a large open plain, where the land is very fertile, and fruits come to great maturity. There is good wine; as also fine raisins dried in the sun, figs, and other dried fruits; with a great quantity of tall cypresses, yielding a very sweet-scented wood, of which *Herrera* says, they make a gum lac. The great river *Biobio* runs by it, serving it for a ditch on the south-side; and on the north-side another pleasant rivulet comes running from hills of a moderate height, turning many mills for the use of the city.

THE *Spaniards* have some other forts in this part of the country; as that of *St. Peter*, on the south side of the river *Biobio*, three leagues from *Conception*. Higher up are *Talquemakuida*, *St. Christopher's*, *St. Joanna*, and *Ycombel*: but those of *Boroa*, *Coloe*, *Repocura*, *Tucapel*, and even *Imperial*, have been long destroyed and abandoned.

II. IN *CHILI PROPER*, or the bishoprick of *St. JAGO*, are the following considerable cities, and principal places.

1st. *St.*

1st. *St. JAGO*, or *St. James the Apostle*, the capital of all *Chili*, is situated in 69 degrees 40 minutes of west longitude, and 33 degrees 12 minutes of south latitude, about 240 miles from *Conception*, towards the north-east, at the west foot of the *Cordillera* mountains, from which it is about 6 miles distant; and about 54 miles east of the *Pacific Ocean*; standing in a beautiful plain, of about 75 miles in extent, and watered by three rivers, the principal of which is the *Maypo*, or *Maypocho*, on whose banks the *Indian* villages are very numerous.

It was founded, in the year 1541, by *Peter Baldivia*, who caused the plan of it to be marked out in squares, like a draught-board, by the same measure as those of *Lima* in *Peru*, that is, 150 varas, or *Spanish* yards, or 68 fathoms on each side; from whence came the measure called *quadra*, which they use in this country to divide the cultivated land, as if it were into acres. Each of those squares of houses was divided into four parts, called by them *solares*, for every person to have a commodious apartment: though, in process of time, that space was farther divided into several other parts; yet they have still so much room, that there is scarce a house in the town without a court before, and a garden behind.

THE whole city is so happily watered, that, by the conveniency of canals cut from the river *Maypocho*, their gardens are not only plentifully supplied, but the inhabitants can also keep their streets continually clean and cool, by turning a stream of water into any of them, whenever they think proper.

THE streets are laid with the four cardinal points of the horizon; north, south, east, and west; being five fathoms wide, exactly in a line, and neatly paved with small stones, divided in the nature of furrows, by others that are larger, crossing both ways at equal distances, and leaving in the middle about two feet and a half of running water, to wash or cool the citizens when they please. Those which run east and west, receive their waters from the first canals of the river; and those which cross from north to south, from the canals that run in the middle of the squares of houses, across the gardens and the streets, under little bridges, from whence it is caused to flow out. But, if it was not for this relief, the gardens would produce nothing for want of rain, during eight months in the year; whereas, by this means, the city affords all the delights of the country, in relation to fruit and herbs, having a cool shade in the day, and at night the sweet scents of orange flowers, with many others, which perfume the houses.

THE earthquakes, which are frequent here, have much endamaged the city; particularly, those of 1647, and 1657; the first of which was so violent, that it almost overturned the whole town, and left such unwholesome vapours in the air, that all the inhabitants died, except about three or four hundred. Since that time, there has been some alteration in the plan, by the enlarging of monasteries; some of which have extended themselves beyond the strait lines: however, it is still so open, and well distributed, for the convenience of publick and private persons; that, if the houses were raised above the level of the streets,

streets, and of a better structure, it would be a very agreeable city.

IN the centre of the city is the royal square, called *Placa Real*; the area of which is 4096 fathoms, that is, each side is 64 fathoms, or 384 feet, besides the breadth of four streets; so that there are eight avenues leading into the square, in the middle of which is a fountain, with a brass basin. The west side contains the cathedral, and the bishop's palace: on the north stands that of the president, the royal-court, the council-house, and the prison: the south side is a continued row of piazzas, or uniform arches, with very commodious shops under them, for the conveniency of merchants; as also a gallery over them, to see the bull feast: and on the east side are the houses of the principal merchants.

THE structure of the houses is the same as is used throughout all *Chili*; being only a ground floor, built with unburnt bricks; excepting that here they are handsomer than in other places, and the churches richer in gilding; some of which are built of free stone; and also some of a kind of pebbles brought from a small rock, at the east-end of the city, called *St. Lucy's Hill*; from whose summit there is a full view of the city and parts adjacent, which affords a very agreeable landscape.

THE president, or governor of *Chili*, has his usual residence at *St. Yago*: he is subordinate to the viceroy of *Peru*; but the distance very much lessens the subordination; so that he may be looked upon in *Chili* as a vice-roy himself, for the seven years his government continues.

THE governor presides in the royal court, which is composed of four oidores, or judges; two fiscals, or attornies general, one of whom has the charge of protecting the *Indians*, and the affairs of the croisade; also an alguazil mayor di corte, or head serjeant of the court; the chancery secretary, reporters, and others. There lies no appeal from a judgment, upon a writ of error, or review upon a royal decision, which take cognizance only of matters of importance, or such as have been decided in other courts; unless it is to the royal council of the *Indies*.

OTHER matters are decided in the council house, which is composed of two alcaldes, or judges, a royal ensign, an alguazil mayor, or head serjeant, and six rigidores, or aldermen.

THE ecclesiastical state, as well as the secular, has a dependance on *Lima*; but the power of the bishop is very much circumscribed. There are eight monasteries of men; three of franciscans, two of jesuits, one of the order of mercy, one of the brethren of *St. John* of God, and one of dominicans; which are the only orders established throughout all *Chili*. There are also five nunneries; and all these communities are numerous, some of them containing above two hundred persons.

THE tribunal of the inquisition of *Chili*, is also settled at *St. Jago*, where the commissary general resides, with his officers, called familiares, who are the informers; and other commissaries are dispersed throughout all the towns and villages subordinate to him; who apply themselves to the discovery of such unhappy persons, whom they think proper to subject to the barbarous proceedings of this inhuman inquisition. THE

THE number of inhabitants may be about eight thousand whites, and between twenty and thirty thousand *Indians* and *Mulattoes*. The citizens are wealthy, and live much at their ease; many of them retiring here from *Baldivia*, the *Conception*, *Valparaiso*, and other places, when they have acquired estates by trade: besides, there are some of the citizens who are continually accumulating fortunes by being concerned in the gold mines at *Tiltil*, which are about half way between *St. Jago*, and the sea; as also in several *lavaderoes* nearer the city, which are so very rich, that sometimes they yield pieces of gold of an ounce weight, and twenty-three caracts fine.

IN the mountains immediately behind the city, particularly in that called *St. Christopher Lampanquio*, there have been mines of gold, silver, iron, copper, lead, and tin, discovered, about and since the beginning of the present century: but they are neglected, either for want of hands, or because they are found to yield less profit than some others. As for the *Indians*, they deal little in these metals on their own account; contenting themselves with raising corn, and feeding cattle, of both of which they have great plenty: but they are very far from being rich; for, even in a country where money is so plenty, their wheat, which is very good, will not yield more than a groat a bushel.

2d. *VALPARAISO*, or *Val Parayso*, is a town, situated on the *South-Sea*, in 71 degrees 30 minutes of west longitude, and 32 degrees 35 minutes of south latitude, about 90 miles north-west of *St. Jago*, which it serves in nature of a port.

THIS is one of the most considerable havens in these seas; being constantly frequented by vessels from *Callao* and *Panama*, which come here to lade corn, and are of considerable burthen: therefore, experienced pilots are always to be met with here for any part of the coast, and especially to the northward.

ACCORDING to *Frezier*, ships generally run in so close to the shore, that they have three anchors on the land, made fast to stones, or piles; at which distance they have still eight or ten fathom water. He observes, that this way of making fast is good; because in summer, every day regularly, about noon, the breezes come up at south-west and south, so strong, that they make the best anchors give way: however, care must be taken of a shoal, that is within a cable's length of the shore, near the battery called *Castillo Blanco*, or the *White Castle*, on which there is not above thirteen or fourteen feet water at the ebb. In other respects, he says, the bay is very safe, and ships may turn and anchor every where, from fifty to eight fathom water: but they must take care, when they take a trip towards the *Siete Hermanas*, or *Seven Sisters*, that is to the eastward, not to draw nearer the shore than two cables length and a half, opposite to a little running water, crossed by a great reddish road; in which place there is a shore, where there is no more than two fathom and a half water. Ships generally anchor only in that nook of the road, which is before the fort, for the conveniency of trade, and their own security: yet, the same author says, that road is quite bad in winter; because the north winds, which blow in at the mouth
without

without any opposition, make the sea there so boisterous, that ships have been sometimes forced ashore. The south winds are no less violent there in summer: but, as they come over the land, they make no sea; and if they should force ships from their anchors, they can only be drove out to sea.

THE fort is of little signification; both because it is ill built; and because the road it defends is near other creeks, which afford the same conveniencies as here; particularly the creek of *Quintero*, which is defenceless, and but five leagues from *Valparaiso*. It is true, that the bay of *Valparaiso*, as being nearest to the capital, is the most frequented in *Chili*; for which reason it has been thought fit to secure it against the insults of the *English* and *Dutch*, who have often ranged along those coasts.

FORMERLY, there was only a little battery, level with the water; but they have since built the great fortress, at the foot of the mountain. It stands on an eminence of an indifferent height, crossed towards the south-east and north-east by two streams, which form two natural ditches, between twenty and twenty-five fathom deep, sunk down almost to the level of the sea: so that it is absolutely parted from the neighbouring eminences, which are a little higher. The side next the sea is naturally so steep, that there is no going up without much difficulty; and on the land side, or next the high mountain, it is defended by a ditch, which crosses from one stream to the other, and thus cuts off the enclosure of the fortress something near to a square. As the situation of the place would not

permit the making of a regular fortification, it cannot properly be called any other than walls of entrenchments, following the compass of the height, which flank one another but very little, and sometimes not at all. At the middle of the wall, which is above the town, there is a small redan, or indented work, of seven fathoms in front, with a guerite, or centinel's box. The opposite side, above the stream of *St. Augustin*, is only defended by the flank of a demi-bastion, which forms a dead angle; the face whereof makes too oblique a defence. The side next the mountain consists of a curtain of twenty-six fathoms, and of two demi-bastions of twenty fathoms face, and eleven flank; so that the line of defence is but of forty-five fathoms. All this part is built with brick, raised twenty-five feet in height, on a beam, being a small space of ground, between the wall and the moat. The depth of the ditch is about ten feet, and its breadth three fathoms towards the saliant angles, whence it has its defence to the angle of the epaule, or shoulder of the bastion. It is cut in a soft rock, which has been made a little steep at the two ends, to render it inaccessible by way of the streams. The parapets are but two feet and a half thick, and the rest of the enclosure of the place is only a piece of masonry made of rubbish, and very weak. There is no rampart, but on the land side, to cover the fortrefs, and hinder its being commanded by the mountain, which rises gently: but the greatest misfortune is, that the flanks can be battered in reverse, that is, on the backs; and the curtains and faces enfiladed, or scoured along their whole length from neighbouring eminences,

eminences, within musket shot; so that it is very easy to render them useless.

AT the foot of the high fort, adjoining to the town, is a battery of nine pieces of cannon, raised thirty feet high, on a key of the same height, whence they can fire upon the anchoring place level with the water: but, besides that it has no defence from the position, it is commanded by all the parts about. This is called *Castillo Blanco*, or the *White Castle*; because it has been whitened, that it may be seen at a distance. Behind this battery are the gate, the stairs, and the ascent, which lead from the town to the fortress, along a way covered with a piece of wall; and higher up a boyau, or branch of a trench, the epaulement whereof does not cover the gate of the body of the place, which is all open to the road. In the middle of the curtain, or the side next the mountain, is another gate, to which they climb up out of the ditch, for want of a draw-bridge; and this way the conduit of water passes, drawn from the stream of *St. Augustin* for the upper fort, which might be easily cut off; when the garrison could have water no where but from the rivulet, which runs from the bottom of the stream of *St. Francis*, through the middle of the town.

AT the foot of the fortress, in a little jut, or narrow space, is the town of *Valparaiso*, consisting of about a hundred poor houses, without any order, and of several heights; stretching out a long the sea, where are the granaries, or store-houses for corn: but, though it is so small, it has a parish church, and two monasteries. It contains about one hundred and fifty families; but there are scarce
thirty

thirty of them white; the rest being black, mulattoes, and mestizoes. The number of men able to bear arms is very inconsiderable: though the neighbouring dwellings or farms, upon the first signal from the fortrefs, furnish six troops of horse, mounted at their own expence; most of whom have no other arms but swords. However, upon notice given by the centinels kept along the coast, they are very regular in drawing together; at least, some parts of those troops, when a ship appears, which is not thought to be *Spanish* built.

FATHER *Feuillee* says, that the vessels from *Lima* arrive here usually in *October*, and return in *March*, to avoid the north winds; furnishing all the harbours of *Chili* with *European* goods, such as cloth, silk, and other things, which the *Chilians* may want.

SHIPS sometimes lie at the port of *Quintero*, for conveniency, till they can get a loading from *Valparaiso*, which consists chiefly in corn; and such vast quantities are sent to market, that the magistrates have a discretionary power of ordering as much as they think proper to be thrown into the sea, that the remainder may sell the better.

THE equipment of the squadron by the *British* government, in the year 1740, to enter the *South-Seas*, at first gave the *Spaniards* very terrible apprehensions: but the separation of this force soon dissipated their fears; for the squadron, which originally consisted of six ships, and 961 men, was reduced to three ships, and 335 men, when commodore *Anson* arrived at *Juan Fernandez*, in *June* 1741. However, this brave officer, though he was disabled from executing what he intended,

was

was determined to distress the *Spaniards* as much as possible; for which purpose, he began to cruize in these seas, and, on the 14th of *September* following, took a prize called the *Nuestra Senora del Monte Carmelo*, commanded by *Don Manuel Zamorra*, burden 450 tons, having fifty-three sailors, whites and blacks, and twenty-five passengers on board. The cargo of this ship consisted chiefly of sugar, and great quantities of blue cloth made in the province of *Quito*, somewhat resembling *English* coarse broad-cloths, but inferior in quality: they had besides several bales of a coarser sort of cloth of different colours, somewhat like *Colchester* bays, called by the *Spaniards*, *Pánnia de Tierra*; with a few bales of cotton, and some tobacco; as also some trunks of wrought plate, and 23 serons of dollars, each weighing upwards of two hundred pounds weight avoirdupois. She was bound from *Callao* in *Peru*, to the port of *Valparaiso*, and proposed to have returned from thence loaded with corn, and *Cbili* wine, some gold, dried beef, and small cordage, which is converted into larger rope at *Callao*. The commodore returned with his prize to *Juan Fernandez*; being informed by the prisoners, that the *Spanish* squadron fitted out to pursue him, under the command of admiral *Pizarro*, had met with greater misfortunes than his own; not so much as one ship being able to come into the *South Seas*: therefore, the crew of the *Centurion* flattered themselves, that they might meet with some valuable captures, and thereby indemnify themselves for the incapacity they were under of attempting any of the considerable settlements on shore; especially as the *Wager* was lost,
which

which had on board some field pieces for land service, some cohorn mortars, and several kinds of artillery, stores, and pioneers tools, intended for the enterprize against *Baldivia*. The commodore was assured, from the information of his prisoners, that, whatever his success might be, as to the prizes he might make, he had nothing to fear, weak as he was, from the *Spanish* force in this part of the world: though, at the same time, he discovered he had been in most imminent peril from the enemy, when he least apprehended it, and when his other distresses were at the greatest height. For he learnt, from the letters on board, that *Pizarro*, in the express which he dispatched to the vice-roy of *Peru*, after his return to the river of *Plate*, had intimated to him, that it was possible some part, at least, of the *English* squadron might get round: but that, as he was certain from his own experience, if they arrived in those seas it must be in a very weak and defenceless condition; he advised the vice-roy, in order to be secure at all events, to send what ships of war he had to the southward, where, in all probability, he would intercept the *English* ships singly, before they had an opportunity of touching at any part for refreshment; in which case, he doubted not but the *English* would prove an easy conquest. The vice-roy of *Peru* approved of this advice: he had already fitted out four ships of force at *Callao*; one of 50 guns, two of 40, and one of 24 guns, which were intended to join *Pizarro*, when he arrived on the coast of *Cbili*: but he now stationed three of these off the port of *Conception*, and one of them at the island of *Fernandez*, where they continued

continued cruising for the *English* ships, till the 6th of *June*; when, not seeing any thing of them, and conceiving it to be impossible that they could have kept the seas so long, they quitted their cruize, and returned to *Callao*; fully persuaded that the *English* squadron was either perished, or at least had been driven back.

COMMODORE *Anson* was also informed, that several other merchantmen were bound from *Callao* to *Valparaiso*: upon which, he immediately sent the *Tryal* sloop to cruize off the last mentioned port; separating the other ships, to employ them in distinct cruizes; as he would thereby increase his chance for prizes; as also run a less risque of alarming the coast, and occasioning a discovery. He then ordered the *Gloucester* to proceed to the latitude of 5 degrees south, and to cruize there off the high land of *Paita*, at such a distance from shore as should prevent his being discovered. After which, the commodore left *Juan Fernandez*, to join the *Tryal* sloop in her station off *Valparaiso*, and found she had taken a prize called the *Arranzazu*, of 600 tons, proceeding on the same voyage, and with much the same cargo as the *Carmelo*. The commodore manned this prize, and ordered captain *Saunders* to cruize in her off the high land of *Valparaiso*, keeping it from him N. N. W. at the distance of 14 leagues; to continue on that station 24 days; and then, if not joined by the commodore, to proceed down the coast to *Pisco*, or *Nasca*, where he would be certain to meet him. An embargo along the coast, and the equipment of a squadron from *Callao*, was apprehended by the commodore; upon which, he resolved to
hasten

hasten down to the leeward of *Callao*, to join captain *Mitchel* off *Paita*; that, uniting his strength, they might be able to give the *Spaniards* a warm reception, if they attempted to put to sea: but they were afraid to venture out, and the commodore soon afterwards reduced *Paita*, as will be more particularly mentioned in the division of *Peru*.

3d. *LA SERENA*, or *Coquimbo*, was founded by *Baldivia*, in 1544, and is situated in 71 degrees of west longitude, and 29 degrees 50 min. of south latitude, at the mouth of the river *Coquimbo*, on the *Pacific Ocean*, 260 miles north of *St. Jago*.

THIS city is seated at the lower part of the vale of *Coquimbo*, a quarter of a league from the sea, on a little rising ground, about four or five fathoms high; which nature has formed like a terrace, extending from north to south in a strait line along the town, the space of about a quarter of a league. The first street forms a very pleasant walk, which commands a prospect of the whole bay, and the neighbouring country: it goes on still in a line, turning away from the west to the east, along a little vale full of evergreens; being most of them myrtles, called by the *Spaniards*, *arrayanes*: and, in the midst of those pleasant groves, the river of *Coquimbo* runs winding about. This river is almost every where fordable, supplying the town with water, and freshening the adjacent meadows, after having run from the mountains, where in its passage it fertilizes several vales, whose soil refuses no sort of tillage.

BALDIVIA,

BALDIVIA, who made choice of this pleasant situation, to build a town, which might serve for a retreat in the passage from *Cbili* to *Peru*, being charmed with the deliciousness of the climate, called it *La Serena*, the name of the place of his birth; to which it had more right than any other place in the world; the name signifying the *Serene*: for here there is continually a serene and pleasant sky. The streets are all exactly in a strait line from one end to the other, like *St. Jago*, from east to west, and from north to south. The quarters, or squares they form, are also of the same dimensions; with each a rivulet running through it: but the small number of inhabitants, the foulness of the streets which are not paved, with the meanness of the houses which are made of mud walls, and thatched, make it look like a plain, and the streets like the walks in gardens: for they are set round with fig, orange, olive, palm-trees, and others, which afford an agreeable shade.

THE most considerable part of the city is taken up by two squares, and six monasteries; without reckoning the parish church, and the chapel of *St. Agnes*. But formerly there was a church at *St. Lucy*, on an eminence of the same name, which runs out in a point to the middle of the town; being of the same height as the first terraces, and commanding all the town, on account of the lowness of the houses, which have only a ground floor. Besides, from this eminence, as from an amphitheatre, appears a beautiful landscape, formed from the town, the plain which reaches down to the sea, the bay, and its mouth.

A per-

A perpetual verdure reigns here, unmolested by storms, without disagreeable heat, and free from any inconvenient cold. The fertility of the soil makes the country abound with the necessaries of life, especially corn, wine, and oil, exquisite in their kinds, and excessively cheap. There is a numerous breed of horses, and great plenty of cattle, as also of tame and wild fowl. The partridges are insipid, but the turtle-doves are very delicious; and there are abundance of ducks in a little pool near the port. There is a good fishery in the bay for mullets, pezerayes, soles, and a delicious fish called teffon, which is peculiar to this coast: but there is no good place for casting of a net, because the shore is full of stones.

THE discovery of the mines of *Copiapo*, and the vexations of the corregidores, or chief magistrates, daily contribute towards depopulating the town; for, though those mines are near three hundred miles from *Coquimbo* by land, several families are gone there to settle; so that, at present, there are not above two hundred families, and at most three hundred men fit to bear arms, exclusive of the neighbourhood. But the fertility of the soil keeps abundance of people in the country; particularly in the vales of *Elques*, *Sotaqui*, *Salsipued*, *Andacol*, and *Limari*; from whence they bring corn sufficient to load four or five ships, of about 400 tons burden, to send to *Lima*. They also supply *St. Jago* with great quantities of wine and oil; which are esteemed the best along the coast. These provisions, together with some few hides, tallow, and dried flesh, compose all the trade of the inhabitants of *Coquimbo*, whose indolence
makes

makes them feel the gripe of poverty; though their country is one of the richest parts of the kingdom in all sorts of metal.

THEIR trade for *European* commodities is so inconsiderable, that their annual consumption of such goods seldom amount to twenty-five hundred pounds sterling; which they receive in return for their own merchandize at *Lima*, and principally transport into other parts of *Chili*.

IN winter, when the rains are somewhat plentiful, gold is found in almost all the rivulets that run down from the mountains; and would be found all the year, if the rains were to continue: About thirty miles to the eastward of the town, are the washing places of *Andacol*, where gold is 23 caracts fine; and the work always turns to great advantage, when there is no scarcity of water. The inhabitants affirm, that the earth breeds; that is, that gold is continually growing; because, sixty or eighty years after it has been washed, they find almost as much gold as at first. Besides these washing places, there are so many gold mines, and some of silver, on the adjacent mountains; that they would employ 40,000 men, as *Frezier* was informed by the governor of *Coquimbo*; and they proposed to set up mills there, but wanted labourers.

THE copper mines are also very common, about nine miles east from *Coquimbo*; where they have wrought a long time at a mine, which supplies almost all the coasts of *Chili* and *Peru*, with utensils for the kitchen; though they use more earthen ware, or silver, for this purpose, than copper. The jesuits have another mine, fifteen miles north

from the city, on a mountain called *Cerro Verde*, or *Green Hill*; which is high, and shaped like a fugar-loaf; so that it may serve for a land-mark to the port. There are an infinite number of others, which are neglected for want of sale: and it is affirmed, that there are also mines of iron, and quick-silver.

THE land along the coast, though indifferently high, looks, at 25 or 30 leagues distance out at sea, as if it was overflowed, and the high mountains over it appearing always covered with snow; which is a natural effect of the roundness of the sea, and is sensibly perceived at so small a distance. As soon as a ship has a sight of the bay of *Coquimbo*, it is eight leagues to the southward of the town; when she must keep up with the land to see the mouth of the bay, and get to the windward; the south and south-west always prevailing there, except two or three months in winter. About three quarters of a league to the windward, is the mouth of a little creek, called *La Herredura*, or the *Horseshoe*. Next to the leeward appear three or four rocks; the largest of which, being farthest out at sea, and called *Paxaro Ninno*, is the third part of a league north-west and by north from point *Tortuga*, being the starboard point of the continent that closes the port of *Coquimbo*. To the southward of this rock, is a little island somewhat smaller; between which, and the continent, is a passage of seventeen fathoms of water, but very narrow: whereas the mouth of the bay is two leagues and a half wide, where there is no danger: but, because the winds blow continually from south and south-west, it is convenient to keep close to the starboard point, and run close under the rock, called *Paxara Ninno*, which

which is clear within a boat's length, to gain, at the fewer trips, the good anchoring ground, called the port, which is within a cable's length of the west shore, where they anchor from six to ten fathom water; the bottom being black sand, near a rock ten or twelve foot long, which rises five or six foot above the water, shaped like a tortoise, from which it takes its name. Ships are sheltered from all winds, by closing the starboard, or *Tortuga* point, with the larboard point; so that the land appears on all sides, and there is no rolling sea: however, no more than twenty-five, or thirty ships, can enjoy that benefit. In the port, there is not only the conveniency of riding at anchor very near the shore, as still as in a basin; but also, in case of necessity, a ship of twenty guns may be careened on the *Tortuga* rock, where there is twelve foot water at low-ebb, quite close to it. But, as all conveniencies are seldom found in one port, this has its defects. The most considerable of them is, that ships anchor there a league from the watering place; which is, to the east-north-east, in a rivulet that runs into the sea; and, if it is taken at low-ebb, the water is always somewhat brackish; though it does not appear to be unwholesome: and the second inconvenience is, that there is nothing for fuel, but some bushes, which are only fit to heat an oven; without going into the vale, nine miles from the port.

4th. *GUASCO*, is a port town, situated in about 71 degrees of west longitude, and in $27^{\circ} 50'$ of south latitude, near 80 miles to the north of *La Serena*, according to the maps; though *Dampier* makes it but 10 leagues, or 30 miles. He says, that within the port, is a small round island; and, at the

bottom of the bay, near this island, is a river of fresh water; right against the mouth of which is the common anchoring place. In this port, ships are defended from the south, and south-west winds: the land is pretty even, and at the top of the port is a plain of sand. Off the south-west point of the port, are seven or eight rocks, about which are many shoals, and there is no sailing between them and the main. *Dampier* adds, that the adjacent country is reputed to be well peopled with *Spaniards*: but *Frezier* says, the port is not frequented; because there is no other trade than what is carried on by a private person, who takes copper out of the mines.

.5th. *COPIAPO*, is a town situated in about 70 deg. 30 min. of west longitude, and 27 deg. of south latitude, 500 miles north of *St. Jago*, at the mouth of a river of the same name; which, with an island that lies before it, forms a tolerable harbour. This town is about 180 miles north of *La Serena*: but the country between these places is one of the worst in the world; having neither town or village, tree or shrub, river or brook: so that the cattle upon the road frequently perish for want of refreshment. However, there are several mines of copper and tin in this uninhabitable territory: and, in a mountain on the south-east, there have been found very fine turquoise stones; though, for want of any settlement near it, the farther search of them has been abandoned: for the colds of this country are so great, that the *Indians* of *Peru* are frequently killed by its severity.

THE port of *Caldera* belongs to the town of *Copiapo*; having a road tolerably safe; and would, probably,

probably, be much frequented, if wood and water were not excessively scarce and dear.

COP. IAPO lies fourteen leagues to the eastward of port *Caldera*, and twenty leagues according to the ordinary road, over a miserable country, destitute of all things, either pleasant or convenient; being a place of no great importance till the year 1710, when it began to be considered in another light. A *Spanish* author says, it is now the richest place in the world, and that its foundations are of gold; meaning, that the town stands upon a gold mine, which is excessively rich: however, this is not wrought at present; because they have discovered richer mines, at about six miles distance; from whence they bring the ore on mules to the mills, which are within the town. In 1713, there were six of those mills, which the *Spaniards* call *trapiches*: and, *Frezier* says, they were making a seventh of that sort, which was to be called the royal engine, with hammers and pounders, that can bruise or grind ten times as much as the *trapiches*; that is, six chests a day, each chest yielding about twelve ounces: but they must yield two to pay the cost; and the ounce of gold is sold here for twelve or thirteen pieces of eight cast, or about two pounds, fifteen shillings sterling.

It is uncertain what these mines might produce, if properly managed: but some computation may be formed, from an account given by a *Fleming*, who was employed in working them in the year 1720. The town is open, and the houses stand scattered up and down in a very irregular manner; the inhabitants being about 700, and the persons

employed in the mines 1000 at least. Their mills were then increased to twelve; and, they extracted from the mineral, about thirty thousand ounces of gold in a year, as appeared by the account given in by the inspector of the mines: which gold might be sold on the spot for about fifty shillings an ounce; and consequently these mines annually yield to the value of about eighty thousand pounds sterling.

BESIDES the gold mines, there are several mines of iron, brass, tin, and lead, about *Copiapo*; which the inhabitants have not thought proper to work: though the lead mines, about sixty miles south of the town, are imagined, by some intelligent persons, to be as valuable as the gold ones: because, some people who have visited them, have picked up, on the surface of the earth, several pounds of lapis lazuli, one of the most valuable commodities in the world; being a sort of precious stone, of a blue colour, veined and spotted with white and yellow; which is principally used for making ultramarine: and it is affirmed, that this *Chilefian* stone is not at all inferior to that which comes from *Persia* and *Siam*; but is rather of a deeper blue, with fewer veins. Saltpetre lies upon the ground two inches thick in many places; which alone would be sufficient to attract a trade in any other country. In the *Cordillera* mountains, about one hundred miles east-south-east, there are mines of the finest sulphur, or brimstone, that can be seen; which is taken pure from a vein two feet wide, without requiring to be cleansed, and is worth three pieces of eight, or about eleven shillings sterling, a quintal, or hundred weight, at the

the port; from whence it is carried to *Lima*. And all the country is full of mines of sal gemm, or rock-salt; for which reason sweet water is very scarce.

III. IN the province of *CUYO*, or *CHICUITO*, to the east of *Cbili*, beyond the *Cordillera* mountains, are the following towns.

1st. *MENDOCA*, is the capital of the country; being situated in about $68^{\circ} 25'$ degrees of west longitude, and $34^{\circ} 20'$ of south latitude, at the foot of the *Cordillera*, close by the pass of the mountains that leads into *Cbili*, and at the head of a river, which, with the *Turuyan*, falls into the lake of *Guanacache*, at about 70 miles distance from it to the south-east. This town had its name from *Mendoza*, vice-roy of *Peru*, and was built by *Peter Castillo*. The jesuits have a college here; and there are copper mines in the neighbourhood, which are very much esteemed.

2^d. *SAN JUAN de la FRONTERA*, or *St. John of the Frontiers*, is about 120 miles distant from *St. Jago*, and about 100 from *Mendoza*, to the north-east; lying also at the head of one of the rivers that runs into the lake of *Guanacache*. *La Martiniere* says, it is now the chief town of *Cuyo*; being the most populous place in the country; and in the mountains adjacent to it, there are very rich silver mines.

3^d. *UCO*, is about 70 miles to the south of *Mendoza*; but no ways remarkable.

4th. *St. LEWIS*, or *Oromonte*, is 170 miles to the south east of *Mendoza*, and 70 miles from the lake of *Guanacache*. The two last mentioned places, rather deserve the name of hamlets than of towns.

towns. However, *Ovalle* says, that, in his time, all those places began to increase; because the west part of *Chili* was overstocked with people, which occasioned many *Spaniards* to remove to *Cuyo*.

THE whole country is remarkable for its fertility, which is principally owing to the numerous rivulets of melted snow, that run down from the circumjacent mountains: its products being corn, wine, and oil; which are prodigious in quantity, and excellent in quality.

SECTION VI.

The islands of CHILI; containing a particular description of the islands of JUAN FERNANDEZ.

THE principal islands along the coast of *Chili*, are *Nostra Senora de Socoro*, *Chiloe*, *Mocha*, *St. Mary's*, and the islands of *Juan Fernandez*.

THERE are also several other islands extending along the coast of *Chili*, from 46 to 42 deg. of south latitude, which are called the *Archipelago* of *Chonos*; the principal being the island of *St. Catalina*, *Llamas*, *Inchin*, *Chunquen*, *Manien*, *Nostra Senora de Socoro*, *de los Chonos proper*, *Guafo*, *Madalena*, *Caylin*, *Lemui*, *Apiao*, *Quinchao*, *Chauones*, and some others: but none of them are well known, except the island of *Nostra Senora de Socoro*,

1st. THE island of *NOSTRA SENORA de SOCORO*, according to lord *Anson's* voyage, lies in 71 deg. 12 min. of west longitude from the *Lizard*, which last is 5 deg. 47 min. west of *London*; and in 45 deg. of south latitude. It is a small, uninhabited

bited island, but so well situated for ships entering the *South Seas*; that commodore *Anson*, when he left the coast of *Brazil*, ordered his captains, as soon as they had passed the *Streights le Maire*, round *Cape Horn*, into the *South Seas*, to rendezvous at this island, and from thence to continue their course to the island of *Juan Fernandez*. The commodore arrived at the island of *Socoro* on the 8th of *May*, 1741, and cruized in that station several days, in expectation of meeting with the rest of his squadron. While he continued here, his men were perpetually alarmed with the fears of being driven on shore upon this coast, which appeared too craggy and irregular to give them the least prospect, that, in such a case, any of them could possibly escape immediate destruction. For the land had a most tremendous aspect; the most distant part of it, and which appeared far within the country, being the *Andes*, extremely high, and covered with snow: the coast itself seeming quite rocky and barren, and the water's edge skirted with precipices. In some places, they discerned several deep bays running into the land, but the entrance into them was generally blocked up by numbers of little islands: and, though it was not improbable, but there might be convenient shelter in some of those bays, and proper channels leading thereto; yet, as they were utterly ignorant of the coast, had they been driven ashore by the western winds, which blew almost constantly there, they did not expect to have avoided the loss of their ship, and of their lives. But the rest of the squadron could not join the commodore, who, after struggling with several turbulent storms, and find-

ing

ing an increase of the scurvy among his men, stood for the island of *Juan Fernandez*, where he arrived on the 9th of *June* following.

ABOUT the latitude of 47 degrees south, there is an island near which the *Wager*, belonging to commodore *Anson's* Squadron, and commanded by captain *Cheap*, was lost by striking on a sunken rock about a musket-shot from the shore.

2d. *CHILOE*, is an island situated between $71^{\circ} 30'$ and $72^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude, and between $41^{\circ} 50'$ and 44 degrees of south latitude: being about 150 miles long, and 21 broad. The south and east parts of it are divided from the continent of *Chili*, by a part of the sea, which is about 30 miles over: and the north part of it is about 136 miles south of *Baldivia*. The coast is very subject to storms, and tempestuous weather, especially in *March*; when the winter begins, and prevents ships from putting to sea; so that they must continue there till the summer returns, and the north winds abate.

THE face of the country is various; as it consists of mountains, vallies, woods, champaign, savannah, or meadow and marshy grounds; having some fine springs, and rivulets of fresh water.

ACCORDING to *Brewer* and Sir *John Narborough*, it abounded in corn, cattle, and fruit, both *European* and *Indian*, as also ambergrease: though *Tecko*, and some others say, it is barren, and one of the poorest of the *Spanish* settlements. These different accounts may be easily reconciled: for, when Sir *John Narborough* was upon the island, there were several plantations well cultivated by the *Spaniards*; which were afterwards ruined by the native *Indians*, who recovered the country, and left

left the *Spaniards* little more than the town of *Castro*, which has been so frequently burnt and plundered, that it is now reduced to a miserable village; whereby the lands are uncultivated, and appear unfruitful; especially, as the *Indians* sow and plant no more than what is just sufficient to furnish their families with food.

THE town of *Castro* was built by the *Spaniards*, in the year 1600, when the *Chilefians* had almost driven them from the continent. It is the only town upon the island; being situated on the west side, in 42 degrees, 20 min. of south latitude. *De Laet* says, it stands between two brooks, and has a small castle, which commands the harbour: but the town has neither walls nor ramparts; and the houses lie scattered about in a very irregular manner.

ACCORDING to *Frezier*, the *Spaniards* have also a little fort in this island; which is called *Chacoa*: but always ill-provided with warlike stores. He likewise says, that there are about forty other islands about *Chiloe*, which all take their names from it: but he must mean part of the *Archipelago* of *Chonos*, which lies between *Chiloe* and the continent.

3d. THE island *Da la MOCA*, or *MOCHA*, lies a small distance from the coast, almost opposite to the mouth of the river *Imperial*.

OLIVER NOORT, who was there in the year 1600, says, this island lies five or six leagues out at sea; being pretty large, with a ridge of hills in the middle, from whence a fresh-water river descends. It is inhabited by *Indians*, who retain an implacable enmity against the *Spaniards*; from whose cruelty they fled, and peopled this island.

SPILBERG

SPILBERG, the *Dutch* admiral, who was here in 1616, anchored on the north-side of the island, in 13 fathom water, within half a league of the shore; on which side the land is low, and very broad; but on the other side there are many rocks, against which the waves beat with great fury. He landed some boats, and the natives met him with refreshments; treating him with great marks of hospitality: for they exchanged sheep for hatchets, corals, and other trifles; but would not admit the *Dutch* into their houses, or rather the miserable hutts they lived in.

SIR John Narborough places this island in 38 degrees, 30 min. of south latitude; and says, that the *Spaniards* told him there was gold here; but that the natives were unwilling to part with it.

MR. FUNNEL, who was here in 1704, says, that they durst not touch at this island, for fear of being murdered by the natives; who are always at war with the *Spaniards*, and think all white men to be such.

4th. *St. MARY's* island lies almost opposite to the town of *Conception*, not many miles from the continent. *Frezier* says, it is low, almost plain, and about three quarters of a league in length from north to south. According to the draught of *Oliver Noort*, it appears to be less than *La Mocha*; but rises in hills much after the same manner. *Spilberg* represents a large bay on the west-side of this island, where he anchored in six fathom water. And *Sir John Narborough* observes, that there is good anchoring on the north side of this island, in a fine sandy bay, with eight or nine fathom water.

THE *Spaniards* are masters of this island, and have

have a fort on it with five guns; where the garrison live very comfortably, as they are unmolested by the *Indians*, and as the country abounds with corn, potatoes, fruit-trees, sheep, and hogs.

5th. The islands of *JUAN FERNANDEZ*, or *JOHN FERNANDES*. The *Spaniards* have generally mentioned two islands under this name, styling them the greater and the lesser: the greater being also called *Juan Fernandez proper*, or *La de Tierra*; and the less being called *Masa Fuero*, or *La de a Fuera*, because it is more distant from the continent.

THE island of *Juan de Fernandez proper*, or *La de Tierra*, is situated about 84 degrees of west longitude, and in 34 degrees, 45 min. of south latitude, according to *Dampier*, and the chart published in commodore *Anson's* voyage: though captain *Sharp* places it in 33 degrees, 40 min. in which he is followed by the publisher of lord *Anson's* voyage in his narrative: but it rather appears to be in 79° 20' of longitude, and in 34 degrees of latitude. It is about a hundred and ten leagues from the continent of *Chili*; being about twelve leagues in circumference, according to *Dampier*; governor *Pullen* says, it is between thirty-eight and forty miles round; but, according to lord *Anson's* voyage, its greatest extent is between four and five leagues, and its greatest breadth somewhat short of two leagues.

GOVERNOR *Pullen* says, the soil of this island is indifferent upon the hills, which are overgrown with woods: but its vallies are fine, fruitful, and pleasant, interspersed with savannahs, or natural meadows, which are capable of great improvements, so as to produce every thing agreeable to the climate.

The

The woods afford several kinds of trees fit for building; though none proper for masts. The grass of the savannahs is not long and flaggy, as in the other parts of *America*, but thick and short; therefore, so extremely fit for grazing, that it has been asserted, these savannahs are capable of maintaining a thousand head of cattle, besides goats, who grow fattest on the most barren parts of the island.

GOVERNOR *Pullen*, during the war with *France* and *Spain*, in the reign of queen *Anne*, was consulted by the ministry how it was practicable to prevent the treasures of *Peru* and *Chili*, from being brought to *Europe* by the *French* and *Spaniards*; as also, how to exclude the *French* from that traffic, whereby they were enabled to maintain a war so long against the confederates: in consequence of which, the governor advised the ministry to send a squadron of men of war into the *South Seas*, to be stationed at this island. He observed, that the season of the year proper to begin this voyage, is from the first to the middle of *September*: but he advised, by all means, that they should set out by the middle of *August*, to make their arrival some small time in the *South Seas*, before the *French* trade that went the same year: for, by this measure, they could hardly fail of destroying all the ships bound there that season, and perhaps meet with some returning home; because they must observe the same time of year, and return by the same route of those seas, as they went into them by. The route they always use in going there, he says, is by or round *Cape Horn*, the southermost promontory of all *America*: for they never venture through the
straights

straights of *Magellan*; because they find, by experience, that for one ship which gets through, three are forced back, and so lose their voyage that year, to the ruin of their owners: but, having sufficient sea-room the other way, they are never exposed to any such risque. After they have doubled *Cape Horn*, they steer directly for the isle of *Juan Fernandez*, to refresh their men, and take in fresh water; for they never missed that island if they could help it; because, their men are almost all in the scurvy by that time, and it would infallibly occasion a mutiny, if the captain should refuse touching there. But what principally induced him to mention the settling of this island, was the breeding of cattle, and cultivating the land; by which means great advantage might accrue to the inhabitants; because the ships that pass the straits of *Magellan*, or by *Cape Horn*, constantly touch here, on account of their men having, by this time, contracted an epidemic scurvy. The governor foresaw one objection which would be made to his proposal; and that was, the difficulty there would be in maintaining this settlement at such a distance from *Britain*, and from any *British* colonies: but to this he answered, that no island was more capable of being fortified, so as to resist any enemy who could attack it in that part of the world: for there are only two bays in the island capable of receiving ships, which are both at the east-end; and a small charge would soon build such works, as would render it impracticable for any people to land there against the will of the inhabitants: and the west-end, which is the highest and most barren part of the island, is of such natural

tural strength, that a small body of men might defend it, against the greatest force that could be brought to assail it.

THIS island was discovered by *Juan Fernando*, in a voyage he made from *Lima* to *Baldivia*; who was pleased with its situation, soil, and climate: therefore, he resolved to settle it; imagining that its produce might very well support four or five hundred families. On his return to *Lima*, he endeavoured to get a patent for that purpose; and, in his first instance, was favourably received; though he was not able to obtain the grant at last; so that it has continued uninhabited ever since.

COMMODORE *Anson* was particularly industrious in directing the roads and coasts of this island to be surveyed, and other observations to be made; knowing, from his own experience, of how great consequence these materials might prove to any *British* vessels employed in those seas. The publisher of his voyage gives a distinct account of the situation, productions, and conveniences of this island; which particulars, he says, they were well enabled to be minutely instructed in, during their three months continuance there; and adds, that these advantages belonging to this island, will merit a circumstantial description, as it is the only commodious place in those seas, where *British* cruizers can refresh and recover their men after their passage round *Cape Horn*, and where they may remain for some time without alarming the *Spanish* coast.

It was on the 9th of *June*, 1741, when the people on board the *Centurion*, first descried the island of *Juan Fernandez*; bearing N. by E. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. at eleven or twelve leagues distance; and appearing

to be a very mountainous place, extremely ragged and irregular: though, when they came nearer in with the shore, they could discover, that the broken craggy precipices, which appeared so unpromising at a distance, were far from barren, being in most places covered with woods; and that, between them, there were every where interspersed the finest vallies, cloathed with a most beautiful verdure, and watered with numerous streams and cascades; no valley of any extent, being unprovided of its proper rill; which gave infinite pleasure to the commodore, as most of his people were severely afflicted with the scurvy, and were obliged to be sent on shore for their recovery.

THE only safe anchoring at this island is on the north-side, where there are three bays: but the middlemost, known by the name of *Cumberland-Bay*, is the widest and deepest, and, in all respects, much the best: for the other two, denominated the east and west bays, are scarcely more than good landing places, where boats may conveniently put their casks on shore.

CUMBERLAND - BAY is well secured to the southward, and is only exposed from the N. by W. to the E. by S. but, as the northerly winds seldom blow in that climate, and never with any violence, the danger from that quarter is not worth attending to: however, the southern winds, which generally prevail here, frequently blow off the land in violent gusts and squalls, which seldom last longer than two or three minutes. It is adviseable for all ships to anchor on the western side of this bay, within little more than two cables length of the beach: where they may ride in forty fathom

of water, and be, in a great measure, sheltered from a large heavy sea, which comes rolling in whenever an eastern or a western wind blows.

THE northern part of this island, is composed of high craggy hills, many of which are inaccessible, though generally covered with trees: but the soil is so loose and shallow, that very large trees on the hills soon perish for want of root, and are then easily overturned; which occasioned the death of one of commodore *Anson's* sailors. The *Spanish* prisoners observed, to the commodore, that the appearance of the hills in some part of the island was like that of the mountains in *Chili*, where the gold is found: so that it is not impossible but mines might be discovered here. In some places, there are several hills of a peculiar sort of red earth, exceeding vermilion in colour; which, perhaps, on examination, might prove useful for many purposes.

THE southern part of the island is widely different from the rest; being dry, stoney, and destitute of trees; as also very low and flat, compared with the hills on the northern part: it is surrounded by a steep shore; and, having little or no fresh water, is never frequented by ships: besides, it is exposed to the southerly wind, which generally blows here the whole year round, and very hard in the winter solstice.

THE trees, of which the woods on the northern side of the island are composed, are most of them aromatics, and of many different sorts: but there are none of them of a size to yield any considerable timber, except the myrtle-trees, which are the largest on the island; though even these will not work to a greater length than forty feet. The top
of

of the myrtle-tree is circular, and appears as uniform and regular, as if it had been clipped by art; bearing on its back an excrescence like moss, which in taste and smell, resembles garlic. There is also the pimento-tree; and the cabbage-tree, which generally grows on the precipices, and in no great plenty; each tree yielding only a single cabbage.

EXCLUSIVE of a great number of plants of various kinds; not commonly known to mariners, almost all the vegetables are found here, which are usually esteemed to be particularly adapted to the cure of those scorbutic disorders, which are contracted by salt diet, and long voyages. There are great quantities of water cresses, and purslain; with excellent wild sorrel, and a vast profusion of turnips, and *Sicilian* radishes: besides, there are many acres of ground covered with oats and clover.

THE excellence of the climate, and the looseness of the soil, render the place extremely proper for all kinds of vegetation: for, if the ground is any where accidentally turned up, it is immediately overgrown with turnips, and *Sicilian* radishes. Commodore *Anson*, therefore, having with him garden-seeds of all kinds, and stones of different sorts of fruits, sowed lettices, carrots, and other garden-plants; for the better accommodation of his countrymen who should touch here again. He also set in the woods a great variety of plumb, apricot, and peach-stones; the last of which have thrived to a very remarkable degree.

THIS may be sufficient in general, as to the soil and vegetable productions of the island; but the face of the country, at least the north part of it, is so extremely singular, as to merit a particular

consideration. The woods, which cover most of the steepest hills, are free from all bushes and underwood; affording an easy passage through every part of them; and the irregularities of the hills and precipices, necessarily trace out, by their various combinations, a great number of romantic vallies; most of which have a stream of the clearest water running through them, that tumble in cascades from rock to rock, as the bottom of the valley, by the course of the neighbouring hills, is, at any time, broken into a sudden sharp descent. But some particular spots occurred in these vallies, where the shade and fragrance of the contiguous woods, the loftiness of the over-hanging rocks, and the transparency and frequent falls of the neighbouring streams, presented scenes of such elegance and dignity, as would be rivalled with difficulty in any other part of the globe: for it is in this place, perhaps, that the simple productions of unassisted nature, may be said to excel all the fictitious descriptions of the most animated imagination.

FORMER writers have related, that this island abounded with great numbers of goats, and their accounts are not to be questioned; as this place was the usual haunt of the buccaneers and privateers, who formerly frequented those seas. There are two instances to confirm this; one of a *Mosquito Indian*, and the other of *Alexander Selkirk*, a *Scotchman*, who were left here by their respective ships, lived alone upon the island for several years, and consequently were no strangers to its produce. *Selkirk*, who was the last, after a stay of between four and five years, was taken off the place by the *Duke* and *Dutchess* privateers of *Bristol*, in 1709; whole

whose manner of life, during his solitude, was, in most particulars very remarkable; and he tells us, among other things, that, as he often caught more goats than he wanted, he sometimes marked their ears, and let them go; which was found to be true, when commodore *Anson* was here; for his men caught several of these animals marked in this manner. But the goats are now much diminished, through the policy of the *Spaniards*, who were apprized of the advantages which the buccaneers and privateers drew from the provisions of goats-flesh; and therefore endeavoured to extirpate the breed, to deprive their enemies of this relief. For which purpose, they have put on shore great numbers of large dogs, who have increased a-pace, and have destroyed all the goats in the accessible parts of the country; so that there now remain only a few among the craggs and precipices, where the dogs cannot follow them. These are divided into separate herds, of twenty or thirty each, that inhabit distinct fastnesses, and never mingle with each other: by which means it is extremely difficult to kill them; and the whole number in all the herds together are thought scarcely to exceed two hundred upon the whole island.

THE dogs, who are masters of all the accessible parts of the island, are of various kinds; some of them very large, and are multiplied to a prodigious degree: but, as it is seldom that goats fail in their way, it is imagined they live principally upon young seals.

As commodore *Anson's* men were tired of eating fish, and as goats-flesh was scarce, they began to eat seals, which they came to relish by degrees,

and called it lamb: besides, they eat another amphibious creature, called a sea-lion, which they called beef. Seals are found here in the greatest plenty of any part of the world; their skins being of an extraordinary value for the fineness of their furs, and their fat makes very good train-oil. The sea-lion bears some resemblance to the seal, but is much larger; for, when arrived to full growth, they are from twelve to twenty feet in length, and from eight to fifteen in circumference. Their skin is about an inch thick, beneath which is at least a foot of fat before a man can come at either lean or bones, and the fat of some of the largest will afford a butt of oil: they are likewise so full of blood, that if they are deeply wounded in a dozen places, there will instantly gush out as many fountains of blood, spouting to a considerable distance; and it is known that one of them will bleed two hogheads full. Their skins are covered with short hair, of a light dun colour; but their tails, and their fins, which serve them for feet on shore, are almost black: their fins, or feet, are divided at the ends like fingers; the limb which joins them not reaching to the extremities, and each of these fingers is furnished with a nail. The males have a large snout, or trunk, hanging down five or six inches below the end of the upper-jaw; which the females have not, nor are they of so large a size. These animals divide their time equally between the land and sea; continuing at sea all the summer, and coming on shore at the setting in of the winter, where they reside during all that season. In this interval they engender, and bring forth their young; having generally

two at a birth ; which at first are about the size of a full-grown seal, and are suckled with the milk of the dam. During the time they continue at shore, they feed on the grass and verdure which grows near the banks of the fresh-water streams ; and, when not employed in feeding, sleep in herds in the most miry places they can find. Commodore *Anson's* people killed many of these animals for food ; particularly for their hearts and tongues, which were esteemed as very good eating, and preferable even to those of bullocks. In general, there is no difficulty in killing them ; because they are incapable either of escaping or resisting ; for their motion is the most unwieldy that can be conceived ; and their blubber, all the time they are moving, is agitated in large waves under their skins.

THESE are the principal animals, which commodore *Anson's* people found upon the island : for they saw but few birds, and those chiefly hawks, black-birds, owls, and humming-birds. They neither saw the pardela, which burrows in the ground, and which former writers have mentioned to be found here : but, as their holes are often met with, it is supposed the dogs have destroyed them, as they have almost done the cats, which were numerous in *Selkirk's* time ; but commodore *Anson's* people saw only one or two during their whole stay : however, the rats still keep their ground, and are very numerous.

THE whole bay is well stored with great variety of fish ; having large cod, cavallies, gropers, breams, maids, silver-fish, congers of a peculiar kind, and a black fish called a chimney-sweeper,

like a carp in shape, and very delicious in taste. The beach, indeed, is every where so full of rocks and loose stones, that there is no possibility of haling the feyne; but great quantities of fish are to be caught in angling; and the craw-fish lie in great abundance near the water's edge, weighing generally eight or nine pounds a-piece, and of a most excellent flavour.

THIS island is so well situated for making reprisals upon the *Spaniards* in the *South-Seas*, that, during the late war, the *Spanish* merchants expressly ordered their captains to keep out of sight of it; as well knowing, that, if any *English* squadron was in those seas, the island of *Fernandez* was most probably the place of their rendezvous.

THE island of *Masa Fuero*, is about twenty-two leagues to the westward of *Juan Fernandez*; being near four miles in length. It had been represented, by former navigators, as a barren rock: but, while commodore *Anson* was at *Juan Fernandez*, he was joined by the *Gloucester*, commanded by captain *Mitchel*, who acquainted the commodore, that he had been forced by the winds as far as this island; and that he endeavoured to send his boat on shore there for water, of which he could observe several streams; but the wind blew so strong upon the shore, and occasioned such a surf, that it was impossible for the boat to land; though the attempt was not altogether useless, as his people returned with a boat-load of fish. The captain also assured the commodore, that this island was almost every where covered with trees and verdure; adding, that it appeared to him far from impossible but some small bay might be found on it,

it, which might afford sufficient shelter for any ship desirous of refreshing there.

IN consequence of this intelligence, the commodore sent the *Tryal* sloop to examine this island; which was accordingly done; and, as the knowledge of it may be of great consequence hereafter, the accounts given of this place, to the commodore, are necessary to be inserted.

THE *Tryal* sloop found that it bore from the greater *Juan Fernandez W.* by S. and that it was a much larger and better spot than had been generally reported: for former writers have represented it as a small barren rock, destitute of wood and water, and altogether inaccessible: but the *Tryal's* people found it was covered with trees, and that there were several fine falls of water pouring down its sides into the sea. They also found, that there was a place where a ship might come to an anchor on the north side of it; though the anchorage is inconvenient; for the bank extends but a little way, is steep, and has very deep water upon it; so that ships must come to an anchor very near the shore, and there lie exposed to all the winds but a southerly one: and, besides the inconvenience of the anchorage, there is likewise a reef of rocks running off the eastern point of the island, about two miles in length; though there is little danger to be feared from them, because they are always to be seen by the seas breaking over them.

THIS place has at present one advantage beyond the island of *Juan Fernandez proper*; for it abounds with goats, who have not been accustomed to be disturbed, and are no ways shy or apprehensive of danger, till they have been frequently fired

at. These animals reside here in great tranquility ; because the *Spaniards* have not thought the island considerable enough to be frequented by their enemies, and therefore have not been solicitous to destroy the provisions upon it ; so that no dogs were on the island when the *Tryal* sloop was there : though, it is probable, the *Spaniards* will not neglect to destroy the goats here, as well as upon the other island, since they are now sensible that they can be serviceable to their enemies. Besides the goats, the *Tryal's* people found there great numbers of seals and sea-lions : and, upon the whole, they seemed to imagine, that though it was not the most eligible place for a ship to refresh at ; yet, in case of necessity, it might afford some sort of shelter, and prove of considerable use, especially to a single ship, who might apprehend meeting with a superior force at the other island.

COMMODORE *Anson* continued on the island of *Juan Fernandez*, or cruizing about it, from the 12th of *June*, to the 19th of *September* 1741, when the season set in for navigating these seas, and the commodore proceeded upon his voyage ; having first sent out captain *Mitchel*, in the *Gloucester*, with orders to proceed to the latitude of five degrees south, and to cruize there off the high land of *Paita*, at such a distance from shore, as should prevent his being discovered : on which station he was to continue, till he should be joined by the commodore, which would be whenever it should be known that the vice-roy had fitted out the ships at *Callao* ; or, on Mr. *Anson's* receiving any other intelligence, that should make it necessary to unite their strength.

C H A P. II.

The DESCRIPTION of PARAGUAY,
or RIO DE LA PLATA.

SECTION I.

The extent, and nature of the country; with some account of the Indians. In what manner the Portuguese first invaded this country, under Alexius Garcia. What discoveries were made here by Sebastian Cabot; and how the Spaniards made their settlements in this country, under Don Pedro de Mendoza: with some remarks on the jesuits of Paraguay. The six districts, or sub-divisions, of this province; with a particular account of those of Paraguay proper, and Tucuman; their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade.

THIS extensive tract of territory received its name from the river *Plata*, which rises near the city of that name in *Peru*, and runs to the south-east through this country. It is bounded on the north by part of *Brazil*, the land of the *Amazons*, and part of *Peru*: on the east by the ocean: on the south by *Chili*, and the *Terra Magellanica*; as also on the west by another part of *Peru*. Its utmost northern boundaries are generally placed in 12 degrees of south latitude, beyond the town of
Porto

Porto de los Reyes, which is situated at the top of the lake of *Xarayes* : and the southern borders are commonly set down in 35 degrees 30 minutes : so that it is about 1380 miles in length. It also extends from about the 48th to the 66th degree of west longitude, in the broadest part ; which is from the *Andes*, to the mouth of the river *St. Francis* : so that its greatest breadth is about 1080 miles ; though not above half that number on the south extremity, where it is narrowest.

It is an old observation, that names are not always imposed according to the reason of things : thus *Columbus*, who discovered the new world, had not the honour of giving his name to it ; but it was called *America*, from *Americus Vesputius*, who described it, or at least first published his descriptions to the world : and, in the same manner, the *Spaniards* call that great river, which falls into the ocean in 35 degrees of south latitude, *Rio de la Plata* ; though, in reality, it is the least of three rivers, which compose that magnificent stream. The first of these is the great river of *Paraguay*, which rises in the latitude of 16 ; and, somewhat below the city of *Assumption*, it joins the *Rio de la Plata*, in the latitude of about 25. About 100 miles lower, they are joined by the great river *Parana* : besides, there are several other rivers, which concur in forming so great a body of water in so long a course, and roll in conjunction towards the sea.

THAT part of this country, which lies west of the river *Paraguay*, consists of large plain lands, extending about 750 miles in length ; without any trees ; or, at least, any thing that looks like timber :

ber: but, in the country to the eastward of that river, which borders on *Brazil*, there is a variety of hills and vallies, of woods and champaign.

THE north part of this country, which lies in the tropic of *Capricorn*, has annually very heavy rains, storms, and tempests, when the sun is vertical, in *November* and *December*; as other countries have, which lie in the same latitude within the southern tropic. At this time, all the flat country is overflowed; their cisterns, and reservoirs of water, being replenished, which serve them the rest of the year, till the rains return: their lands are moistened, so as to be capable of tillage; and, whenever these rains fail, it occasions a famine among the inhabitants.

BUT it is directly contrary, in that part of the country which lies south of the tropic of *Capricorn*; for it is summer there in *November*, *December*, and *January*: when the rivers that rise within the tropics, swell after the rains are fallen, and overflow their banks as they pass through the southern parts of the country, which they enrich with a great fertility.

THE *Indians* of *Paraguay* are represented as a brave people; having defeated several considerable bodies of *Spaniards*, when they first invaded their country. It was a great many years before the *Spaniards* could fix themselves even in the plains: and the natives defended themselves so well in the woods and mountains, to the eastward of the river *Uragua*, that they were never subdued, till the jesuits found means to insinuate themselves into their good opinion, and brought them into a kind of submission to these artful missionaries, by the force of flattery,

flattery, and without the least compulsion of arms; where these divines live like sovereign princes, and have founded a kind of government that never before existed in the world; which will be more particularly represented under the division of *Indian America*.

THE first adventurer that penetrated into this country was *Alexius Garcia*, a *Portuguese*; who was sent upon that enterprize, by the governor of *Brasil*, in the year 1524: when he marched across *La Plata*, as far as the borders of *Peru*, where he amassed a great quantity of plate: but was cut off by the *Indians*, on his return, with most of his men: and *George Sedenho*, who was sent out with a party to support him, also shared the same miserable fate.

SEBASTIAN CABOT was employed, in the year 1526, by the emperor *Charles Vth*, to make a farther discovery of south *America*. He entered the mouth of the river *La Plata*, which was first discovered by *John Diaz de Solis*, in 1515; sailed up that river as far as the place where *Garcia* was defeated, and met with the plate he had accumulated on the confines of *Peru*, which he purchased of the natives for an inconsiderable value; and concluded he had made an important discovery; as he apprehended this treasure to be the product of *Paraguay*. Accordingly, he erected a fort where the town of *Assumption* now stands: after which, he detached *Alvara Ramon*, with one of his ships, to sail up the river *Uragua*, and get farther intelligence of the mines, which he imagined were to be found near the banks of that river: but *Ramon*, and his people, were cut off by the natives.

WHEN

WHEN *Cabot* had made some farther discoveries of the country, he sent *Ferdinand Calderon*, and *George Barlow*, with intelligence thereof to *Spain*, who delivered their dispatches to the emperor, at *Toledo*, about the end of *December*, 1527. Upon this advice, his imperial majesty offered the merchants, who had contributed towards the expence of this voyage, that they might continue the expedition, and share in the profits; which they refused, and his majesty took it all upon himself: but, though the consequence of maintaining a discovery, 600 miles in length, was so considerable a thing, nothing was done for a long time upon this occasion. However, *Cabot* continued in expectation of supplies for about five years; when his patience was exhausted, and he returned to *Spain* with one ship, which he had saved, and all the men that were left alive. He repaired immediately to court, and informed the emperor of the nature of his expedition; the substance of his relation being as follows: That the chief race of the *Indians*, in those parts, was that of the *Guaramies*, a warlike, treacherous, and imperious people, who called all the other *Indians* slaves that could not speak their language; continually waging war on them, wherein they were extremely bloody and cruel, killing all they could, without taking any prisoners. The territory of the city *De la Plata* was inhabited by this nation, and their country extended above 1500 miles: from whence they invaded *Peru*, and returned home in a victorious manner: but *Cabot* concluded a treaty of peace and amity with these people; established the colony of *San Espiritus*; got information of them concerning the country, as
also

also of the gold and silver of *Peru* ; from whence the river was called *De la Plata*, or of plate, or silver, for there is none in its neighbourhood ; and he found several valuable stones, which the natives gave by way of barter. He also reported that the country was very plentiful and temperate ; the nations, in it, being the *Charruans*, and *Quiondies* ; in the islands *Guaranies* ; higher up, on a river on the left hand, the *Carcarans* ; still higher up, the *Trimbuns*, *Currundans*, and *Camies* ; farther on, the *Quilbasans*, *Colibines*, and *Chanans* ; next, the *Mecoretans*, and the *Mepenes* ; beyond which, there were twenty-seven other nations of different names, customs, and languages.

CABOT found, that credit was the more readily given to this report, as he had brought home so considerable a quantity of treasure. Upon which, several of the best families in *Spain* solicited the court to be sent on an expedition to *Paraguay* : in consequence of which, a body of 2200 land men, besides marines, were embarked for the river of *Plata* ; among whom were thirty heirs of noble families ; and the whole was commanded by *Don Pedro de Mendoza* ; who arrived at the mouth of the river *La Plata*, and founded the town of *Buenos Ayres*, in 1535. But this was not done without great opposition from the natives, who defeated several bodies of *Spaniards* : after which, *Mendoza* returned to *Spain* ; leaving *Oyola*, his deputy-governor, behind him, with part of the troops ; who abandoned *Buenos Ayres*, and retired to the fort of *Assumption*.

THE governor *Alvaro Nunez Cabeza de Vaca*, afterwards made farther discoveries ; planted colonies

nies as far as the north of *Tucuman*; rebuilt *Buenos Ayres*, and founded some other towns near the mouth of the river *La Plata*.

FRANCIS de ACQUIRE was detached with 200 men from *Chili*, in 1553, by *Baldivia*; when he built the city of *St. Jago*, the metropolis of *La Plata*. *John Gomez Zarita*, was also sent from *Chili* to *La Plata*, with another body of troops, in 1555; when he built the town of *Cordova*, and made an entire conquest of all the country as far as the river *Paraguay*: but the provinces to the eastward of that river, instead of being conquered by the force of the *Spaniards*, were reduced by the artifice of the missionaries; in return for which service, the crown of *Spain* conferred the property of that country upon those fathers, who have thereby established for themselves a temporal dominion.

THE unconquered *Indians* are governed by their own chiefs, or *caziques*: but that part of the country which has been subjected to the dominion of *Spain*, is under the direction of two *Spanish* governors; one of them having his residence at *St. Jago*, in the district of *Tucuman*; and the other at the town of *Assumption*, in the district of *Rio de la Plata*: though both of them are under the superintendency of the vice-roy of *Peru*; and they have also sub-governors in every district.

THIS country has one archiepiscopal see, being that of *Rio de la Plata*: with four suffragan bishoprics; *St. Jago del Estero*, *Assumption*, *Panama*, and *Paraguay*.

THE province of *Paraguay*, comprehends the several districts, or subdivisions, following. 1st. *Paraguay proper*. 2d. *Tucuman*. 3d. *Rio de la Plata*.

4th. *Guayra*. 5th. *Parana*. 6th. *Uraguay*: and the following is a distinct representation of each of these provinces.

I. *PARAGUAY PROPER*, or *PARAQUARIA*.

This is the most northern district; being bounded by the country of the *Amazons* on the north; on the east by the province of *Guayra*; on the south by those of *Rio de la Plata*, and *Parana*; and on the west by that of *Tucuman*: but on the west and north parts its true boundaries are very uncertain.

THE chief towns in *Paraguay proper*, lie in the following order: 1. *Assumption*. 2. *Villa Rica*. 3. *Maracajo*. 4. *Aracacia*. 5. *Upane*. 6. *Puerto de la Candelaria*. 7. *Santa Fee*. 8. *Xeres*. 9. *Saint Ignatio*. and 10. *Old Conception*.

1. *ASSUMPTION*, the metropolis of *Paraguay*, stands on the eastern banks of the river of its name, a little above the place where the *Picolmago* falls into it; being situated in 59 degrees 35 minutes of west longitude, and $24^{\circ} 47'$ of south latitude; about 150 miles above the confluence of the *Paraguay* and *Parana*, where the former begins to be called *Rio de la Plata*. It was built by the *Spaniards* in 1538; being remarkable for its healthy and advantageous situation, as well as for the number of its inhabitants; having about four hundred families of *Spaniards*, and several thousands of *mesticoes*, and *mulattoes*. The adjacent territory is exceeding rich and fruitful; producing plenty and variety of fruits, not only of those which are natural to the country, but of those which have been transplanted thither from *Spain*; and the air is so temperate, that the trees are cloathed with a perennial and delightful verdure. There are likewise

likewise very noble and rich pastures in the circumjacent plains, on which are bred very numerous herds of cattle; so that there is such an extraordinary plenty of all provisions in the town, as to make the natives, blacks and others, ambitious of living in it.

THE *Indian* nations that border on its territory, are the *Quatatoes*, *Mogaloes*, *Connanenaquaes*, and others: who are all passionately fond of, and affectionate to the *Spaniards*; being ready to serve them, on all occasions, with a sincere and cordial friendship. For, it is to be observed, that the *Spanish* inhabitants are the descendants of some of the best families in *Spain*; who settled here, soon after the dregs and scum of their own, and of other *European* nations, had flocked into other parts of *America*; and, being mostly gentry, knew better how to gain the affections of these people, than the *Portuguese*.

CONTIGUOUS to the town is a mountain of extraordinary height; and, about 450 miles higher up the river there is a lake, called by the natives *Utappua*; which is principally taken notice of, for a rock that rears itself up in the middle of it, of a prodigious height, and extraordinary circumference.

2d. *VILLA RICA*, or the *Rich Town*, is also situated near the eastern banks of the *Paraguay*; about 24 miles north of *Assumption*, on a small river of no name, or consequence: but, for what is to be found in the accounts of this country, *Villa Rica* has nothing considerable to answer its pompous name.

MARACAJO, *ARACACIA*, and *UPANE*, are still farther northwards, and less known.

THOSE called *Puerto de la Candelaria*, and *Santa Fee*, are the two most distant northward from the metropolis; and have nothing worth notice, except their fruitful territories. The latter is situate between the two small rivers of *Pierai* and *Yaquorii*, which fall into the *Paraguay*; but the town stands about 32 miles east from the river. *Xeres*, called *De la Frontera*, by the *Spaniards*, as it is the most eastern verge of their dominions in this country, was once a flourishing place, and had a mission, or college of missionaries; being situated in the inland part, between the *Paraguay* and *Parana*; but it has long since gone into decay, and now lies in ruins.

THESE towns are all on the east side of the *Paraguay*: but on the west are the towns of *Conception*, and *Saint Ignatio*. The former is situated on the *Vermeio*, or *Red River*, which comes down from the mountains of *Peru*, and falls into the *Paraguay*: being formerly well inhabited by the *Spaniards*; but has since gone to ruin. That of *Saint Ignatio*, is situated on the river *Lobo*; but, being likewise abandoned by the *Spaniards*, is now in the same condition as the former.

II. THE province of *TUCUMAN*, is bounded on the north by *Chaco*; on the south by *Cuyo*, and the territory of the *Pampas*; on the east by *Paraguay proper*, and *Rio de Plata*; and on the west by the imperial bishoprick of *St. Jago* in *Chili*; extending itself from *Rio Vermeio*, which parts it from *Chaco* on the north, to that called *Rio Quarto*, which divides it from *Cuyo* on the south; being almost ten deg. that is, from the 24th to the 34th of south latitude: and from east to west, where broadest, that is, from the river *Salado*, to the ridge *De la*
Cor-

Cordillera, which parts it from *Cbili*, it extends more than 7 degrees; that is, from 62 to 69 $\frac{1}{2}$ of west longitude: so that it lies, for the most part, in a very temperate and healthy climate; and, though it has no mines, either of gold or silver, its territory is both rich and well cultivated, especially towards the government of *Cbili*; but it has some desert places towards the *Magellanic* side.

THE chief places in *Tucuman* are, 1. *San Jago del Estero*. 2. *San Salvador*, or *Xuxui*. 3. *San Miguel*. 4. *Salta*, or *Lerma*. 5. *Londres*. 6. *Cordoua*. 7. *Esteco*. 8. *Rioja*. 9. *Pulupas*. 10. *Sota la Punta*. 11. *Capo de San Lucia*. 12. *De los Santos*.

1st. *SAN JAGO del ESTERO*, the metropolis of this province, and an episcopal see, is situated in 65 degrees of west longitude, and 27 degrees 40 minutes of south latitude, on the banks of the *Dolce*, or *Sweet River*, which is here pretty large and navigable; being able to carry large vessels, and affording plenty and variety of fish. However, the town is not very considerable; consisting only of about 300 houses; or, as some say, 500 families; and is quite without walls, ditch, or any other fence. The general part of the inhabitants are of the *mestico*, and *mulatto* kind; of dark yellow complexions, lazy and sickly, occasioned by the heat of the climate; and more given to pleasure than to any traffic, or industry. The town stands on a flat ground, but surrounded with forrests, which stagnate the air; so that there are not above 300 men in it fit to bear arms, including the natives and blacks. The women are generally handsome,

but are frequently troubled with wens, or swellings in the throat.

THE neighbouring country is rich, producing plenty of wheat, rice, and barley; as likewise fruits of all sorts, especially figs and raisins. The forrests afford plenty of game; but are infested with tigers, and other voracious beasts; particularly one sort, called guanacos, which are as large as common horses, with long necks, small heads, and short tails; in whose maw is found the occidental bezoar.

THE town has four churches; the cathedral, that of the jesuits, and two more belonging to other monasteries. The inquisitor, or governor of this province, who is a secular priest, has his residence here; and nominates his substitute officers in the other parts of the country.

THE town is reported to lie almost in the midway between the mines of *Potosi*, and the town of *Buenos Ayres*; being about 150 miles distant from each: so that the plate is brought here from *Potosi* on the backs of mules; because the country of the *Charcas*, which lies to the northward of this province, is very mountainous: but, from *St. Jago* to *Buenos Ayres*, the plate is carried in waggons, over one continued plain, where there are neither hills or woods to be discovered: however, the place is of no farther consequence.

2d. *SAN SALVADOR*, or *XUXUI*, stands near the confines of *Peru*, at the foot of a high mountain, which forms part of the *Andes*. It has a considerable river running by it, a little above the place where it falls into the *Leon*; from which both descend into the *Rio Vermeio*, or *Red River*.

This

This town has about 300 houses; and is the most northerly of all this province, being within one degree of the southern tropic, and about 249 miles from *Potosi*.

3d. *SAN MIGUEL*, or *St. MICHAEL*, was the first town the *Spaniards* founded in this country; and is pleasantly situated on a fertile plain, near the banks of a small river, that falls into the *Rio Dolce*, near *San Jago*, from which it is distant about 54 miles to the north-west. Mr. *Baudrand*, who calls it *St. Michael de Estero*, says it is the capital of *Tucuman*, and an episcopal see, under the metropolitan of *La Plata*. The plain, on which it stands, is fertile, producing plenty of wheat, rye, and barley; as also such fine grass, that it breeds great quantities of cattle; and likewise yields cotton, flax, some wine, and great abundance of wood for all uses. The air is reckoned one of the sweetest, and most salubrious in all *Paraguay*; which makes the country well inhabited, and stored with all the conveniences of life.

4th. *SALTA*, or *LERMA*, stands on a small river, which soon after falls into a neighbouring lake; being at a little distance south-east from *San Salvador*, and east from the burning mountain of *Copiapo*. It is principally inhabited by *Spaniards*; to whom the town, and the adjacent territory, belong; having about 400 houses, and five or six churches, or monasteries.

It has neither walls, ditches, or any other defence, but the bravery of its inhabitants; who, by the frequent wars they had with their neighbours, are become expert soldiers: for, they have about 500 men capable of bearing arms; besides their

slaves, negroes as well as mulattoes, which may amount to about thrice that number.

SALTA is a place of great resort, on account of the great quantity of corn, meal, wine, cattle, salt meat, fat, and other such commodities, which are sent from hence into *Peru* and other parts.

5th, *LONDRES*, is situated near a great marsh of the same name, in 29 deg. 12 min. of S. latitude, being built by *Tarita*, governor of this province, in 1555, to keep the natives in awe; who also called it *Londres*, in compliment to queen *Mary* of *England*, then consort to king *Philip* of *Spain*.

6th, *CORDOVA*, or *CORDUBA*, about 300 miles south of *San Jago del Estero*, and 480 north-west of *Buenos Ayres*, is a considerable town in this province; but situate on a marshy, though rich and fertile, soil. It has a bishop, chapter, and some monasteries; besides a convent of jesuits; lying in 63 deg. 30 min. of W. longitude, and 31 deg. 30 min. of S. latitude, in a temperate healthy climate, with equal winter and summer; all the territory about it being full of cattle, and abounding with excellent pasture. It produces plenty of corn, fruits, and other necessaries; and has several plentiful salt-pits; so that the town carries on a considerable trade in those commodities with *Peru*; especially as it lies on the road to *Buenos Ayres*; taking gold and silver in return for its merchandize. The inhabitants are *Spaniards*, and amount to about 300, who are chiefly employed in tilling the ground, and manufacturing of cotton cloth, which they send to *Potosi*.

BUT *ESTECO*, or *Talavera*, *Rioja*, *Pulupas*, and the other places of this province, have nothing considerable.

SECTION II.

A particular account of the provinces of RIO DE LA PLATA, GUAYRA, PARANA, and URAGUAY: their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade: but more particularly of the commerce of Buenos Ayres; and of the Assiento treaty, for furnishing it with negroes.

III. **R**IO DE LA PLATA, or LA PLATA PROPER, is so called from the remarkable river of that name, along whose banks it extends itself, on each side, about 600 miles in length, from north to south; and about 300, where it is broadest, from east to west: being bounded on the north by the provinces of *Chaco*, *Paraguay proper*, and *Parana*; on the east by that of *Uraguay*; on the south by the territory of *Pampas*; and on the west by *Tucuman*: but the limits of these provinces are far from being certainly known; especially those between this province and *Tucuman*; there being no boundaries fixed between them, because the whole country is plain and champaign, without mountains, or hills, or even so much as a tree, house, or hut, by which they might be terminated.

THE chief towns in this province are, 1. *Buenos Ayres*. 2. *Santa Fee*. 3. *Corricentes*. 4. *Santa Lucia*. and 5. *Chanas*; besides several others of less consequence.

I. THE town of *BUENOS AYRES*, is so called from its pleasant and healthy situation; being situated in 57 deg. of W. longitude, and 34 deg.

25 min. of south latitude, upon a gentle rising ground, at about 50 leagues from the mouth of the *Rio de la Plata*, and upon the south side of it; that river being here 7 leagues in breadth, and navigable by any ship 60 leagues above the town; but no farther, on account of a great cataract. The churches and houses were very mean and low, till within these few years; being commonly built with mud, and the latter but one story high; though not so much for want of stone, as of lime, which they have lately learnt to burn from the *Europeans*, as likewise to make bricks and tiles. The whole town contains about 4000 houses, and consists of two principal streets crossing each other; but has six churches, one of which is the cathedral, and four others belong to four different monasteries established here; being the trinitarians, franciscans, dominicans, and jesuits. This town is the residence of a *Spanish* governor, who lives in a castle, or fort, defended only by mud walls, mounted with 40 cannon, and generally garrisoned by 400 or 500 men.

FATHER *Feuillee* says, that the winters are commonly very rainy here; the winds fierce; with thunders frequent and dangerous: as also that the summers are excessive hot, and would be scarcely supportable, if they were not alleviated by cooling winds, which commonly begin about eight of the clock in the morning, and continue till the evening.

THE territory about it, which is of a great extent, is very fertile in fruits of all sorts, and full of pasture grounds covered with great quantities of cattle; which would be still more so, if duly cultivated, especially in corn; but the people are indolent,

dolent, and content themselves with what nature produces without labour. It formerly bore very excellent vines, from which they made some sorts of exquisite wines; besides the vast quantities of grapes they dried for use. But these they suffered to be destroyed by the pismires; which chanced one year to appear in such swarms, that they eat them all up root and branch; so that the *Spaniards* were obliged to pluck them up; and have now only a few that grow in gardens, which must be kept in vessels full of water, to prevent these insects from destroying them.

HOWEVER, *Buenos Ayres* is a very considerable place of trade; as all *European* merchandizes are brought here, and sent from hence to *Peru* and *Chili*: besides, great numbers of negroes were also brought here, and sold to those countries; which commerce was carried on by other nations, in the following manner.

THE first *Assiento*, or farm, was a treaty, or contract, made in 1702, between the king of *Spain*, and the *French Guinea* company, for furnishing the *Spanish* dominions in *America* with negro-slaves: whereby the complement of negroes was to be 3800 yearly, during the continuance of the war about the *Spanish* succession; and 4800 in time of peace: the duty being fixed at 33 piasters and one third, or 5*l.* 19*s.* 5*d.* $\frac{1}{4}$ sterling, for every negro. But, by the treaty of *Utrecht*, the *French* ceded the *Assiento* treaty to the *English*, who entered into a treaty with the *Spaniards*, for the furnishing of negroes, which was to commence the 1st of *May* 1713, and terminate the 1st of *May* 1743. The *English South-Sea* company under-
took

took to supply *Spanish America* yearly, with 4800 negroes; for which the same duty was to be paid as had been settled by the *French*. The 42d article of this treaty, which was the last and most considerable of all, was not included in the treaty with the *French*: for this article permitted the *English Assientists* to send into the ports of *Spanish America*, every year the treaty was to subsist, a ship of 500 tons, laden with the same commodities the *Spaniards* usually send there; with a licence to vend the same, conjointly with them, at the fairs of *Porto Bello* and *Vera Cruz*; which was a concession diametrically opposite to the ancient policy, and usual jealousy, of the *Spaniards*, with regard to their *American* commerce. By some additional articles, the *English* were also allowed to send their ship yearly, though the flota, or *Spanish* galleons, should not sail for *America*; that the first ten years this vessel might carry 650 tons; as also that the commodities, which might remain after the sale of the negroes, should be sent to *Europe*, after the slaves had been landed at *Buenos Ayres*; and, if their destination was to *Porto Bello*, *Vera Cruz*, *Carthagena*, and other ports of *Spanish America*, they should be transmitted to the *Antilles*, and none of them to the *South-Sea*. However, on the commencement of the last war with *Spain*, the *English Assientists* were deprived of four years enjoyment of their trade; which was afterwards entirely relinquished, in prejudice of the company, by a convention between the two crowns, subsequent to the definitive treaty of peace; on condition, that the *Spanish* monarch should pay what was due to the *Assientists*, on account of the detention of their ship in the year 1726.

THE gold and silver of *Peru* and *Chili* are exported from *Buenos Ayres* to *Europe*; as also great quantities of hides and tallow, with such other commodities, as are furnished by this part of *America*: for the importance of this place principally consists in its convenient situation for commerce; whereby the most valuable commodities, in the most distant provinces of the *Spanish* empire, are brought here to be exchanged for *European* goods; such as *Vigognia* wool from *Peru*, and copper from *Coquimbo*: as also from *Corrientes* and *Paraguay*, tobacco, sugar, yellow-wax, cotton thread, and cotton cloth; most of the latter being used at *Buenos Ayres*, and in its neighbourhood, by the slaves and other domestics; because it is cheaper, and answers their purpose full as well as either *Dutch* or *French* linnen.

THE merchants of *Buenos Ayres* also receive great quantities of the herb called *Paraguay*, which is of great value in these countries; the use made of it being to compose an infusion, or tea, to recover such persons as work in the mines from those terrible cholics, and intolerable disorders in the stomach, as are caused by the exhalations in such places. The herb of *Paraguay* is of two sorts; the *Camini*, and *Yerva con Palos*; but they are usually mixed together, notwithstanding the one is double the value of the other. Those who go to *Paraguay* to buy this herb, are obliged to stay two years before they return: the first crop being always bespoke, and disposed of; so that these traders must content themselves with making the best bargains they are able for the next crop; for which purpose, presents to the governor, and
many

many other articles of that sort, are necessary. The annual amount of this trade, is at least a million of pieces of eight, or 179,166*l.* 13*s.* 6*d.* sterling; all paid for in goods; because no money is permitted to pass in the government of *Paraguay*. These goods are knives, scissars, ribbands, taffaties, silk stockings, *English* bays, hats of all sorts, and coarse cloth from *Quito*; which are carried through this great extent of country in little waggons; though there are not less than fifteen or sixteen great rivers between *Buenos Ayres* and *Corrientes*, where the cattle are obliged to swim, and the goods are passed over on floats, made by taking the waggons to pieces. The merchants never bring any more of these commodities to *Buenos Ayres*, than are absolutely necessary for the supply of the inhabitants; but send them to *Santa Fee*, to avoid the expence of double carriage, and the expence of double duties: from whence they transport the herb of *Paraguay* to *Potosi*, partly in waggons, and partly on mules; which they perform at all times of the year with equal facility; and, though it is a journey of 1500 miles, they commonly perform it in about six weeks. They dispose of the herb of *Paraguay* for ready money, and generally gain upon it, *cent. per cent.* having sometimes made three hundred *per cent.* of the goods by which they purchased it in exchange. But the journey to *Chili*, is much more troublesome; because the passage through the mountains is only to be effected from *December* to *March*; when it takes up about a week: though from *St. Jago* to the mines, the way is entirely easy, and very pleasant.

THE commerce between *Buenos Ayres* and *Peru*, in general, is principally for the sale of cattle and mules: but those who are concerned in the former, must first ask permission of the governor; which is never refused, if the petition is backed by a present of some thousand pieces of eight. The next thing to be done, is to take thirty or forty thousand of wild cows out of the pastures belonging to his Catholic majesty; which is performed by persons who apply themselves to that business for their livelihood, and who deliver these animals at about three pieces of eight, or about 10s. 9d. sterling, a head: at which rate, 30,000 cattle may come to about a hundred thousand pieces of eight, or 17,916l. sterling; and may fetch at market two hundred and fifty thousand, or 44,741 l. 12s. 6d. sterling.

THE commerce of mules is carried on in a very different manner: for the merchants of *Peru* and *Potosi* send factors annually to *Buenos Ayres* on this account. They first obtain a licence from the governor, on giving him a very considerable present: after which, they address themselves to the inhabitants of *Buenos Ayres*, and to such persons as have farms in the neighbourhood; who enter into agreements, specifying the times when, and the number of beasts that shall be delivered. These mules are received at the appointed time; when the purchasers mark them with a hot iron on the shoulders, and are afterwards to maintain them at their own expence. They cost between 2 or 3 pieces of eight each, or about 9s. sterling; and are driven by pretty quick journies to *Salta*, which is about two thirds of the way to *Potosi*; where they
winter,

winter, and are fatted with all imaginable care. When they are in full flesh, they are conducted to *Potosi*, where they are sold for 7, 8, or 9 pieces of eight *per* head, or generally for about thirty shillings sterling: but such as are carried farther into *Peru*, are sold for 40 or 50 pieces of eight, or about 8 *l.* sterling; and sometimes much more.

THERE is also a contraband trade carried on from *Buenos Ayres* with the *Portuguese*, who possess the opposite shore of the *Rio de la Plata*; and take occasion, at proper opportunities, to send little vessels laden with their own commodities, as well as with such as they receive from *Europe*; which is very frequently done, though the *Spanish* governors are well apprized of such transactions: but it is interest governs them in this part of the *Indies*.

2d. *SANTA FEE*, or *St. FAITH*, is the next *Spanish* establishment in this province, to that of *Buenos Ayres*, from which it is distant about 210 miles to the north-west; being situated in 39 degrees, 40 minutes of west longitude, and in 31 degrees, 40 minutes of south latitude, at the conflux of the rivers *Salado* and *Paraguay*: all the territory quite down to *Buenos Ayres*, on each side of the river, being very delightful, and rich in all productions. The town is built of brick, and was founded by the *Spaniards* for the defence of the rich gold and silver mines which are in the neighbourhood of this settlement: though the *Spaniards* are averse to opening them, for fear they should encourage some of their enemies to come and take possession of their treasure.

3d. *CORRIENTES*, or *CORIENTES*, is the next town in course up the river, and stands about

about 80 leagues higher; being built by the *Spaniards* at the confluence of the *Parana* and *Paraguay*; but it is so small and inconsiderable, that it noways answers the dignity of its situation, between those two remarkable rivers. *Santa Lucia*, and *Cbanas*, are still less worthy of notice; being only villages, lying on the river between the two towns of *Santa Feè*, and *Corrientes*.

4th. THE province of *Parana*, is so called from the great river of the same name, which is its boundary on the south, where it divides it from *Uruguay*: it is also bounded by *Guayra*, and *Paraguay proper* on the north; by *Brazil* on the east; and by *La Plata proper* on the west. Its length, as far as it has been discovered, is computed to be about 400 miles; though great parts of it are unknown: and the breadth, in some places, is about 340 miles.

THE towns belonging to this district, formerly lay on the *Parana*, in the following order: *San Ignatio* on the west-side of it, about 30 leagues above the place where it joins with the *Paraguay*: *Itapoa*, or the *Incarnation*, about 16 leagues higher on the same side: *Corpus*, about 20 leagues higher on the east-side: *Mundai*, on a river of the same name, near its fall into the *Parana* on the west: *Santa Maria d' Ignazu* on the east, and now lying in ruins: *Acarai*, over against it on the west-side: *Jovara* on a river of the same name: and *Paquiri* on another of its name; opposite to it. But very little is known of these towns, except their situation; and much less of those of *Loretto* and *San Ignatio*, on the *Cucapa* and *Yuti*, which lie

remote from the river; as also of that of *St. Ann*, on the lake *Appupan*.

5th. THE province of *Guayra*, is bounded by *Paraguay proper* on the north, by *Brazil* on the east, by *Parana* on the south, and by the river *Paraguay* on the west. Its greatest extent from east to west is computed about 450 miles, and about 420 from north to south; though its boundaries towards *Brazil* are uncertain, or rather unknown. The tropic of *Capricorn* cuts it almost into two equal parts; so that its climate must be very hot: though it is moist on account of the great dews and rains; which make it very fruitful in provisions, as well as diseases; insomuch, that, on account of the latter, some have represented it as a fitter habitation for wild beasts, than human creatures. However, we are told, that it was tolerably well peopled at the first coming of the *Spaniards*; which is farther confirmed by the number of towns and villages, that have been since deserted or destroyed, either by the sickness of the inhabitants, or by the inhumanity of the *Brazilian Portuguese*, who either destroyed the people, or obliged them to quit their habitations. The town of *Guayra Ciudad*, is situated in about 24 degrees of south latitude: *St. Xavier* is 300 miles to the eastward, on the confines of *Brazil*: and *Conception* lies on a river, about the same distance south-west of *St. Xavier*. The inhabitants of these little *Spanish* towns, are the posterity of some of those who settled there in 1550; but they live miserably, having no other bread than what they make of the root called *mandioc*; nor any flesh, except that of the wild beasts which they destroy.

6th. THE

6th. THE province of *Uragua*, or *Urvaiga*, is bounded by *Parana* on the north; on the south by the mouth of *Rio de Plata*; on the east by the *Captainrick del Rey*, in *Brazil*; and on the west by *Rio de la Plata*, from which it is separated by the river of that name. It is in length from north-east to south-west, about 630 miles; and in breadth, from east to west, about 390, where broadest; but much narrower in other parts.

THE most remarkable towns formerly in this country, were *Los Reyes*, *Assumption*, *Conception*, *St. Thomas*, *St. Nicolas*, *San Miguel*, *Los Apostolos*, *Santa Teresa*, *Jesu Maria*, *San Joachin*, *Santa Anna*, and *San Salvador*: which, with some others of less note, were built by the *Spaniards*; but have been since abandoned, and gone mostly to ruin.

THESE are the principal places, and things, worthy of observation, in that part of *Paraguay*, which is now in the possession of the *Spaniards*: but the more extensive and populous part of the country is still retained by the independent *Indians*; or by the *Jesuits*, to whom they have in a manner submitted, and acknowledged their ecclesiastical government; as will be particularly represented under the division of *Indian America*.

C H A P. III.

The DESCRIPTION of PERU.

SECTION I.

The extent and boundaries of this country: the nature of the soil, and climate; with a farther description of the South-Sea. An account of the lakes, springs, and rivers of Peru. Of the produce of the country; its vegetables, minerals, and animals: but particularly of the quinquina, or Peruvian bark; and the balsam of Peru: as also of the mines of gold, silver, and mercury; the method of getting and refining those metals; with observations upon their nature, value, and utility: as likewise of the Peruvian sheep, and the bezoar-stone.

BEFORE the Spaniards invaded this country, it was separated into two grand divisions: the limits on the north, being the river *Passao*, or the *Azure River*, almost under the equinoctial: the southern limits extended as far as the country of the *Araucoes*, a nation of *Chili*, in 40 degrees of south latitude; or, at least, as far as the river *Maule*, in 35 degrees: the *Andes* were the eastern boundaries: and the western part was bounded by the *South-Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*.

THE limits of modern *Peru*, as circumscribed by the Spaniards, are much the same now, as formerly among the *Indians*, except on the south;
for

for the *Spaniards* still bound it by the province of *Popayan*, which extends to the equator, on the north; by the *Andes* on the east; by *Chili* on the south; and by the *Pacific Ocean* on the west: whereby it extends from about the equator to 25 degrees of south latitude only, or about 1500 miles from north to south: though, as the land runs very irregular from the north-west, to the south-east, it must be near 1800 miles in length. It is also generally about 160 miles in breadth, from east to west: but, in the southern parts, as about the *Chackiapoyas*, it may be four or five hundred miles broad.

THE face of the country, according to *Acosta*, is very different, as it is more or less distant from the sea; who, as well as *Herrera*, divides the whole into three long narrow slips: 1st. The *Lanos*, which are sandy plains, running along the sea coast, about 30 miles broad: 2^d. The *Sierras*, which are hills beyond those plains, intermixed with vallies, being about 75 miles broad: 3^d. The *Andes*, or *Cordillera* mountains, still farther within the land; which are steep craggy mountains, far surpassing all the rest in height, and about 85 miles broad.

THE *Andes* and *Sierras*, are two ridges of mountains that run from north to south, parallel to each other, for above 3000 miles: but, beyond the city of *Cusco*, in about 13 degrees and a half, the two ridges of mountains separate themselves to a greater extent; inclosing a fruitful and extensive plain, which is called the province of *Collao*, or *Callao*; watered by many rivers, and by the great lake of *Titicaca*, which is 240 miles in circumfe-

rence; and most of these rivers fall into the lake. The *Andes* are cold barren mountains, where the snow continues great part of the year; in the same manner as has been before described under the province of *Chili*. The *Sierras* are also hills which have the appearance of a general sterility; though there are fine vallies between them, yielding great plenty of grain, and variety of fruits. The *Lanos*, are also perfectly barren; except a few vallies, into which they turn small winding streams; as also, that part of the coast, which lies within three or four degrees of the equator, where they have some heavy, or refreshing rains, a great part of the year: but, as this part of the country is generally excessive hot, it is not so well inhabited as the *Sierras*, where the vallies are more temperate.

DAMPIER and *Waser* observe, that *Peru* has generally a high bold shore, where there is no landing, except at the ports, or in some particular bays. The height of the *Andes*, along the coast of *Peru*, is unparallelled; and the disorders, which travellers feel there, from the pureness and subtilty of the air, are astonishing: whereby this whole ridge of mountains is rendered almost entirely desert and uninhabited. There are also some other mountainous uninhabited desarts in *Peru*, where a sudden blast of air sometimes strikes a traveller dead in an instant: so that the *Spaniards*, who formerly passed this way to *Chili*, now either go by sea, or by the side of these mountains, to avoid the danger; for many people have perished in going over them; and others, who have escaped with their lives, have lost their fingers and toes. *Acosta* relates,

relates, that he was informed by general *Costilla*, who lost three toes in passing this desert to *Chili*, that they fell off without pain: and that, as the same general marched over it once before with an army, great part of his men suddenly fell down dead, and their bodies remained there without stench or corruption. *Waser* likewise relates, that he landed with 30 of his men at *Vermeio*, or *Bermejo*, in 10 deg. of south latitude, in search of water, and marched four miles up a sandy bay; where they found the ground covered with dead men, women, and children; which lay so thick, that a man might have walked on them half a mile: that these bodies appeared, as if they had not been dead a week; but, when he handled them, they proved as dry, and light, as a sponge, or a piece of cork: as also, that he carried on board the body of a boy, of about nine or ten years of age, designing to have brought it to *England*; but the seamen had a ridiculous conceit that the compass would not traverse aright, while a dead body was on board; and compelled him to throw it into the sea. *Acosta* conjectures, that the people he mentions were killed by the excessive coldness of the air; which preserved their bodies from putrefaction after they were dead: but it is more rational to believe, that they were destroyed by hot winds, or pestilential blasts, which are sometimes met with in the vallies between the hills; and it may rather be supposed that the hot sands preserved their bodies from corruption: for, near the same latitude, in the deserts of *East-India*, *Persia*, and *Africa*, the *Samiel*, or *Hot Winds*, are frequently met with, which have the like effects.

It is not apparent, that the original natives had any general name for this country: which was looked upon as the dominion of the great king, or emperor of south *America*, who was called the *inca*, or *inga*: therefore, it might be called, the empire of the *inca's*; as *India* is called the empire of the great *moghol*. But, as to the modern name of *Peru*, *Garcillasso de la Vega* gives the following account of its obtaining that appellation.

* *VASCO NUNEZ de BILBOA*, who first discovered the *South-Sea*, was constituted *adelantado* of it, by his Catholic majesty, in 1514, and governor of all the kingdoms and countries he should discover: upon this, *Nunez* settled on the *South-Sea*, where *Panama* was afterwards built, and sent four ships out upon discoveries; one of which stretched to the southward beyond the equinoctial line, and sailed close by the shore, where the boat surpris'd an *Indian*, and took him prisoner. They enquired of him, either by signs, or by the *Indians* which they carried with them, what country it was? But the *Indian* misapprehended them; and, imagining they asked him his own name, answered, *Beru*: the *Spaniards* still seem'd importunate to know something more; and the *Indian* answered *Pelu*, which was the name of the river, or a common name in the language of those people for any river. However, from both these words, the *Spaniards* formed another, and call'd the country *Peru*, or *Piru*; and the dominions of the *inca's*, of which this was the most northerly province, have ever since gone under the general name of *Peru*.

THE only sea that washes the coast of *Chili*, is the *South-Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*; which has been partly

* See this Volume, p. 133.

partly described under *Cbili*. * This sea, along the coast of *Cbili*, swells and runs with long high surges, or waves, at the new and full moon: but they are safe enough at sea, as they never break there; though, where they fall in upon the shore, they make it very dangerous landing. At *Guiaquil*, in 3 degrees of south latitude, the tide runs very strong, and rises 16 or 18 feet perpendicular: but it does not rise so high on any part of the coast to the southward, where there are not such bays, or so many rivers, as here: for the tides always run strongest, and rise highest, in gulphs or bays of the sea, and up the mouths of rivers. *Funnel* observes, that the winds in the *Peruvian* seas, and on all the western side of *America*, from 38 degrees south, to 7 degrees north, are always southerly two points upon the shore: so that where the coast runs north and south, the wind is at S. S. W. and where the coast runs S. S. E. the wind is due south; except it is in the night, when the sea-wind generally ceases, and there comes a fine moderate gale from the land, which they call the land-breeze: but *Dampier* remarks, that on promontories, headlands, and such places as lie open to the sea, they have scarce any of these land-breezes; the advantage of which, are chiefly to be found in creeks and bays. This navigator also says, that the southerly winds on the coast of *Peru*, continue to blow 140 or 150 leagues from the shore before they alter: but then they may be perceived to come about more easterly; and, about 200 leagues to the westward of that shore, the true trade-wind sets in at E. S. E. which never alters till they have passed the *Pacific Ocean*,

* See this Volume, p. 207.

Ocean, and arrive at the *East Indies*. However, both *Dampier* and *Funnel* relate, that at *Arica*, which lies on the coast of *Peru*, in 18 degrees of south latitude, for near 100 leagues to the southward, this sea is very subject to calms, within 35 or 40 leagues of the shore: but that these calms are not usual on any other part of the coast. It is also observed, that when the sun is in the northern signs, from *March* to *September*, the sky is generally bright and clear: though, when the sun returns back to the southern signs, the weather is frequently so thick and hazy, that they cannot take an observation, notwithstanding they have no rain at sea, or upon the coast.

THE weather on shore is various, according to the situation of the land: for the *Lanos* never have a drop of rain upon them; but thick mists frequently rise there: on the *Sierras*, the rains fall when the sun is in the southern signs, as is the case in other countries between the equator and the tropic of *Capricorn*: and on the *Andes*, it rains, or snows, two thirds of the year, being always excessive cold. As the vallies between the *Sierras* are the most fruitful parts of the country, their season for planting and sowing, is at the beginning of the rains: and their harvest at the return of the dry weather: their vintage is also in the fair season; and their vines thrive best in those vallies near the sea, where there is little or no rain, and which are watered by rivulets that fall from the hills in the rainy season. But most part of the *Lanos* are barren desarts, bearing neither trees nor herbs; and are very little inhabited, except a few port towns situated at the mouths of rivers.

THERE

THERE are several extensive lakes in *Peru*; particularly that of *Titicaca*, which, as already mentioned, is 240 miles in circumference, and situated in the valley of *Callao*; the middle of it being in 16 degrees, 40 minutes, of south latitude; and in 68 degrees, 20 minutes, of west longitude. This lake, like the adjacent sea, is navigated by ships, and other vessels: but it is sometimes subject to storms; and the first ship which the *Spaniards* built upon it, was drove on shore by a tempest, and broken to pieces. The water of it is not so salt as the sea; but too thick and foul to be drank: there are many fish, with prodigious flocks of wild ducks, and other water fowls: besides, the towns and villages bordering upon the lake, are esteemed the most agreeable dwellings in *Peru*. From this lake, issues a large stream to the southward; which forms another lake, called *Paria*, not much inferior to the former in its dimensions; with several islands in it: and on the banks of these lakes are rich savannahs, or meadows, that feed great herds of cattle. There are also many lakes upon the mountains, that are the sources of several large rivers; two of which, on the high mountains, are particularly mentioned by *Acosta*; being on the side of the great road leading from *Arequippa* to *Callao*. From one of these issues a river that falls into the *Pacific Ocean*; and from the other the river *Aporima*, reputed to be the principal stream that forms the great river *Amazon*, which falls into the *Atlantic Ocean*, and is esteemed the largest river in the world. There are also a great number of lakes in the highest tops of the *Peruvian* mountains; from whence many rivers derive their sources.

THERE

THERE is a great variety of springs in that part of the country which is remote from the sea : but very few on the sandy plains near the shore. *Acosta* mentions one, of a very extraordinary nature, near the quicksilver mines in *Guancavitica* ; which, he says, throws out hot water, that, in running a little way, turns into stone, and forms a rock, soft, light, easily wrought, and very durable, so as to serve the inhabitants for building their houses. There are also, at *Cape St. Helena*, and several other parts of *Peru*, fountains of liquid matter, called coppey, resembling tar, or pitch, and put to the same uses, by mariners, for the preservation of their ropes, planks, and tackle ; which is not only asserted by *Acosta*, but is also corroborated by *Dampier* and *Funnel*. At a farm, near the city of *Cusco*, is a fountain whose waters are naturally converted into salt ; which would be very beneficial to the proprietor, if salt was not so plentiful in the country. The waters near *Guiaquil* are celebrated for curing venereal diseases ; on which account they are continually resorted to by great multitudes of people ; as this distemper is very prevalent in *Peru*.

THE rivers of south *America* generally rise in the *Andes*, and particularly those of *Peru*, as well as those of *Chili* : but some of these rivers run eastward, and fall into the north sea, or *Atlantic Ocean* ; and others run westward into the *South Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean* : the former having an extensive course, and some of them being the largest rivers in the known world : but the latter are rather torrents than rivers, made by the annual rains, which commonly fall on the mountains between *May* and *September* ; and are perfectly dried up before *January* ;

January; the streams being so shallow and rapid, that scarce any of them are navigable.

THE four principal rivers, that rise on the east side of the *Andes*, within the limits of *Peru*, are

- 1st, The *Magdalena*, or *Grande*; which rises in the province of *Quito*, near the equator; and runs above 1000 miles directly northward, falling into the north sea, between *Cartagená* and *St. Martha*.
- 2^d, The river of *Oronoque*, or *Oronoko*; whose source is near that of *Magdalena*: it takes its course first to the eastward for 1500 miles and upwards; then turns directly north, and runs almost as far to the northward; falling into the north sea, near the island of *Trinity*; after dividing the countries of *Paria* and *Guiana*: though, according to some accounts, both these rivers have their sources in *Popayan*.
- 3^d, The river of *Amazons*, which is generally esteemed to be the largest river in the world: being formed at first by two streams, that rise near eleven degrees asunder; and different travellers differently assert each of them to be the true river of *Amazons*. The first of these rises near *Quito*, a little south of the equator, and runs south-east. The other has its source from the lake of *Pasto*, in eleven degrees of south latitude: it first runs about five degrees northward, then turns to the eastward; and unites its waters with the former. After this confluence, the united streams run between 3 and 4000 miles further eastward; being enlarged by a multitude of other considerable rivers, falling into it, both on the north and south sides; till it discharges itself into the *Atlantic Ocean*, under the equator; being, at least, 50 leagues wide at the mouth.
- 4th, The river of *Plata*, which

which is little inferior to the last, and rises near the town of *Plata*, in *Peru*, in 20 deg. of south latitude. It first runs to the east-ward, till joined and augmented by several other streams : then its course is bent directly south, till it comes into 34 degrees ; when it stretches away to the east-ward ; falling into the *Atlantic Ocean*, in 35 degrees of south latitude, near the town of *Buenos Ayres*, in *Paraguay* ; being about 30 leagues broad, where it disembogues itself into the sea.

THE principal rivers of *Peru*, which rise on the west side of the *Andes*, and fall into the *Pacific Ocean*, are, 1st, The *Coloncha*, which empties itself into the sea, in 2 deg. of south latitude. 2^d, 3^d, 4th, 5th, and 6th, The *Daule*, or river of *Guiaquil*, and the *Narangal*, in 3 degrees : the *Bolas*, *Tenques*, and *Jubones* : all of them falling into the gulph of *Guiaquil*. 7th, and 8th, The *Catamayo*, and *Colan*, in 4 deg. $\frac{1}{2}$. 9th, The *Piura*, in 5 deg. 10th, 11th, and 12th, The *Lano*, *Seco*, and *Pascamayo*, between 6 and 8 deg. 13th and 14th, The *Chicama*, and *Chimo*, in 9 deg. 15th, The *Santa*, in 11 deg. 16th, The *Mala*, in 12 deg. 17th, The *Nasca*, in 14 deg. 18th, The *Nombre de Dios*, in 18 deg. 19th, The *Camarones*, in 19 deg. 20th, The *Pica*, in 21 deg. 21st, The *Salado*, in 25 deg.

As to the natural productions of *Peru*, they are rich, useful, and necessary : either as to vegetables, minerals, or animals.

THERE is a great scarcity of forests, or timber-trees, except in the province of *Quito*, near the equator ; where there are plenty of cedars, cotton-trees, cocoa-trees, palms, mangroves, bamboes, maho-trees, light-wood, and several other kinds, which

which grow in *Mexico* : but none are so valuable as the quinquina, or peruvian bark.

THE quinquina is also called quinaquina, china-china, and kinkina ; cortex peruvianus, or the peruvian bark ; the bark ; and popularly the jesuit's bark, being, at its first introduction, chiefly sold and administered by the jesuits. The tree which yields this bark grows in several parts of *Peru* ; but the best and finest sort is produced on the mountains, about 40 miles round the city of *Loxa*. The tree is tall, and about the thickness of a cherry-tree ; tapering from the root upwards ; but without any branches till near the top, where they grow regular, as if lopped by art ; and, with the leaves, which are round and indented, form an exact hemisphere. It bears a long reddish flower, from whence arises a kind of pod, in which is found a kernel, like an almond, cloathed with a slight rind. The bark is blackish on the outside ; but sometimes mixed with white spots, where grows a kind of moss, by the *Spaniards* called *barbas*, whose leaves resemble those of the plumb-tree. *Emery* observes, that there are two sorts of the quinquina tree ; the one cultivated, and the other wild ; but that the former is much preferred to the other : that the best bark is of the most lively colour, resembling dark cinnamon, most curled up, as coming from the small branches ; of a bitter taste, very astringent, or rough and stiptic upon the tongue : as also that the thick flat dark-coloured is not so good ; and is of no value, if it wants the bitter taste and stipticity. *Bernard* says, that the bark which comes from the trees, at the bottom of the mountains, is thickest ; because it receives most nourishment

ment from the earth ; being smooth ; of a whitish yellow without, and a palish yellow within : that which comes from the trees at the top of the mountains is abundantly more delicate : but the trees which grow in the middle of the mountains have a bark still browner than the other, and more rugged : they are all bitter ; but that from the trees at the bottoms of the mountains less than the others. It follows from hence, that the bark of the least virtue grows in the lowest places ; because it abounds more with earthy and watery parts, than that which grows high, and is for the contrary reason better : but the best grows in the middle of the mountains, where it has neither too much, nor too little nourishment. There is also another kind of this bark, which comes from the mountains of *Potosi*, that is more brown, bitter, and aromatic than the former ; but much scarcer than any of the rest.

ACCORDING to the most authentic accounts, the *Spaniards* distinguish four sorts of this precious bark ; as, the *cascarilla colorada*, or *reddish bark* ; *amarylla*, or *yellowish* ; *crespilla*, or *curling* ; and *blanca*, or *whitish*. The *colorada*, and *amarylla*, are reputed the best. The *crespilla* is the produce of the same sort of tree ; only growing in a cold climate, which impairs the quality of the bark ; and renders it whitish on the outside, cinnamon coloured within, and unfit for medicinal use. But the *blanca* is procured from another species of the tree ; of a much larger trunk ; and the leaves of a lighter green colour : the bark being a very thick spongy substance, whitish on the outside, and so tough as to require the force of an axe to slice it from the tree.

WHEN

WHEN the *blanca* is first cut down, it is as bitter as the best sort, and has then the same virtue in the cure of intermitting fevers; but, when dry, and kept any length of time, it grows good for nothing. Though, in reality, both sorts are found to have much more certain and speedy effects when green, than when dry; so that the *Europeans* only come in for the second virtues: besides, the bad sort is in great plenty, and the good extremely scarce; for which reason, large quantities of the worst sort are mixed with a little of the fine bark sent from *Panama* to *Europe*.

THE small bark, that curls up like sticks of cinnamon, and is much esteemed in *England*, as being supposed to be sent from the branches of the tree, and therefore more efficacious in the cure of fevers, is only the bark of the young trees; which, being very thin, curls in this manner: for the bark of the branches is never gathered, as it would not compensate the charge of cutting.

THE season for cutting the bark is in *August*, when the country is dry; and the cutters are *Indians*, provided each with a large knife and bag. When they have sliced down the bark as high as they can reach, they fasten short sticks, with withs, to the tree, at proper distances, like the steps of a ladder; whereby they ascend, and slice to the very top, till the bag is full; when they carry it to the low country, to dry in an adjacent hut; which is done by spreading it in the open air, and turning it frequently: but, if it happens to be cut wet, they carry it immediately to the low country to dry; otherwise it loses its colour, turns black, and rots.

AFTER a tree has been barked, it requires eighteen, or twenty years, to grow again: and there is an opinion, that the better sort of bark will soon be exhausted, or at least inaccessible; either on account of its distance from any inhabited place, and the impenetrability of the woods where it grows; or by the want of *Indians* to cut it, whose race, through the cruelties of the *Spaniards*, is like to be totally extinct.

THE qualities to be observed in the bark, are, that it is heavy, of a firm substance, sound, and dry: but such as is rotten, and will suck in water presently, ought to be rejected; as does also such as flies into dust on breaking, or is dirty and unclean. The best choice is of little thin pieces, dark and blackish without, with a little white moss sticking to it, reddish within, and of a bitter disagreeable taste: for that which is of a ruffet-colour is of little value; and care should be taken that no other wood is mixed with it, there being sometimes more of that, than of the bark itself.

THE quinquina was but little known in *Europe* till the year 1640: the jesuits of *Rome* first brought it into reputation in *Spain*, and *Italy*, in 1649; and, in 1650, the cardinal *de Lugo*, of that order, brought it into *France*; where it was at first sold for its weight in gold; though, at present, it is sold at *Amsterdam*, from 1s. 6d. to 2s. 3d. sterling the pound. When reduced into powder, it is called the cardinal's powder by foreigners; but more usually the jesuits powder, or pulvis patrum. It met with great opposition at first; when *Chiffet* and *Plempius* distinguished themselves against it: but it is now almost universally allowed to be

ene

one of the best and greatest remedies within the whole province of medicine; especially for the cure of intermitting fevers, for which purpose it is given in substance, tincture, or infusion: though, as it is a medicine some people have an utter aversion to, and as the use of it may be attended with bad consequences, unless properly applied, it is necessary for the use of it to have the direction of an able physician.

HOWEVER, the *Spaniards* say, that the use of this bark was accidentally discovered by an *Indian*, who was in a fever, and drank the water of a pond, wherein several of these trees were fallen, whereby he was cured; which incited some curious persons to enquire into the occasion, and discover this inestimable medicine.

THE maguey is a tree, from which the *Indians* get a kind of honey, vinegar, and drink: the stalks and leaves are also good to eat, and may be wrought like hemp; so that they make a kind of thread from it, called pica: the wood of it serves to cover houses; its prickles, or thorns, for needles; and the *Indians* use the fruit as a kind of soap for washing.

THE *Peruvians* have always been supported by their culture of maize, or *Indian* corn, which they used like *European* wheat for making bread, and like barley for making a kind of strong beer: but, as the country is generally hot, and dry, as well as mountainous, they had great difficulty in collecting the waters, and introducing rivulets into their arable lands; without which, this sort of grain will not grow in that hot climate. The *Indians*, therefore, throw their fields into level

squares, that they may retain the water: and where they meet with a mountain of a tolerable good soil, they cut it into squares, one above another, from the bottom to the top, supporting them with little stone walls; so that they have an appearance like hanging gardens, or stairs; and, if they discover a fountain on the top of the hill, it serves them for watering all the squares beneath. The ancient *Indians* were accustomed to make aqueducts and canals, several hundred miles in length, into which they brought all the streams and rivulets they could meet with; from whence every man was permitted, in his turn, to let water into his grounds, for the improvement of his corn and grass: but the *Spaniards* have suffered most of their aqueducts to run to ruin; having introduced wheat, and other *European* grain, which require less moisture than the *Indian* corn: besides, these countries are now nothing like so populous as they were, when the *Spaniards* first settled there, and consequently less grain is wanting.

By the sea coast, below *Arequipa*, for 600 miles, the inhabitants use no other dung for manuring their lands, than that of sea fowls, which breed on the islands near the coast in amazing numbers; and lay such prodigious heaps of dung, that they appear like hills of snow at a distance. On other parts of the coast, more to the southward, the *Indians* dung their soil with a small fish, like pilchards: though it is with infinite labour that they procure a subsistence, as they have no springs, or rivers, in some places; and, as their sterile sands are seldom sprinkled with rain, therefore, according to *De la Vega*, the natives, who inhabit the sea coast,

coast, dig eight or ten feet deep through the sand, till they meet with earth that has some moisture in it, where they plant grains of maize in holes, at equal distances; and in these holes they put some pilchards heads, which, without any other dunging, or watering, brings the corn to perfection.

WHEAT and barley were first imported into *Peru*, about the year 1540, by a noble lady, who had a plantation bestowed upon her, by the *Spanish* vice-roy, for being so great a benefactress to the country: because both these grains thrive extremely well, and yield a great increase in several parts of *Peru*.

FRANCIS de CARAVANTES, a nobleman of *Toledo*, planted the first vines in *Peru*, which he imported from the *Canaries*; and the *Spaniards* soon afterwards made wine in this country: but the *Indians* preferred their own liquor, made of *Indian* corn, to any wine made of grapes. They water their vineyards in all parts of *Peru*, chiefly by turning rivulets through them, or letting in the water from some adjacent river or reservoir; for the country is so hot and dry, that their vines will yield no grapes if they are not watered: therefore, when they would have them bear fruit, they water the vines, and have grapes at what time of the year they please.

OLIVES have been also carried over to *Peru*, where they never thrive so well as other *European* plants; though they are found very agreeable to the soil of *Chili*: however, *Peru* abounds in sugar-canes, oranges, lemons, figs, cherries, apples, pears, quinces, nectarines, peaches, apricots, plumbs, and pomegranates; none of which were

to be found before the *Spaniards* arrived in the country: but there were cocoa-nuts, cacao-nuts, pine-apples, guavas, plantains, and other fruits. Those they call higas de tuna, or tuna figs, are the fruit of the raquette, or euphorbium, as big as a green walnut, covered with points almost as sharp as those of the outward rind of the chesnut; being wholesome to eat, and of a delicious flavour.

THE *Indians* had neither lettice, radishes, turnips, garlic, onions, beets, spinnage, asparagus, melons, cucumbers, pease, beans, or rice; of all which there are now great plenty; as there are also of roses, jessamine, and many odoriferous flowers, that were never seen there till they were imported by the *Spaniards*. But the *Indians* had several sorts of herbs, roots, and flowers, unknown to *Europeans*; particularly the cassavi-root, which served the natives of great part of north and south *America*, instead of bread.

FREZIER says, the niorbos is a flower peculiar to this country, which somewhat resembles the orange-flower. The herb, called carapullo, grows like a tuft of grass, and yields an ear, whose decoction makes such persons as drink it delirious for some days: but the *Indians* use it to discover the natural dispositions of their children; for, when it has its operation, they place by them the tools of all such trades as they are permitted to follow: as by a maiden, a spindle, wool, scissars, cloth, kitchen furniture, or the like; and by a youth, accoutrements for a horse, awls, hammers, or other things; and the tool they take most fancy to, in their delirium, their parents imagine to be a certain indication of the trade for which they are best

best adapted. In the plains of *Truxillo*, there is a sort of tree which bears twenty or thirty flowers, all of them different in form, and of several colours; hanging together like a bunch of grapes, which is called *flor del paradiso*, or the flower of paradise. The country also produces anami, caranna, storax, cassia-festata, guaiacum, sarsaparilla, sassifras, copal, dragon's blood, liquid-amber, and several other gums and drugs, which also grow in *Mexico*, and will be mentioned in the description of that province.

BUT the balsam of *Peru* is more particularly the produce of this province, and proceeds from the trunks and branches of a little tree. There are three sorts of this drug: the first is called the balsam by incision, and is a white liquor: the second is called balsam of the shell, which drops from the ends of the branches that are cut, where they hang small flasks, or baskets, to receive it; and thus it is drawn off till the tree will yield no more; when it is exposed in the hottest places, where it congeals, and changes to a reddish colour: but the third is a black balsam, which is made by boiling the bark, branches, and leaves of these little trees in water; and after they have boiled some time, the fat, or scum that swims on the top, is taken off; being of a dark brown colour, and, like the others, called balsam of *Peru*. The last is generally used, as well in physic, as for perfumes: it ought to be viscous, and of a turpentine consistence; of a sweet agreeable taste, and having some resemblance of storax.

GOLD and silver were so plentiful in *Peru*, in the sixteenth century, that *De la Vega* relates,

there had been exported from thence to *Spain*, every year, for twenty-five years successively, the value of thirteen millions of pieces of eight; or about two millions, three hundred and forty thousand pounds sterling; besides what had passed without account. The same author observes, that gold was found in every province of *Peru*, in greater or lesser quantities: some being found on the surface of the earth, and washed down by torrents, which the *Indians* gathered up in baskets, and separated from the sand: that the particles of this gold were as small as the filings of steel; though pieces were sometimes found of the size and form of melon-seeds: and that the gold of *Peru* is generally about 18 or 20 caracts in goodness.

GOLD is the heaviest, purest, most ductile, and shining of all metals; therefore, the most valuable. It is generated in mines in several parts of the world; but the greatest quantity is brought in bars or ingots from *Peru*, *Chili*, and *Brazil*. That which is found in a mass or lump in the mines, is called virgin gold; because it comes pure out of the mine, and requires no farther separation; being soft enough to receive the impression of a seal. The second sort is in grains, not so fine as the first. The third is gold mixed with other metals, and the marcasite, or mineral stone; for the gold and stone are formed and incorporated together, which is called gold-ore. And the fourth is gold-dust, mixed with sand at the bottom of rivulets; there being ten times more gold found in such sands than is acquired by any other way.

ALL stones which contain any metal, are called marcasite; being a sort of metallic mineral: but the

the three principal kinds are marcasite of gold, of silver, and of copper. Marcasite of gold is in little balls, or nodules, about the bigness of nuts; nearly round, heavy, and of a brown colour without. Marcasite of silver is like that of gold, only paler coloured: but the colour within is very different between these two metals; the one having a gold colour, and the other a silver one; both being shining and brilliant. And the marcasite of copper is about the bigness of a small apple; round, or oblong, brown without, yellow and chrystalline within, shining, and brilliant.

THE gold of mines is of two kinds: the one in small pieces, or grains, of various forms and weights; there being some of this sort, among the specimens sent by *Columbus* into *Spain*, to evince the richness of his discovery, that weighed eighteen ounces; and the relations of those days assure us, that, in 1502, there were others found of thirty-two pounds weight: but the other kind of gold is dug up in stony glebes; which is what they call the mineral, or ore of gold. These glebes are of several colours, and generally 150, or 160 fathom deep: but they usually contain some other mineral matter with the gold; as antimony, vitriol, sulphur, copper, or silver, and particularly the last.

THE method used for the separation of gold, is first to break the metalline stone pretty small, with iron mallets; after which, it is carried to the mills, where it is ground into a very fine powder; and then passed through several brass wire sieves, one after another, the last being as fine as any made of silk. When the powder is prepared

prepared in this manner, it is laid in wooden troughs, with a proper quantity of mercury and water; being left to knead and saturate in the sun and air for forty-eight hours. After this, the water is drove out of the tub, as also the recrementitious earth, by means of other hot waters poured thereon: when there remains nothing but a mass of mercury, with all the gold that was in the ore, and the mercury is separated from it by distillation in large alembics; after which, the gold is usually fused in crucibles, and cast into plates or ingots.

THERE are two sorts of silver mines in *Peru*: the one where silver is found scattered about in small quantities; and the other where it runs in a vein between two rocks. This metal, which is the measure or standard of riches in other countries, may be considered as the natural commodity of *Peru*: for, throughout the whole of this extensive territory, there are silver mines to be met with almost every where, of more or less value, according as the ore produces more or less silver, and can be wrought at a greater or a less expence,

THERE are only a few mines to the northward of *Lima*; but to the south they are very numerous: and, on the back of the *Andes*, there lies a nation of *Indians*, called *Los Plateros*, or the *Platemen*, from the great quantities of silver in their possession; though they have little communication with the *Spaniards*. The best part of the mine countries are to the south of *Cusco*; from thence to *Potosi*, and so to the frontiers of *Chili*; where there is a continued succession of mines for the space of three hundred miles; some being discovered, and others deserted every day: though it is a com-
mon

mon thing for the people here, as well as in other countries, to complain of the present times, and commend the past; as if there were infinitely greater quantities of silver dug out of the mines formerly, than at present: and, perhaps, with regard to particular mines, it may be so; but, upon the whole, it is certain that the quantities of silver which are annually obtained in the *Spanish West-Indies*, abundantly exceed what was exported from thence in former times.

THE names of such mines as have been most remarkable, or are so at present, in the country of *Peru*, are those of *Loxa*, *Camora*, *Cuenca*, *Puerto Vejo*, and *St. Juan del Oro*; which are now wrought: but those of *Porco* and *Plata*, are filled up; while those of *Oruro* and *Titiri* are neglected. However, the greatest number of mines are at *Potosi*; and those of *Tomina*, *Chocaia*, *Atacuma*, *Xuxui*, *Chalchoques*, *Guasco*, *Iquique*, and some others, are all wrought, with more or less profit, according to the skill of their proprietors, or of such persons as have the works under their direction.

THE most perfect silver which comes from the mines, is called *Pinnas*, by the *Spaniards*; being a lump of silver, extremely porous; because it is the remainder of a part made up of silver-dust, and mercury; the latter of which is exhaled, and leaves this remainder of the mass spongy and light. It is this kind of silver that is put into different forms by the merchants, with an intention to defraud the king of his duty: therefore, all silver in this condition, if found any where on the road, or on board any ship, is looked upon as contraband, and liable to seizure. But, in regard to the art

of

of refining silver, the following is an account of the progress of the ore, from the mine to this kind of mass or cake.

AFTER the miners have broke the stone, taken out of the vein of ore, they grind it in their mills with grindstones; or in the ingenios reales, or royal engines, consisting of hammers, or pounders, like the *French* plaister-mills. They have generally a wheel, about twenty-five or thirty feet diameter, whose long axle-tree is set with smooth triangles, which, as they turn, hook, or lay hold of, the iron hammers, and lift them up to a certain elevation, from whence they drop at once at every turn; weighing about two hundred pounds, and falling so violently, that they reduce the hardest stones to powder: after which, that powder is sifted through iron or copper sieves, to take away the finest, and return the rest to the mill.

WHEN the ore happens to be mixed with some metals, which obstruct its falling to powder, they calcine it in an oven, and pound it over again. In the little mines, where they use none but mills with grindstones, they generally grind the ore with water, which makes a liquid mud, that runs into a receiver: whereas, when it is ground dry, it must be afterwards steeped, and well moulded together with the feet, for a considerable time; for which purpose, they make a floor, where they dispose that mud in square parcels, about a foot thick, each of them containing half a caxon or chest, that is twenty-five quintals, or hundred weight of ore; and these they call cuerpos, or bodies. On each of them, they throw about two hundred weight of

of

of sea or common salt, more or less, according to the nature of the ore, which they mould and incorporate with the earth, for two or three days; when they add to it a certain quantity of quick-silver, by squeezing a purse made of a skin, wherein they put it to make it fall in drops, with which they sprinkle the mass equally, according to the nature and quality of the ore; allowing, to each mass, ten, fifteen, or twenty pounds; for the richer it is, the more mercury it requires to draw to it the silver contained: so that they know the quantity only by long experience.

AN *Indian* is employed to mould one of these square parcels eight times a day, that the mercury may incorporate with the silver: for which purpose, they frequently mix lime with it; when the ore happens to be greasy: but great caution is to be used, as, they say, it will grow so hot, that they neither find mercury nor silver in it; which seems incredible. Sometimes, they also strew among it some lead or tin ore, to facilitate the operation of the mercury; which is slower in very cold weather, than when it is temperate: therefore, they are often obliged, at *Potosi* and *Lipes*, to mould the ore during a month or six weeks; but the amalgama is made in eight or ten days, in more moderate climates.

To facilitate the operation of the mercury, in some places, as at *Puno*, they make their buiterons, or floors, on arches; under which they keep fire, to heat the powder of the ore, for 24 hours, on a pavement of brick. When it is imagined that the mercury has attracted all the silver, the assayer takes a little ore from each separate parcel, which he washes in a small earthen plate, or wooden
bowl,

bowl, and knows whether it has had its effect by the colour of the mercury found at the bottom: for, when it is blackish, the ore is too much heated, and requires an addition of salt, or some other drug; when, they say, the mercury, *dispara*, that is shoots or flies away. But, if the mercury is white, they put a drop under the thumb, and press it hastily; when the silver, that is among it, remains sticking to the thumb, and the mercury slips away in little drops.

WHEN they perceive that all the silver is gathered, they carry the ore to a basin, into which a little stream of water runs to wash it, and an *Indian* stirs it with his feet to dissolve it. From the first basin, it falls into a second, where there is another *Indian*, who stirs it again, to dissolve it thoroughly, and loosen the silver. From the second, it passes into a third, where the same is repeated; to the end, that what has not sunk to the bottom of the first and second, may not escape the third. When all has been washed, and the water runs clear, they find at the bottom of the basins, that are lined with leather, the mercury incorporated with the silver, which they call *lapella*. This is put in a woollen-bag, hanging up for some of the quicksilver to drain through: then they bind, beat, and press it; laying a weight upon it, with flat pieces of wood; and, when they have got out as much as they can, they put the paste into a mould of wooden planks, which are bound together, and generally form the figure of an octagon pyramid cut short, at whose bottom is a copper-plate full of little holes: it is now stirred, that it may be fastened; and, when they design to make
many

many pinnas, as they call them, that is, lumps of various weights, they divide them with little beds, or layers of earth, which hinder their coming together: but, for this purpose, the pella, or mass, must be weighed, deducting two-thirds for the mercury that is in it; and they know, within a small matter, what is the quantity of the net silver.

AFTER this, they take off the mould, and place the pinna with its copper base on a trivet, or some such instrument, standing over a great earthen vessel full of water, and cover it with an earthen cap, which they again cover with lighted coals, feeding the fire for some hours, that the mass may grow violently hot, and the mercury that is in it evaporate in smoke: but, as the smoke has no passage out, it circulates in the hollow that is between the mass and cap; till coming down to the water that is underneath, it condenses to the bottom again, converted into quicksilver; whereby little is lost, and the same serves several times; but the quantity must be increased, because it grows weak: though, *Acosta* says, they formerly consumed at *Potosi*, six or seven thousand quintals, or hundred weight of quicksilver every year; whereby a judgment may be formed of the silver they obtained.

WHEN the mercury is evaporated, there remains nothing but a spongy lump of contiguous grains of silver, very light, and almost mouldering; which the *Spaniards* call pinnas, being, as is observed before, a contraband commodity from the mines; because, by the laws, they are obliged to carry it to the royal receipt, or to the mint, to pay the fifth to his majesty.

THESE

THESE masses are cast into ingots, on which the arms of the crown are stamped, as also that of the place where they were cast, with their weight and quality. It is always certain, that the ingots which have paid the fifth have no fraud in them: but it is otherwise with the pinnas, or masses uncast; for the persons who make them frequently convey iron, sand, and other things, into the middle of them, to increase the weight; so that, in prudence, they ought to be opened, and made red hot at the fire, for the more certainty; because, if it is falsified, the fire will either turn it black or yellow, or melt it more easily. This trial is also used to extract a moisture which the pinnas contract in small places where they are laid, on purpose to make them the heavier: though, in fact, their weight may be one third increased, by dipping them in water when they are red hot; as also by separating the mercury, with which the bottom of the mass is always more impregnated than the top: and it sometimes happens that the same mass is of a different fineness.

THE stones taken from the mines, the ore, or to speak in the language of *Peru*, the mineray, from which the silver is extracted, are not always of the same nature, consistence, or colour. In the mines of *Lipes*, they are generally white and grey, mixed with red or blueish spots; which is called *plata blanca*, or white silver: though, for the most part, there appear some little grains of silver, and very frequently small branches, extending along the layers of the stone. There are some, on the contrary, as black as the dross of iron, in which the silver has no appearance, called *oregrillo*,
that,

that is blackish : but, sometimes, it is black with lead ; on which account, it is called *plomo ronco*, or coarse lead ; where the silver appears is if scratched with something harsh ; being generally the richest, and procured with the least charge ; because, instead of moulding it with quicksilver, it is melted in furnaces, where the fire evaporates the lead, leaving the silver pure and clean. It was from the latter sort of mines, that the *Indians* drew their silver : for, having no use of mercury like the *Europeans*, they only wrought those whose ore would melt, by heating their furnaces with ylo, or the dung of the llamas, and other beasts.

THERE is another sort of ore like the last, very rich, and affording the finest silver ; but it turns red, if wetted and rubbed against iron ; for which reason it is called *rosicler*, signifying the ruddiness of the morning. There is some that glitters like talc, or isinglass ; but it yields little silver, and is called *zoroche* : the peel is of a yellowish red, very soft, and broken in bits ; being principally wrought on account of the easiness of getting the ore. There is some green, not much harder than the last, called *cobrisso*, or copperish ; which is very scarce and hard to be managed, notwithstanding the silver appears in it, and it is almost mouldering : for, sometimes, after being ground, it must be burnt in the fire, and several other methods used to separate it from the copper. And, lastly, there is another kind of scarce and valuable ore, which has been only found in the mine of *Cotamiso* at *Potosi* ; being threads of pure silver, entangled together like burnt lace ; so fine that they

call it arana, from its resemblance to the cobweb of a spider.

THE veins of mines, of whatever kind, are generally richer in the middle, than towards the edges; and when two veins cross one another, the place where they meet is always rich: it being also observed, that those which lie north and south, are richer than those that lie any other way. But those new places, where mills can be erected, and commodiously wrought, are frequently preferable to such as are richer, and require more expence; which is the reason, why a chest of ore, at *Lipes* and *Potosi*, must yield ten marks, of eight ounces each mark of silver, to pay the charges; while five marks are sufficient to pay the expence at those of *Tarama*.

IF the mines are rich, and sink downwards, they are liable to be flooded; when the miners must have recourse to pumps and machines; or else drain them by what they call cocabones, being passages made in the side of the mountain, for the water to run out, which frequently ruin the owners, by insensibly drawing them into an insupportable expence.

THERE are other ways of separating the silver from the stones that confine it, and from other metals that are mixed with it, by fire, or strong separating water, made use of at some mines, where other means fail, and where they make a sort of ingots, called bollas: but the most general and useful method is to make the pinnas or masses, which are preferred to other forms, on account of their easiness in making, and because they save some ingredients; being a thing of consequence
in

in works of this nature, where a saving in the expence, has the same effect as the discovery of the mine.

IT is natural to suppose, that, in mines, as well as other things, there happens great variation in their product, and value. The mines which lately yielded most silver, are those of *Orura*, a little town, 240 miles from *Arica*: but, in 1712, there was one discovered at *Ollachea*, near *Cusco*, that yielded 2500 marks, of eight ounces each, out of every chest, being almost one fifth part of the ore; though it has so much declined, that it is now reckoned among the ordinary sort. Those at *Lipes*, are the next in estimation: for those at *Potosi* yield little in proportion, and cause a large expence, on account of their great depth. However, the quantity of ore that has been already wrought at *Potosi*, and laid several years upon the surface, is thought capable of affording a second crop; being a proof that these minerals generate in the earth, like all other inanimate things; and it is likewise certain, from all accounts of the *Spaniards*, that gold and silver, as well as other metals, are continually growing, and forming themselves in the bowels of their natural earths: which opinion is verified by experience, in the mountain of *Potosi*, where several mines have fallen in, and buried the workmen with their tools; whose bones, and some pieces of wood, have been afterwards discovered, with veins of silver actually running through them.

THESE mines belong to the person that first discovers them; who immediately presents a petition to the magistrates, to have such a piece of

earth for his own, which is immediately granted: when they measure eighty *Spanish* yards in length, and forty in breadth, for the discoverer; who chooses what space he thinks fit, and does what he pleases with it. The same quantity is then measured for the king, and sold to the best purchaser: though, if any other person is inclinable to work part of the mine himself, he bargains with the proprietor for a particular vein; when all that he digs out is his own property, after paying the royal duty, which is the twentieth part for gold, and a fifth for silver: but some land-lords find such an account in letting out their ground, and their mills, that they live upon the profit, without any hazard.

THE specific gravity of fine gold is to that of mercury, as 19,640 is to 13,943: to that of the hardest lead, as 19,640 to 11,356: to that of fine silver, as 19,640 to 10,091: to that of fine copper, as 19,640 to 9000: to that of iron, as 19,640 to 7690: to that of tin, as 19,640 to 7,320: and to that of native red cinnabar, as 19,640 to 7300.

A cubic inch of pure gold, weighs 12 oz. 2 dr. 52 gr. and the cubic inch of silver, 6 oz. 5 dr. 28 gr. The pound weight, of 12 oz. troy, of gold, is divided into 24 caracts; and the pound weight of fine gold, according to the *English* coinage, is worth 48 *l.* 10 *s.* 6 *d.* sterling; the pound weight of fine silver being worth 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 11 *d.* $\frac{1}{4}$ sterling: fine gold is in value to crown gold, as 1 to .9167; and fine silver in value to sterling silver, as 1 to .9260. The *English* standard for gold, is 22 caracts of fine gold, and 2 caracts of copper; which, being melted together, is esteemed the true standard for gold coin: that is, if any quantity of
fine

fine gold, is divided into 24 equal parts, and 22 of those parts are mixed with two of the like parts of copper, the mixture is called standard gold; an ounce of which, when a guinea is valued at 21 shillings, is worth 3 *l.* 18 *s.* 1 *d.* $\frac{8}{29}$; and the pound weight of that gold, is worth 46 *l.* 17 *s.* 8 *d.* $\frac{12}{29}$, which, in the reign of *Edward* III. was coined only into 14 *l.* sterling: but, as bullion, it is worth 4 *l.* an ounce, and 12 ounces of bullion are coined into 44 $\frac{1}{2}$ guineas. The standard for silver, is eleven ounces and two penny weight of fine silver melted, with eighteen penny weight of copper, which is called sterling silver; 12 ounces of bullion silver, being coined into 62 shillings; at which rate, the crown piece weighs about 19 d. wt. 8, 516, 129 gr. the current value is 5 *s.* and the value of the same as bullion, at 5 *s.* an ounce is 4 *s.* 10 *d.* $\frac{1}{10}$.

FINE gold is that which loses nothing of its primitive weight in assaying: but, if the loss is $\frac{1}{24}$ part, it is called 23 caracts fine, or 1 caract better than standard: if it loses $\frac{2}{24}$ parts, it is 22 caracts fine, or standard: if $\frac{3}{24}$ parts, it is called 1 caract worse than standard; and so, in proportion, as it happens to be better or worse: but the loss, on assaying silver, is computed by penny weights, and other subordinate denominations. The present value of gold is to that of silver, as 14 to 1; but, till the discovery of *America*, it was only as 12 to 1; and this proportion varies, as gold is more or less plentiful, or as there is a greater or a lesser circulation of silver. However, the present proportion, especially if reckoned as 1 ounce to 15, does not seem altogether so well adjusted as might be wished; because, considering the present scarcity of silver in *Europe*, which is owing to the im-

menſe ſums of that coin carried to the *East-Indies*, the prevailing cuſtom, lately introduced, of working ſuch great quantities of ſilver into plate, and to the failing of the mines, the price of gold ſeems to be raiſed too high, and requires to be gradually brought back to its firſt proportion.

THE coinage of *Portugal* is the moſt ſimilar of any other nation to the ſtandard of *England*, where it is allowed to paſs current : but the *Spaniſh* coinage is eſteemed one of the moſt imperfect of any in *Europe* ; being ſettled at *Seville* and *Segovia*, the only cities where gold and ſilver are ſtruck in thoſe dominions : though ſuch prodigious quantities of pieces of eight, and other ſpecies, are brought from *Peru*, *Mexico*, and other provinces of *Spaniſh America*, that, in this reſpect, it muſt be acknowledged, there is no ſtate in the world where ſo much money is coined as in *Spain* ; which chiefly paſſes into the hands of other nations, and particularly of the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*.

ANOTHER part of the riches of *Peru*, conſiſts in their quickſilver, or mercury, of which they have ſeveral mines in the audience of *Lima* ; particularly in the mountains of *Oropeza* and *Guancavilca*, near the city of *Guamanga*. Mercury denotes a fluid mineral matter, perfectly reſembling ſilver in fuſion ; and is found under three ſeveral forms : 1^{ſt}. in ruddy glebes, or clods, called cinnabar : 2^d. in hard ſtony glebes ; or a mineral ſubſtance, of a ſaffron, and ſometimes a blackiſh, colour : 3^d. it is alſo found pure ; for, upon opening holes in the beds of ſtones, there ſometimes gulleth a vein, or ſtream, of pure mercury, called virgin mercury ; which is the beſt ſort for chemical preparations.

There

There are mines of mercury in *Hungary*, *Spain*, and *Italy*, of all the abovementioned kinds: but *Acosta* observes, that the *Peruvian* quicksilver is made from the cinnabar; which is a mineral stone, red, heavy, and brilliant; being esteemed as marcasite of quicksilver; or rather as quicksilver petrified, and fixed, by means of sulphur, and a subterraneous heat: for it can be chemically reduced, without much trouble or loss, to the nature of mercury; and each pound of good cinnabar, will yield fourteen ounces of mercury.

THE native *Indians* wrought these mines a considerable time before the *Spaniards* settled in their country, without understanding the nature and value of the mineral: for, as the cinnabar yields a vermilion, they only sought after this stone, which they called *limpi*; and used it, like the ancient *Romans*, or modern *Ethiopians*, for painting their faces and bodies on festivals and rejoicing times; or else to beautify the images of their deities. Nor were these quicksilver mines discovered by the *Spaniards*, till the year 1567, when *Henriques Garcias*, a native of *Portugal*, happened to meet with a piece of ore, which the *Indians* called *limpi*; when he imagined that this must be the same as the *European* vermilion, which he knew was extracted out of the same ore with quicksilver: therefore, he went to the mines to make the experiment, and found it to be according as he had conjectured. Upon this discovery, a great number of labourers were immediately employed to draw the quicksilver out of the mines, in the neighbourhood of *Guamanga*; one of which is described, by *Acosta*, to be a rock of hard stone; intermixed

with quicksilver, extending about eighty yards in length, forty in breadth, and 140 in depth; being so capacious, that three hundred men might work in it together.

THE refining, or separating quicksilver from the ore, is done in the following manner. The stone, or hard ore, wherein it is found, is beat to powder, and put into the fire in earthen pots, well luted and closed. When the stone is melted by the heat of the fire, the quicksilver separates itself, and ascends till it reaches the top of the pot, where it congeals: though if it was suffered to pass out, without meeting any hard substance, it would ascend till it became cold; and then, congealing, it would fall down again: but, as the ore is melted in earthen pots, it congeals at the top of them, which they unstop, and draw out the metal when it is cold; for, if there remains any fume, or vapour, it endangers the lives of the workmen; who, at least, will lose their teeth, or the use of their limbs.

As mercury is a very fluid body, it is more difficult to be found than other metals: because, according to *Lemery*, it insinuates itself into earth, and the clefts of stones; where the miners frequently lose sight of it, when they imagine they are just going to take it up: nor can men work at it many years, without being afflicted by paralytic disorders.

QUICKSILVER is the heaviest of all metals, except gold; to which it is, as 13,943 to 19,640; to lead, as 13,943 to 11,356; and to silver, as 13,943 to 10,091: for *Furetiere* affirms, that a solid foot of mercury weighs 947 lb. and that a
cubical

cubical foot of river water weighs only 70 lb. so that a vessel which will hold 35 pints of water, will contain 947 lb. of quicksilver.

MERCURY is sold at *Amsterdam*, for about 1 *l.* 14 *s.* sterling the pound; where it should be chosen white, fluid, clean, quick, and of a beautiful water-colour: but, if the colour is brown and leady, if it sticks to the hands, or runs in minute globules, it is a sign that it is not pure, that there is some mixture of lead, and consequently that it is good for nothing.

THE uses of mercury are very considerable in refining gold and silver; in gilding, making looking glasses, and especially in medicine: but the *Spaniards* never refined their *Peruvian* silver with mercury, before the year 1571, when *Ferdinandez de Valesco* came there from *Mexico*, and put them into this method: after which, they conveyed their quicksilver in skins to the port of *Arica* by sea, and from thence by land carriage to the mines of *Potosi*; where they extracted much greater quantities of silver from their ore by mercury, than they were capable of doing alone by fire: for these mines annually consume about seven thousand quintals of mercury, in refining silver; exclusive of the consumption of other mines.

THERE are some precious stones found in *Peru*; particularly emeralds, and turquoises; as also crystal; and some pearls are fished on the coast, which are sold to the *Peruvians*.

BEFORE the *Spaniards* established themselves in this country, the *Peruvians* had no horses, cows, asses, sheep, goats, swine, dogs, cats, and other creatures of the *European* species: but these were afterwards carried over, and have multiplied amazingly,

ingly, especially poultry, which the *Indians* look upon as an extraordinary advantage.

THE animals peculiar to *Peru*, to which the *Europeans* have given the names of sheep and goats, because they resemble them more than any other animals in this part of the world, are generally distinguished by the names of llamas and vicunnas.

THE llamas, or *Peruvian* sheep, are also called pacos, huanacu, and guanacu, by the *Indians*; as also chillehueque in *Cbili*; and by the *Spaniards* carneros de la tierra, or the country sheep: which are again distinguished by the tame and the wild, or the large and the small kind. The large tame huanacu, according to *De la Vega*, is of the bigness of a stag; with a long neck, bowing downwards, and resembling a camel more than any other beast, only it has no bunch on the back. Their bodies are covered with a coarse wool, and the hide makes excellent leather: but their heads are small in proportion to their bodies; being something between those of a horse and a sheep: the upper lip, like that of a hare, is cleft in the middle, through which they spit about five or six yards from them, against any thing that gives them offence; and if any of their spittle falls upon the face of a person, it makes a reddish spot, which is soon followed by an itching. Their height is from about four feet to four and a half: though they are of so gentle and tractable a disposition, that a child may govern them. The tame ones are very different in colour; but the wild ones are always of a chestnut hue. *Herrera* says, some of these creatures are woolly, and others smooth; being larger than *European* sheep, and less than calves.

calves. The flesh of this animal, when young, is tender and delicate eating; being so wholesome and inoffensive, that it is preferred before chickens for the food of sick people: though, when they grow up, the flesh is coarse; and will keep a long time, if properly salted and dried: but they were mostly valued for carrying burthens, before horses and mules were imported among the *Peruvians*; for all kinds of merchandize were transported from one part of the country to the other, upon the backs of these creatures. *Herrera* observes, that five hundred, or a thousand of them go in a body, laden with any sort of goods, attended only by eight or ten *Indians*, and every sheep carrying a hundred weight, or at most a hundred and quarter; with which they travel about twelve miles a day; though, for one day's journey, they will carry two hundred weight, and travel 24 miles. He also says, that they love a cold climate: but, that the smooth sheep are apt to take fright, and run up to the mountains, with their burthens on their backs; which makes it sometimes necessary to shoot them, to save what they carry: besides, they will sometimes be fullen, and lie down; when no beating will cause them to rise; so that the *Indians* are obliged to sit down, stroke, cherish, and appease them, for two or three hours, before they can get them into humour, and entice them to proceed on their journey. According to the account of *De la Vega*, it is common to see eight hundred, or a thousand of these sheep in a caravan; which are so sure footed, that they will carry their burthens over rocks and precipices, where a man must travel on foot with difficulty: he says,
their

their usual burthen is about sixty or eighty pounds weight, with which they travel nine or ten miles a day; but are not to be driven beyond their accustomed pace; for, if they are, they tire and lie down, and there is no getting them up again, though their burdens are taken off their back; on which account, there are always forty or fifty of them unladen in the caravans; and, when one of the laden sheep begins to be tired, the driver eases him of his burthen, by laying it on one that is fresh and unloaded. Other authors observe, that these animals walk a regular pace; holding their heads up with great gravity: but, that it is impossible to make them move with their burden at night; when they lie down, till it is taken off, that they may go and graze. They are no charge to their masters, who only unload them, and turn them to graze in the common fields, at the end of every stage; their common food being a sort of grass called ycho, like the small rush; only a little finer, with a sharp point at the end; and with which all the mountains are covered. The sheep eat little, and seldom drink: besides, they never require shoeing; because they are cloven-footed, and have a callous spongy matter at the bottom of their feet. The *Spaniards* also make use of them, in the mines, to carry the ore to the mills; and, as soon as they are loaded, they go without any guide to the place where they are used to be unloaded. It should be observed, that they have a kind of spur above the foot, which makes them so sure footed among the rocks; because they make use of it to hold, or hook by, in paths of any danger. The lesser sort of sheep, or pacos, carry

carry no burthen; but their flesh is almost as good meat as the former: their wool being long, and much esteemed, of which the natives make several sorts of stuffs for cloathing, and dye it of various colours that never change or fade: but the *Peruvians* never milked either of them, or indeed any other animal. The wild sheep afford wool, though not so fine as the tame ones; nor is their flesh so nourishing or delicate: they seem to be the same as the vicunnas of *Chili*: and *De la Vega* relates, that the males usually keep a watch on the hills, while the females are feeding in the vallies; to whom they neigh like horses, when they discover any people approaching towards them; upon which, the females fly to their cover, and the males always bring up the rear, till they are out of danger.

THE *Peruvian* goats, called, by the *Spaniards*, vicunnas or vigognias, because they resemble the *European* goat more than any other animal; is shaped much like the llama, but is smaller and higher; being larger than a goat, long legged, without horns, and so swift of foot, that no greyhound can take it; which makes them usually shot or snared by the *Indians*, who hunt them in the highest parts of the mountains near the snow, and drive them into some narrow pass, where they have fastened cords a-cross, three or four feet from the ground, with bits of wool and cloth hanging at them. When the vicunnas come to the pass, they are terrified at the motion of these bits of wool and cloth, and are afraid to proceed farther; so that they press together in a throng, when the *Indians* kill them with stones made fast

at

at the end of leather thongs : but, if any guanacos, such as have been described under *Cbili*, happen to be with them, they leap over the cord, and are followed by the vicunnas. The flesh of this animal is lean, tough, and ill-tasted ; though in great esteem with the *Indians*, on account of some of its reputed healing and medicinal qualities. Its wool, or rather fine soft fur, is much more preferable than the wool of the llamas, being of a light chefnut colour, and never dyed ; so that it was used for making the finest garments and carpets, which were permitted to be used and worn only by the incas, and the royal family.

THE guanacos, or vicachas of *Peru*, are larger, and more corpulent, than the vicunnas. The alpaques is a black animal, somewhat like the llama, having extraordinary fine wool : but their legs are short, and their snouts contracted so much as to form some resemblance to the human countenance : the *Indians* also make these creatures carry a burthen, as well as the llamas, and much of the same weight : their wool serves to make stuffs, cords, and sacks ; their bones are used to make utensils for weavers ; and their dung serves for firing.

THERE are red and fallow deer in *Peru* ; but they are not so large as those of *Europe* ; and were so numerous, before the arrival of the *Spaniards*, that they came in droves into the villages ; where the common people never attempted to take or destroy them, because they were royal game. They had also plenty of rabbits, like those of *Cbili*, both wild and tame ; which every man was at liberty to keep or take, whenever he had an inclination.

THIS

THIS country was but very little infested by wild beasts: however, they had a few lions, which were neither so large, or so fierce, as those of *Africa*: there were still fewer bears: only a small number of tygers, upon some of the highest mountains of the *Cordilleras*: and no wolves at all; which was very happy for the security of their cattle, especially as the *Indians* had no dogs capable of defending their flocks; nor, indeed, had they any other dogs, but a kind of mongrels, or lurchers, that never barked, and were like those which *Columbus* saw in the island of *Cuba*, when he first discovered *America*.

THERE are great numbers of monkeys in this country, of various kinds and colours; some black, others grey, and a third sort spotted: some with tails, others without, and one kind four times as large as the ordinary monkeys; whose tricks and dexterity are scarce credible, though mentioned by *Herrera*, asserted by *Acosta*, and corroborated by *De la Vega*; who, among other things, say, that their motion and activity are so remarkable, that they seem to have reason and discourse; for, when they leap from one tree to another, if the distance is so far that one cannot reach the place, they hang themselves at the bough of a tree, one at the tail of another; and, making a long swing, the lowermost, with the help of the other, throws himself to the bough they aim at, where he fastens himself, and helps his other companions after him.

DE la VEGA mentions a particular beast, that is found on the mountains of the *Andes*; being like a cow in shape, though less, and without horns; of whose hides they make buff, and very strong.

strong leather. But, he says, there are scarce any of the pecoree, or warree in *Peru*; or any where to the westward of the *Andes*: however, these animals, which are a kind of *American* hog, are abundantly met with in *Mexico*: and it is to be observed, both in *Peru* and *Mexico*, which lie for the most part between the tropics, that their animals are generally of the same species; therefore, those that are more frequently found in *Mexico*, will be mentioned in the description of that province.

HERRERA and *Acosta* relate, that the bezoar stone is found in the stomachs and bellies of most of the wild cattle of *Peru*; there being sometimes two, three, or four together, of different shapes, size, and colour; as black, dark, grey, white, and green; some looking as if they were gilded, and covered with several coats or skins: some as big as filberts; others of the size of walnuts, or pidgeon's eggs; many as large as hen's eggs; and a few as big as oranges. All the beasts that engender the bezoar stone, chew the cud, and usually feed among the rocks in the snow: it is found both in the male and female, who eat, or drink, of some pasture and waters, that have been poisoned by particular herbs, and venomous reptiles: but there is one herb, which the vicuñas, and other beasts that engender the bezoar stone, run to by instinct, when they find themselves poisoned, and by that means expel the infection: which makes the *Indians* of opinion, that the stone in the stomach of these animals is compounded of this herb; from whence it derives its vertue against poisons, and produces many other surprizing effects. The stones are frequently formed

in the stomach, upon little pieces of wood, or shells, which are found in the center of the ball: but the *Indians* say, that the cattle sent from *Europe* will not breed the bezoar; because they never eat that extraordinary herb. *Herrera* observes, that the value of this stone consists in its being of singular service against infectious distempers, the spotted fever, and other diseases; as also for the pleurisy, stopping of blood, for the milk of women, and epilepsies: but the *Indians* have counterfeited them, by making factitious stones, since they have found that the real ones have been held in such estimation; which have made the good qualities of the latter suspected. However, what the *Indians* relate of this matter, seems to agree with what *Pliny* says of the mountain goats, which fed upon poisonous herbs, without suffering any damage. Besides, it is well known, that the bezoar stone is found intermingled with the dung of an animal, of the goat-kind, called *pazan*, in several parts of the *East-Indies*, particularly *Golconda*, and *Cananor*; the buds of a certain shrub, which the animal uses to browse, being generally found in the middle of it, and is supposed to be the basis, on which this formation is made. A stone of one ounce is sold, in the *East-Indies*, for about 5*l.* sterling; and one of four ounces, for about 100*l.* sterling; so that the value of the stone is augmented according to its magnitude, the price increasing like that of a diamond: but the occidental bezoar is of a much inferior value to the oriental; being heavier, more brittle, of a dirtier colour, not so glossy, and of less value. Bezoar is easily sophisticated, and the deceit as easily discovered: for the

methods of proving it are, *1st.* To steep it three or four hours in luke-warm water; when, if the water is not tinged, and the bezoar has not lost of its weight, it is pure: *2dly.* To try it with a sharp red-hot iron; when, if it enters the stone, and the heat makes it fry and shrivel, it is factitious: *3dly.* To rub it over a paper smeared with chalk, or lime; when, if it leaves a yellow taint on the former, or a green one on the latter, it is good and valuable.

THE first horses and mares were carried over about the year 1495, from *Andalusia* in *Spain*, to *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*; from whence they were transported to *Peru* and *Mexico*, where they were of great service to the *Spaniards*, in their conquests of those countries, as well as in their invasion of *Chili*. They were at first usually sold for two or three thousand pieces of eight, or about 450 *l.* sterling, a piece: but this exorbitant price was soon abated; for the horses multiplied here in the same manner as in *Chili*, and were turned loose into the fields, where they proved a better race than their *Spanish* fires; being broke, and made fit for service, at three years of age.

Cows and oxen were also highly valued, on their first importation, being sold for two hundred crowns a head; but, in 1554, the price was reduced to one hundred crowns; and, in 1590, they were so prodigiously increased, as to be sold for about twenty or thirty shillings. They were afterwards suffered to run wild in the mountains, where they were hunted, and killed for their hides; which made part of the cargoes of such ships as sailed to *Spain*: but their flesh was little valued,

valued, either by the *Spaniards*, or the *Indians*. The *Spaniards* have a particular manner of hunting, and hocksing or hamstringing, the wild bulls and cows that are found in the forrests and savannahs; which, according to *Dampier*, is done as follows. The hockser is a person who is constantly employed, and becomes very expert in this way of hunting. He is mounted on a good horse, bred up to the sport; who knows when to advance, or retreat, without giving his rider any trouble to manage him. The hunter carries a pole, about 15 feet long; to which the hocksing-iron is fastened by a socket; being made in the shape of a half-moon, with a very sharp edge, and the corners about six or seven inches asunder. When the hockser is mounted, he lays the pole over the head of his horse, with the iron forward, and then rides after his game, which he strikes just above the hock with his iron, and hamstring the beast; who immediately faces about, and makes at the huntsman with all his force: but the horse is taught to wheel off to the left, and is too swift for the wounded animal. If the hamstring is not quite cut asunder by the stroke, the beast certainly breaks it, by continually springing out his leg; when he can go but on three legs; yet still limps forward to be revenged on his enemy. The hockser then rides up softly to him, and strikes his iron into the knee of one of his fore legs; when the beast immediately tumbles down: upon which, the hockser dismounts, and strikes a strong sharp pointed knife so dexterously into the pole of the beast, a little behind the horns, as to cut the string of the neck, and dispatch the creature at one

blow. The hockfer immediately mounts again, and rides after more game; leaving the skinners, that follow him, to take off the hide; which is all they regard in *Peru*, where the wild beef is so plentiful. The *Spaniards* hunt only the bulls and old cows; leaving the young cattle to breed; whereby they always preserve their stock entire: but the *English* and *French* formerly pursued the contrary method, in their island settlements, and particularly at *Jamaica*, where the former killed all the cattle, without any distinction.

A JACK-ASS was at first in great estimation, by the *Spaniards* of *Peru*, for getting a fine breed of mules out of their mares: nor were goats and swine unprofitable animals: but all these are now very cheap, common, and plentiful. *European* sheep were first brought here in 1556; when they were valued at forty or fifty crowns a piece: but they increased so much, in a short time, that a sheep might be had for a trifle. As there are a great number of sheep; so there is a proportionable quantity of wool; which is not fine: because all the wool between the tropics is generally coarse, and like hair. Some camels have been also carried over; but their increase has been inconsiderable.

THE *Peruvians*, as well as the *Chilefians*, had but one sort of tame fowl, call nuuma, or the sucker; which was between the size of a goose and a duck: but the *Spaniards* have introduced all kinds of poultry which are common in *Europe*, and have found them multiply in a surprizing manner. However, the *Indians* had a great variety of wild-fowl, and birds, both on the land, and on the
the

the water; particularly eagles, hawks, cauders, auras, huacamayas, parrrots, herons, wild-ducks, wild-geese, swans, partridges, wood-pidgeons, and turtle-doves: besides some common in *Chili*; and others never seen in *Europe*.

THE *South-Sea*, along the coast of *Peru*, is well replenished with all manner of fish; and particularly a kind of pilchards; which are principally the subsistence of those people who inhabit the places near the sea: But their rivers afford scarce any kind of fish; which is attributed to the rapidity of their course from the *Andes*, and the shallowness of their channels. Nor are the lakes plentiful of any kind of fish but one, which has no scales, and is somewhat like a sprat in shape; though of no delicate flavour.

SECTION II.

An account of the customs of the ancient Peruvian Indians: the rise and power of the incas; their religion; and reigns, from Mangocapa to Atabalippa: with a representation of their form of government.

THE *Peruvians*, like other *Indians*, were generally of a middle stature, and an olive complexion; but of a perfect copper colour, near the equator: their hair, like that of all the other people between the tropics, was black; most of them had their heads shaved; and, like the *Chilians*, their beards were pulled off, with tweezers,

from time to time ; as also the hair off the other parts of their body, whenever any appeared ; except their eye-brows, and eye-lids.

BEFORE the incas, or yncas, subdued all the country, there was no kingdom of any consequence, among the *Peruvians* ; who lived either absolutely free, or under petty princes or lords, like the caziques of most part of *America*. The several nations were chiefly distinguished by their head-dresses : for some wore whole pieces of cotton linnen, wrapped about their heads, like turbans ; others had only a single piece of linnen tied about their heads : some wore a kind of hats ; others caps, in the form of a fugar-loaf ; with several other different fashions, which never altered, continuing the same in their respective nations and tribes, from generation to generation. But this is to be understood of the better sort of people ; for those of an inferior rank went bare-headed ; at least, the *Spaniards* have represented them so, in the pictures they have given of the *Peruvians*, at the time of their conquest. The head-dress, cap, or turban, seems to have been granted to their chiefs, as a mark of distinction. Their heads, and bodies, were also anointed with oil, or grease ; and some of them used paint, like the rest of the *Americans*.

THEIR holiday-dress was a sort of shirt, a vest without sleeves, and a mantle : they had also shoes, or rather sandals, on their feet, made of the skins of beasts untanned : but the common people, both women as well as men, usually went naked, except a small piece of linnen about their waists. *Garcillassa de la Vega*, who was descended from
the

the blood royal of the incas, represents the *Peruvians* as a very rude and uncivilized people, before they were conquered and reformed by their emperors: and though *Herrera* commends their laws and customs, he would have it believed, that the *Peruvians* were guilty of some savage and barbarous acts among themselves, when they were invaded by the *Spaniards*. But *Vega* endeavours to pay all honourable respect to his royal ancestors, by making them the reformers, and legislators of their countrymen: and *Herrera* only palliates the cruelty of the *Spaniards*, by reproaching the character of the *Indians*.

BLAS VALERA, who gave the *Peruvians* a more genuine character, says, that they exceeded most nations in the world, for vivacity of wit, and solidity of judgment: which was sufficiently apparent, because, without the assistance of letters, they attained the knowledge of several things, that the learning of the *Egyptians*, *Chaldeans*, and *Greeks*, could never accomplish. If they had any thing that seemed shocking to the *Europeans*, it proceeded not from the want of natural parts, or endowments of mind; but from their being unpractised in the politer customs of *Europe*; and from their want of masters to instruct them in the liberal sciences: for those *Indians* who had the advantage of such instruction, after the arrival of the *Spaniards*, became greater proficient than the *Spaniards* themselves, and would imitate any thing they saw so exactly, without being taught, that it surprized the *European* artists.

THOUGH the *Peruvians* had no knowledge of letters, characters, or other sort of writing, any

more than the rest of the *Indians*; yet they had methods to preserve their ancient histories, and the maxims and rules relating to their government. For this purpose, they were very exact in their traditions, which the youth received from their elders, and delivered to their children, as a thing sacred, and religiously to be observed: besides, they had a sort of pictures to supply the want of writing: but the most wonderful, and unintelligible things to the *Spaniards*, were what the *Indians* called quipos; which consisted of abundance of twists, or threads put together, full of variety of knots, and diversity of colours; every one of them signifying something; so that a bunch of these threads served them instead of a book, whereby they told all things in their history, knew their laws and ceremonies, and kept accounts to admiration. For the preserving of these quipos, there were officers called quipocamayos, who were obliged to give an exact account of what all those things signified; having several quipos for different uses: which is continued to the present time, in such a manner, that an *Indian*, by this cluster of threads, will tell exactly what an officer has done for several years, and in what parts. Others have little stones, whereby they remember any thing they are to learn; for, when their memory fails them, by looking upon these stones, they set themselves right again, as *Europeans* might by looking in a book. With regard to any intricate account in arithmetick, they will cast it up in a moment, with only a few grains of their corn, better than an able accountant can do with his pen; which must be similar to what is still practised in
some

some parts of *Europe* with counters. These were the means whereby the *Indians* preserved the knowledge of their antiquities : which were very ingeniously, and wittily contrived ; yet it cannot be supposed, that, by such means, any thing like an accurate and compleat history could be handed down to posterity. Besides, if it is considered, how much the *Spaniards* are naturally inclined to romancing, it must be inferred, that very little stress can be laid upon the accounts they have given of the ancient history of this country. However, it will be necessary to give a short extract of what *Acosta*, and some other of the best *Spanish* authors have wrote upon this subject.

THE incas began to reign between three and four hundred years before the arrival of the *Spaniards* : but, for a long time, their dominion never extended above sixteen or seventeen miles round the city of *Cusco*, where they had their original, and gradually stretched farther over all the country of *Peru*, from above *Quito* in the north, beyond the equinoctial line, to the southernmost boundaries of *Chili* ; being a tract of ground almost three thousand miles long. In breadth, their kingdom extended from the *South-Sea* on the west, to the great plains beyond the long ridge of the mountains of *Andes* in the east, where stood the inca's pacara ; being a fortress erected to secure the frontiers on that side : but they went no farther there, because of the great waters, morasses, lakes, and rivers, that were in the way to obstruct their passage ; so that their dominion extended only three hundred miles from west to east.

THESE

THESE incas surpassed all the other nations of *America* in the art of government, and politicks; but much more in courage, and martial discipline. The pretence they had for conquering that country, was the fable, that, after the universal deluge, of which they had some imperfect knowledge, the incas had been the restorers of mankind, as seven of them came out of the cave of *Pacari-tambo*; and, therefore, all other men owed them tribute and subjection, as to their progenitors. But, according to *De la Vega*, the incas asserted, that they were the offspring of the sun, who was touched with compassion to behold the depravity of human nature; and therefore sent a son and daughter of his own from heaven to earth, to instruct them to worship and adore him as their God; to give them laws and precepts, for their government; to form them into societies; and instruct them in building, planting, and husbandry, that they might live like rational beings, and enjoy the productions of the earth. It was represented, that, with such instructions, the sun placed his two children in the lake of *Titicaca*; from whence they were to begin their labours, for the reformation of mankind. That he gave them a wedge of gold, which they were to strike into the ground, at every place they slept, or rested: but wherever this wedge was to sink into the earth, and vanish out of their sight, there they were to make their residence, where the people should resort to them for instruction; because, their father, the sun, had constituted them lords and sovereigns over all men, that should be reduced by them from an uncivilized life, to the happiness of society.

That,

That, as they travelled northward, and struck the golden wedge into the earth, in the valley of *Cusco*, it disappeared, as had been predicted: whereupon the incas assembled great multitudes of people there, who adored them as children of the sun, and obeyed them as their princes. The city of *Cusco* was erected: the inca shewed the men how to cultivate their lands; and his queen equally instructed the women in their domestic occupations. Besides, they affirmed, that they only had the true religion, and knew how God ought to be served and honoured; for which reason they were to instruct all others: and, accordingly, they insisted so much on their rites and ceremonies, that they had above four hundred places of worship in *Cusco*, as a holy land, with symbolical figures in most of the adjacent places; and, as they extended their conquests, they introduced their religion. The principal object of their adoration, was *Viracocha Pachayachac*, that is, the creator of the world; and next to him the sun, who, as well as all their other guaras, or idols, they said had their virtue and being from the creator; with whom they interceded. Next to the sun, they worshipped the thunder; pretending that it was a man in heaven, with a sling and a club; who had power over the rain, hail, thunder, and every thing in the region of the air; upon which account, they offered him several sorts of sacrifices. But *Viracocha*, the sun, and the thunder, were worshipped in a different manner from the other deities; which were the moon, the morning star, the pleiades, the rain-bow, the earth, and the sea. The shepherds also worshiped the star, called *lyra*; which

which they said was a sheep of several colours, that preserved their cattle: and others adored a star, which they imagined had charge over snakes: for they believed, there was the likeness in heaven of all the creatures upon earth; and accordingly paid their devotion to some particular deity, both animate and inanimate. *Garcillassa de la Vega* says, that they gave, or offered, nothing to God; because he is lord of all: but they offered sacrifices of sheep, corn, garments, and other things, to the sun; for which purpose they had many priests, one of whom was the chief of the rest. They consecrated virgins to the sun at eight years of age, like the *Roman* vestals; of which there were about a thousand in the city of *Cusco*, who never went abroad, but were employed in spinning for the king and queen. They also made the bread used at sacrifices; with the liquor called *aca*, for the *inca* and his family to drink on festivals; all the vessels they used, being either of silver or gold. *Coreal* relates, that these virgins were to make a vow of chastity for life, and were kept in a convent, from whence they were not to stir upon pain of death. They were guarded by priests appointed for that purpose only; and if any of these virgins proved pregnant, she was punished with death, unless she would swear that she owed her pregnancy to the sacred influences of the sun: which was an infallible device to save the mother, the child, and the priest, by whose ministry the sun had vouchsafed to operate on the vestal. This divine pregnancy, says *La Martiniere*, which was ascribed to the pretended intercourse of the sun with a virgin, was no doubt the source of many irregularities;

irregularities; “and, I imagine, adds he, that the sun had a multitude of children.” However there arose a double advantage from this device; for, on the one hand, the priests and vestals indulged their pleasures without danger; and, on the other, the people took no offence at the irregularities of their priests.

THE first inca, the people of *Peru* mention, *Acosta* says, was *Mangocapa*, or *Manco Capac*; and that his queen was *Coya Mama*; from whom the chief families of the incas descended. The first of these families was called *Hanancusco*, and the other *Urincusco*; from the former of which descended the sovereigns, who conquered the country. *Cbinchiaroca*, or *Inca Roca*, is the next they mention, as head of the family called *Vizaquirao*; who was first served in gold and silver; ordering that all his treasure should be dedicated to the worship of his body, and the maintenance of his family. His successors followed his example; from whence it became a custom, that no inca should inherit the wealth, or goods of his predecessors; but furnish every thing for himself. It is here to be observed, that inca, among the *Peruvians*, signifies king or emperor; and *capac inca* the only king, which was the title they gave their sovereigns: all the male issue being called only incas; and the queen *coya*. The third inca was *Lloqui Ypangui*, otherwise called *Yacarquague*, who was founder of the family called *Aocaylli Panaca*. His son *Matacapac*, succeeded him, and assumed the name of *Viracocha*, or *God*; pretending that he was commanded from heaven to do it: he founded the race of *Cocopanacac*; and amassed immense

menſe treasures, which were buried with him, at *Xaquixaguana* ; where they were afterwards found by *Pizarro* ; who ordered his body to be burnt, because the *Indians* worſhiped it ; yet they gathered the aſhes, and offered ſacrifice to them, till afterwards thoſe, and all the bodies of the incas kept embalmed, were taken away, to deſtroy that idolatry.

CAPAC YUPANGUI, or *Pachuti Yupangui*, reigned next for ſixty years ; and was a great conqueror. During the life of his father, it happened that his elder brother, who governed for the old inca, was routed by the *Changas*, a nation about ninety miles from *Cusco* : but *Yupangui* gave out, that *Viracocha*, or *God*, had appeared to him, ordering that he ſhould raiſe forces, and cauſe him to be worſhiped, as he ought ; for men paid equal adoration to the ſun and other creatures, though he was their creator ; and would aſſiſt him, ſo as to make him victorious. Accordingly, he expelled both his father and brother from the throne, overthrew the *Changas*, and then ordered that *Viracocha* ſhould be held the univerſal lord, from which time his idol was ſet above that of the ſun, and their other gauchas, or deities. After the victory, he acquainted his ſoldiers, that it was not they who gained it ; but certain bearded men, ſent him by *Viracocha*, whom he ſaw, though they could not ; and that they had been converted into ſtones, which were to be found, for he ſhould know them again. Accordingly, he gathered abundance of ſtones near the mountains, which he appointed for gauchas, or idols ; calling them *puru-raucas* ; to whom his ſubjects offered ſacrifices, and
carried

carried them to their wars, with assurance of success from their assistance; through which conceit they gained many victories. He founded the family, called *Inacapanacac*; and made a large statue of gold, which he named *Indilapa*, and placed it on a bier of the same metal: but a great part of it was carried to *Caxamalca*, to ransom *Atabalippa*, when *Pizarro* made him prisoner. His body was afterwards found at *Cusco*, as entire as if it had been alive, and was sent to *Lima*, where it was kept a long time to be seen by the *Spaniards*.

TOPAY YUPANGUI, or *Ingareque*, was his successor: and, upon his death, his son *Inca Yupangui*, or *Yabncor Huacac*, ascended the throne; who was massacred by some of his general officers, as he was marching upon an expedition against the province of *Collasuyo*. This last inca left no issue; upon which, some of the principal men were for casting off the monarchical government, and erecting an oligarchy: but this was rejected, and *Viracocha Inca* was appointed emperor by election; who, in his old age, resigned the crown to his son *Pachacutec*, or *Urco*. The young prince was of so dissolute a disposition, that he was dethroned by the people; who elected his brother *Yupangui* in his stead. He was succeeded by his son *Tupac Yupangui*; who, after many victories obtained against several nations, resigned his authority to his son *Topa Inca*. The young prince was equally victorious with his father; and was succeeded by his son *Guainacapac*, or *Huana Capac*, who conquered the king of *Quito*, and married his daughter *Totopalla*; by whom he had a son, named *Atabalippa*, or *Atahualpa*. The emperor *Guainacapac*

was

was so excessive fond of his son *Atabalippa*, that he prevailed upon his eldest son *Guascar*, to consent that he should have the government of *Quito*, during the life time of their father, and to be continued in it after his death. It was in the reign of this emperor *Guainacpac*, in the year 1515, that the *Spaniards* first appeared with their ships in the *South-Sea*, commanded by *Vasco Nunez de Bilboa*; who proceeded as far as the coast of *Passao*, in *Peru*, which is situated under the equator, and would probably have settled a colony there, if he had not been recalled by the vice-roy of *Terra Firma*, who envied this commander, and put him to death, on pretence that he was assuming an independant authority, and intended to renounce his allegiance to his Catholic majesty. The *Spanish* historians take notice of several ridiculous omens, which they say happened about this time, and portended the destruction of the *Peruvian* empire: however, the emperor was alarmed at the appearance of the *Spaniards* on the coast; but died of the small-pox about eight years afterwards; without having the mortification to see the dissentions of his sons, which paved the way for *Pizarro*, with a small force, to conquer so populous a nation.

GUASCAR, or *Tito Custigualpa*, succeeded to the imperial dignity, when he was about twenty-five years of age, and reigned in peace, four or five years, without giving his brother *Atabalippa* any molestation in his government of *Quito*: but then, considering the loss he had sustained by dismembering, and yielding up one of the richest provinces of the empire, which prevented him from
 extending

extending his dominions farther northward; and also reflecting that his brother was so remarkable for his ambitious spirit, that he might probably rival him in the rest of his territories; he determined to resume what he had too easily conceded to *Atabalippa*; to whom he sent a herald, or ambassador, to inform him, that, by the laws of the empire, the territories of the incas could not be divided; and to require him to surrender *Quito* to the emperor. *Atabalippa* pretended to comply with this demand: but levied an army of 30,000 veterans, marched towards *Cusco*, and defeated his brother, whom he took prisoner; destroyed his guards, murdered his principal officers, and put many of the royal family to death, by various tortures: though he was soon afterwards taken prisoner by the *Spaniards*; who not only stript him of his crown, but deprived him of his life.

THIS is the short account, given by *Acosta*, of the reigns of the incas: and it is now necessary to add a few words from *Garcillasso de la Vega*, concerning the ancient government of *Peru*.

THE incas had divided their dominions into four parts, answering to the quarters of the world; and all the people were so distributed, that there were officers to every ten, every fifty, every hundred, and every thousand; who were to see that they wanted for nothing, and committed no offence; so that the inca knew exactly the number of his subjects. In every village, there were judges, who decided all controversies without appeal; but the inca himself determined all disputes between provinces. The people paid the greatest honour imaginable to their sovereigns;

who had secret emissaries in all parts, to give them intelligence of any misdemeanor, which they caused to be severely punished. The incas were absolute over the estates and persons of their subjects; so that they took such of their daughters as they pleased, either for their concubines or servants; and it was a general rule among them, to marry their own eldest sisters; but, if they died, or proved barren, they married the next in degree; and for want of them, the next of kin, or distinguished birth, who alone was reputed and honoured as the lawful wife; though perhaps there were seven hundred others.

THE orejones were the nobility, out of whom were chosen ambassadors, governors, commanders, and other principal officers. When they conquered any province, the chief of the natives were generally transplanted to another; which were their *mitimaes*, or standing forces, that served for garrisons, and composing the army when called upon.

THE *Indian* houses were very mean; built of mud, in the form of an arbour; covered with straw on the mountains, and in the plains with sedge. The usual sustenance of the people was herbs boiled with axi; and *Indian* wheat, toasted or boiled, instead of bread; which they eat on the ground, out of gourds.

THEIR year was divided into twelve months, distinguished by their several names, and they had particular festivals appointed in each of them: but, to keep an exactitude in their calculation of time, they had twelve little pillars or columns, placed on the hills about *Cusco*, at such distances, that each of them shewed where the sun rose and

set

set every month ; from whence they gave out their festivals ; and the seasons for sowing, or reaping. Extraordinary care was taken that the fields should be tilled and sowed : besides, as there was want of water, there were magnificent conduits in all parts, and trenches drawn from rivers. The land which was sowed, they divided into three parts ; the first belonged to the sun, the next to the inca, and the third to the tiller. The inca exacted no other duty from his subjects, than the sowing, reaping, and carrying in of his corn to the granaries ; with the cloaths and armour for his soldiers ; for the emperor received gold and silver from his subjects as a present, not as a duty ; because they had no other use of those metals, than to adorn their temples, and palaces.

THERE were neither taylor, shoe-makers, or weavers, among the *Peruvians* ; who all knew how to make every thing they wanted : but there were musicians, goldsmiths, painters, potters, watermen, and other artists, for serving the nobility.

THEIR public structures were extraordinary great ; where they very artificially laid stones of a surprizing magnitude ; which was done by perseverance of labour, and multitude of people : for there was one principal guaca, or temple, in every province : besides some that were universal for all the dominions of the incas, particularly two which were much more magnificent than the rest ; the one being at *Pachacama*, about 12 miles from *Lima* ; and the other at *Cusco*, called the temple of *Pachiamac*, where was the idol of the sun all of pure gold, richly ornamented with jewels.

SECTION III.

The invasion of Peru by the Spaniards, under the command of Pizarro and Almagro. The seizure and death of the inca Atabalippa; with the reduction of his empire. The civil dissensions between Pizarro and Almagro; the destruction of both; and the other civil commotions between the Spaniards. An account of the present situation of the Peruvian Indians, and of the Spaniards established among them: with a concise view of their trade and navigation.

VASCO NUNEZ DE BILBOA was the first European, who discovered the northern limits of Peru; for which, his Catholic majesty constituted him adelantado of the lands and islands he should discover in those seas: though he was prevented from completing his expedition by the envy and ambition of Peter Arias, then governor of Terra Firma*; who, intending to reap the benefit of the discovery made by Nunez, employed several pilots, and adventurers, to pursue the same track, and plant colonies in Peru: but the coasting voyage from the bay of Panama, to this country, was so extremely difficult and hazardous, before they were acquainted with the winds and currents, that all his people were discouraged from prosecuting the discovery of that country; and reported that the voyage was impracticable, or rather impossible; because the winds and currents set directly opposite to

* See this Volume p. 133.

to those that failed from north to south *America*. Whereupon, *Arias* despaired of surmounting the difficulties that had been represented to him, and desisted from the enterprize: he also abandoned the town of old *St. Mary's*, on the gulph of *Darien*, and built another town on the bay of *Panama*, which bears the same name; from whence he pursued his conquests to the north and west, in the provinces of *Veragua* and *Costa Rica*.

WHEN *Arias* had entirely relinquished the expedition to *Peru*, it was undertaken by *Francis Pizarro*, *Diego de Almagro*, and *Ferdinand de Lugne*, or *Luque*; who then resided in the new town of *Panama*, and obtained permission from *Arias* to attempt the farther discovery and conquest of *Peru*, at their own expence; which, in a great measure, they accomplished; but never enjoyed the fruits of their labours, on account of their intestine dissensions; each of them being inspired with an ambition of acquiring the sole dominion of those countries, to the exclusion of their fellow adventurers.

FRANCIS PIZARRO was a native of *Truxillo*, in the province of *Estramadura*, in *Spain*; and of a mean extraction. He first served in the wars in the islands of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*; after which he accompanied *Alonso de Ojeda*, to the gulph of *Darien*; where a colony was settled, and left under the care of *Pizarro*, who obtained great reputation by his prudence in preserving the colonists from destruction. He afterwards attended *Nunez* in his expedition to the *South-Sea*, and was employed by that general in subduing the province of *Veragua*: in which expeditions he acquired the

reputation of an excellent commander, and amassed a very competent fortune : but, as he wanted to accumulate an addition of wealth, and notwithstanding he was upwards of fifty years of age, he cheerfully entered upon the further discovery of these unknown regions. *Almagro* and *Lugne*, were also natives of *Spain* : but the former was of an obscure original, and the latter was an ecclesiastic : though both of them had obtained such plentiful fortunes, as to enable them to associate themselves with *Pizarro* in the expedition : for which purpose, they entered into articles never to abandon each other, till they had made a conquest of *Peru* ; and solemnly took their oath, in public, for the confirmation of their agreement.

PIZARRO was to command the first party that went upon the discovery ; and *Almagro* was to carry him the necessary reinforcements ; while *Lugne* was to remain at *Panama*, for laying in ammunition and provisions to support the enterprize : but whatever gold, silver, precious stones, or other effects, should be acquired, after payment of the charges, and the fifths to his Catholic majesty, were to be equally divided among the adventurers.

PIZARRO set sail from *Panama*, about the middle of *November*, 1525 ; having only one ship, with eighty men, and four horses : but, while he was suffering great hardships on the coast of *Po-poyan*, he was joined by *Almagro*, with two ships, and upwards of sixty men ; when they landed, and had some skirmishes with the natives, wherein *Almagro* lost an eye. The *Spaniards* were in so miserable a condition, that they privately sent a complaint to the governor of *Panama*, and desired him

to recal *Pizarro* from the expedition: upon which, a commissary was sent to make an enquiry into the nature of this complaint, and *Pizarro* was deserted by all his men, except thirteen, and a mulatto, who removed to the island of *Gorgona*, for the benefit of fresh water, till *Almagro* brought them a few volunteers; after which, they proceeded to the southward, passed the equator, and came to an anchor in the bay of *Guiaquil*. But it was with infinite labour and difficulty, that these adventurers proceeded so far to the southward; being obliged to bear up both against winds and currents, that set almost continually against them on these shores; so as to make them spend two years in this voyage from the island of *Gorgona*, in three degrees of north latitude, to the bay of *Guiaquil*, in three degrees of south latitude: though the same voyage may be performed in less than a month, now the *Spaniards* are acquainted with the winds, currents, and seasons, upon the coasts of *Peru* and *Popayan*.

WHILE *Pizarro* and *Almagro* lay in the bay of *Guiaquil*, they took several great floats, or bark-logs, with armed *Indians* on board; who acquainted them with the riches and fertility of *Peru*. *Pizarro* was soon convinced of the truth of this relation, by sending some of his men ashore, who were civilly received by the *Indians*: after which, he ran farther down the coast, to the latitude of seven degrees south, where *Truxillo* was afterwards founded, and discovered a very fruitful country: but his men grew uneasy, and prevailed upon him to return to *Panama*, about the latter end of the year 1527, to make preparations for the entire

reduction of *Peru*; carrying with him specimens of the wealth that abounded there, with some of the natives, and *Peruvian* cattle. However, though *Pizarro* had so happily succeeded in this discovery, and though many volunteers offered him their service, the governor of *Panama* opposed their going out upon another expedition: upon which, the three principal adventurers came to a resolution, that *Pizarro* should go over to *Spain*, to procure an authority and recruits equal to so great an undertaking; but, particularly, that he should solicit for himself the title of governor; for *Almagro*, that of adelantado; and for *Lugne*, the protectorship of the *Peruvians*, as also the first bishopric in that country.

PIZARRO accordingly set sail, arrived in *Spain*, and immediately resorted to the court of the emperor *Charles V.* which was then at *Toledo*; where he met with a very gracious reception, on presenting his imperial majesty with some *Peruvians* in their proper habits, a few *Peruvian* sheep, with several gold and silver vessels, and utensils of the fashion of that country. His overtures were recommended by the emperor to the council of the *Indies*; upon whose report, *Pizarro* was authorized to proceed in the conquest of *Peru*, for two hundred leagues to the southward of *Tumbez*, which lies at the bottom of the bay of *Guiaquil*, in three degrees of south latitude. He also procured the title of governor and captain-general, to be conferred on him during life; with the offices of adelantado, or lord-lieutenant; and of alguazil major, or chief justice: being empowered to erect four castles in *Peru*, where he thought proper; the government
and

and inheritance of which he was to retain, to him, and his posterity. He got *Lugne* recommended to the pope, to be made bishop of *Tumbez*, and constituted protector-general of the *Peruvians*. *Almagro* was appointed governor of *Tumbez*; and a twentieth part of all the revenues of the country, when conquered, was to go to *Pizarro* and *Almagro*; two thirds being for the former, and one for the latter.

THESE commissions and powers were executed at *Toledo*, on the 26th of *July*, 1528; and six dominican friars were ordered to accompany *Pizarro*, as missionaries, to assist in the conversion of the *Peruvians*. After spending some months at his native town of *Truxillo*, in raising men, and making provisions for his voyage, *Francis Pizarro* embarked at *Seville*, in *January* 1530, with his brothers *Ferdinand*, *John*, and *Gonzalo*; as also with *Francis Martin de Alcantara*, his brother by the mother's side. They arrived safe at *Nombre de Dios*, on the coast of *Terra Firma*, with one hundred and twenty-five *Spanish* soldiers; where *Francis Pizarro* was met by his co-adventurers *Lugne*, and *Almagro*; the latter of whom complained, that *Pizarro* had solicited all the power for himself, and was so much disgusted, that he refused to assist in the intended expedition, till *Pizarro* promised to relinquish the title of adelantado, and to give him an equal share in whatever they should acquire: upon which concessions, *Almagro* promised to assist him as formerly; but there was little sincerity in this reconciliation.

THEY proceeded to *Panama*, where *Pizarro* embarked in three ships, with one hundred and eighty five

five soldiers, and thirty-seven horses; taking with them a considerable number of targets, made of pike-staves, which were found to be very serviceable in those wars. After five days, they arrived at the bay of *St. Matthew*, where a council was held; wherein it was agreed, that the horses should be landed, and move along the shore; while the ships kept near the coast. Those that landed had a very difficult march, as they were stopt by many rivers and morasses: but they met with a large town, called *Quaque*, situated in the mountains, which they plundered, and made a considerable booty, particularly of emeralds. Upon this unexpected act of hostility, the *Indians* fled from the sea-coast up into the country; and *Pizarro* was afterwards so much distressed for want of provisions, as to lose several of his men: which obliged him to send away two ships to *Panama*, and one to *Nicaragua*, with the treasure that had been taken from the *Indians*, to bring a reinforcement of men and horses; giving his friends an account of the wealth of the country; and that, as it was subject to one sovereign, it would be easily conquered.

IN the mean time, the *Indians* sent advice of the invasion and behaviour of the *Spaniards*, to the governors appointed by the inca; who dispatched the intelligence to *Cusco*, where it was received with astonishment: while the *Spaniards*, with infinite labour, marched as far as *Tumbez*, in the bay of *Guiaquil*; where they were informed, that the *Peruvians* were engaged in a civil war, on account of the dissentions between the inca *Guascar*, and his brother *Atabalippa*. In this war, the inhabitants of the vale of *Tumbez* adhered to the inca; and those

those of the isle of *Puna* assisted *Atabalippa*: but, as *Pizarro* found himself unable, at this time, to attempt the reduction of the whole empire; and, as he conceived *Tumbez* to be the gate of *Peru*, where a settlement was to be made for facilitating his enterprize, he took part with the *Tumbezenes*, by joining his forces with theirs, and invading the island of *Puna*, which became an easy conquest; though it was defended by twelve thousand of the inhabitants; whose caziques were made prisoners, and delivered into the hands of the *Tumbezenes*, who immediately cut off their heads.

ATABALIPPA had assumed the tuft, or tassel, which was the badge of royal dignity; and had information of all the proceedings of the *Spaniards*, whose number he thought inconsiderable, and bent all his forces against the inca *Guasgar*, before he would undertake the expulsion of the new invaders: but *Pizarro* had received a reinforcement from *Panama*; and was joined by *Ferdinand de Soto*, with some adventurers from *Nicaragua*; which encouraged him to think of invading the continent. Accordingly, *Pizarro* transported his troops to *Tumbez*, where his landing was unexpectedly opposed by the natives, whom he had so lately assisted in the reduction of *Puna*: but these were a part of the forces of *Atabalippa*, who had defeated the emperor, and sent a detachment to oppose the invasion of the *Spaniards*. However, *Pizarro* landed his forces, and made so great a slaughter among the *Indians*, that he obliged them to abandon the whole valley of *Tumbez*; leaving behind them all the gold and silver plates, emeralds, pearls, and
other

other rich spoils, which lay heaped up in the temple of the sun, and the palace of the emperor.

THE *Spaniards* were now informed by some *Indians* of the prodigious wealth of *Cusco*, *Bilcas*, and *Pachacama* : as also that *Atabalippa*, and his whole court, were in the greatest consternation at what the fugitives had related of the *Spanish* artillery and horses ; to which animals their fears had added wings ; and they concluded, that the invaders were either gods or devils, against whom it was impossible for any human force to make resistance. *Pizarro* resolved to take advantage of the terror he had spread among the *Indians*, and proceed immediately against *Atabalippa*, while he continued under that delusion : but he first found it necessary to erect the fortress, and build the city of *St. Michael*, on the sea-coast, in the vale of *Tangarala*, to secure footing in the country, and for the establishment of a colony ; which was the first *Spanish* settlement in *Peru*, where *Pizarro* continued till his people had made some farther discoveries. He acquainted the *Indians*, that he was come in the name of the great king of *Spain*, to relieve the oppressed, and protect the injured ; which had the intended effect : for the emperor *Guascar* was deposed, and imprisoned, by *Atabalippa* ; who so cruelly treated the adherents of his brother, that they immediately sent an embassy to *Pizarro*, to desire his assistance in delivering their prince from his captivity, and restoring him to the throne of his ancestors : to whom the *Spanish* general returned a favourable answer. But *Atabalippa* apprehended he should soon be expelled from the throne he had usurped, if the *Spaniards* assisted his brother ; and therefore,

therefore, endeavoured to gain the favour of *Pizarro*, by sending a messenger to excuse the hostilities his forces had committed at *Timbez*: promising to make any satisfaction he should demand; and assuring him he was ready to submit to the commands of that great prince who sent him upon this expedition.

PIZARRO was well acquainted with the disposition of the *Indians*, and knew that this ambassador was sent only as a spy: which made him determine to lose no time in meeting *Atabalippa*, who was encamped at *Caxamalca*, about twelve long days journey from *St. Michael de Puirá*. The *Spaniards* left this town on the 4th of *September*, 1532; and advanced by slow marches, with a train of artillery drawn by the *Indians* pressed into their service: but, as *Pizarro* perceived some of his men were intimidated at the accounts they had received of the numerous army commanded by *Atabalippa*, he published a proclamation that any man, who was unwilling to proceed upon the expedition, was at liberty to return to *St. Michael*, and continue there with the garrison; which offer was embraced by nine persons: so that those left to carry on the enterprize amounted to sixty-two horse, and one hundred and six foot, among whom were twenty cross-bow men, who had a particular captain assigned them.

THIS resolution gained *Pizarro* a great reputation, as he reposed more confidence in the bravery of a few, than in the appearance of a greater number; which is of the utmost consequence for entering upon difficult enterprizes. He continued his march, with all imaginable circumspection, through

through a populous and well inhabited country; without receiving any interruption from the *Indians*: but he had intelligence that *Atabalippa* had 50,000 men at *Caxamalca*, where he was determined to oppose the march of the *Spaniards*: though he was so far from such a design, that he sent a solemn embassy to *Pizarro*, by his brother *Autachy*; together with rich presents of gold, silver, emeralds, *Peruvian* sheep and goats, and whatever the country afforded.

WHEN *Autachy* was admitted to the presence of *Pizarro*, he acquainted him, that he was sent by the inca *Atabalippa* to welcome him, and the rest of the sons of their common god and father, the sun, into that empire: assuring him that the emperor was impatient to see his kindred, whom he understood were of heavenly extraction, and to whom he promised all obedience. *Pizarro* answered, that the *Spaniards* were authorized by their high priest, the pope, to convert the *Peruvians* from their idolatry, to the christian religion: as also, that the great emperor of the christians, *Charles V.* had empowered them to enter into a league of perpetual peace and amity with the inca; and that they were ordered to offer no manner of violence to him, or his subjects, if these overtures were accepted. The whole of this conference was interpreted by *Philip*, a young *Peruvian*, in the service of *Pizarro*, who had instructed him in the *Spanish* language: after which, the ambassador returned to *Atabalippa*; and *Pizarro* entered the town of *Caxamalca*, without any opposition: from whence he sent *Ferdinand de Soto*, to return the compliment, as his ambassador

to the inca, attended by thirty horse, and *Philip* the interpreter. *Atabalippa* was then at one of his palaces in the neighbourhood of *Caxamalca*; where the *Spaniards* were conducted to him by a detachment of his army, and found him seated on a chair of gold, surrounded by his courtiers, and principal officers. The *Spaniards* had a very favourable reception, and informed the inca that their general had entered *Caxamalca*, where he was desirous of an interview with his highness, and to conclude a treaty of amity: to which the inca consented; and dismissed the *Spaniards* with large presents of gold and silver.

HERRERA says, that *Atabalippa* informed the embassador, that he would visit *Pizarro*, at the head of his army: but desired that the *Spaniards* would not be concerned, or uneasy at it; as it was customary in this country. The same author relates, that *Soto* told his general, the army commanded by the inca, consisted of about fifty thousand men; which relation intimidated the *Spaniards*; as each man had above two hundred and fifty enemies to encounter, if hostilities were committed: but that *Pizarro*, with his usual intrepidity, assembled his soldiers, and expressed himself in such a manner, with so much assurance of success, and dependence on the divine protection, that they were all encouraged, and put on fresh resolution; being commanded to be always in a readiness to receive so great a prince, either as a friend, or as an enemy. *Herrera* would have it believed, that *Atabalippa* intended to destroy the *Spaniards*; and that he ordered *Yrruminavi*, one of his generals, to have five thousand men in
readiness

readiness with cords, to seize both men and horses : that the *Indians* were directed how to behave themselves ; and had a sort of armour made of palm-tree leaves, under their tunics, not easy to be cut with swords, or pierced with spears : that some had flings, and pouches full of stones ; while others carried copper-clubs, with sharp points concealed : so that nothing was to be seen among the troops that formed the van, which were about twelve thousand ; but the rest that followed had their long spears, like *Spanish* pikes : the main body of the army consisted of about seventy thousand men, exclusive of the five thousand which were provided with cords ; and the rear was closed by about thirty thousand servants, with an infinite multitude of women ; who marched very slowly, with their inca at their head, carried on his richest bier by his principal officers. But there is no certainty that *Atabalippa* intended this treachery to the *Spaniards* : though it is evident that *Pizarro* received him in a very different manner from what the inca expected : for the *Spanish* general chose out a large square in *Caxamalca*, for this interview, surrounded by a wall, in which there were only two gates ; and ordered his horse to draw up in three divisions, behind some ruinous buildings, out of view. He then planted his artillery, so as to make the greatest execution : and he posted himself, at the head of his infantry, on an eminence, in the middle of the square, where he proposed to meet *Atabalippa* ; commanding his men, to shut the gates as soon as seven or eight thousand of the *Indians* were entered the square, and to suffer no more to come
in ;

in ; but to be ready to fall on, when he gave the signal.

ATABALIPPA seemed to entertain some suspicion of the treachery that was intended him by *Pizarro*, and halted about three miles from *Caxamalca*, where he ordered his generals to encamp : but *Pizarro* sent several messengers, with pressing invitations for him to hasten his march, and enter the town ; with which the inca complied, and put himself into the power of his enemies. As soon as *Atabalippa* was advanced to the eminence where the *Spanish* infantry was drawn up, *Pizarro* sent father *Vincent Valverde* to meet him, and summon him to submit himself, with his dominions, to the pope and the emperor : though he was determined to plunder and massacre the *Peruvians*, before he knew what answer would be given the missionary ; on whose return from the conference, *Pizarro* lifted up a white cloth, which was the appointed signal for executing the orders he had given. The great guns were instantly fired among the thickest of the *Indians*, and the musketeers made a terrible discharge ; the drums beat, the trumpets sounded, and the horse fell in three several ways among an unsuspecting, unresisting people, unwarily drawn into an ambuscade, and devoted to destruction. About five thousand *Indians* were massacred, without making the least opposition ; and *Pizarro*, with fifteen chosen men, marched up to the chair on which *Atabalippa* was carried ; where he slew those that supported it, seized the inca, and took him prisoner : after this, the *Peruvians* fled, and, in their flight, broke down

part of the wall in the square, whereby some of them escaped from the fury of their enemies.

ACCORDING to *De la Vega*, the inoffensive *Peruvians*, were commanded by their inca to make no resistance against the *Spaniards*; otherwise they would not have permitted a hundred and sixty men, whom they were able to have subdued with stones, to commit such unparalleled acts of inhumanity: for there was not one *Spaniard* either killed or wounded, except *Francis Pizarro* the general, who received a slight wound, by one of his own men, as he went to seize on *Atabalippa*. But *Lopez de Gomara* observes, that, probably, the surprize was so sudden, and the terror so great, occasioned by the sound of the trumpets, the explosion of the artillery, the firing of the small arms, the rushing of the horse upon them, and the clattering of the *Spanish* armour, that the *Indians* were in such confusion, as to be incapable of making any opposition.

PIZARRO conveyed *Atabalippa* to his own quarters, where he directed the plunder to be brought, which was immensely rich; consisting of large gold and silver vessels and utensils, fine garments of various colours, with jewels and ornaments belonging to the inca, the royal family, and the principal officers, several of whose ladies were taken prisoners; as also some of the *mamaconas*, or consecrated virgins. This massacre of the *Indians* was made on the 3d of *May* 1533; though *Pizarro* celebrated it with a festival, as if it had been a glorious victory. The next day, he sent out a detachment to plunder the incas camp, where he met with another rich booty; notwithstanding

standing the *Peruvian* generals had conveyed away as much gold and silver, as three thousand men could carry, before the *Spaniards* arrived there: but, as an inducement for the *Indians* to conceal none of their treasures, *Pizarro* published a proclamation that *Atabalippa* was alive, and that they were at liberty to give him their attendance. This occasioned several of the *Indian* generals, and principal officers, to return to *Caxamalca*, and wait upon their captive sovereign; who was kept in fetters, though attended by his women in the same manner he used to be before this misfortune; and, soon after it happened, advice was brought him of the taking of his brother *Guascar* prisoner; at which *Atabalippa* smiled, saying, he laughed at the vicissitude of fortune, since he was the same day victorious, and vanquished.

ATABALIPPA was very desirous of obtaining his liberty; and, having observed the insatiable avarice of the *Spaniards* for gold and silver, he promised to give them ten thousand bars of gold for his ransom; with as much silver, in several sorts of vessels, as would fill a great room in the castle of *Caxamalca*; besides many valuable jewels, and his friendship upon all occasions. *Pizarro* promised the inca his liberty, upon delivering of the treasure: in consequence of which, *Atabalippa* sent orders to the governors of *Cusco*, and his other principal cities, to bring a sufficient quantity of gold and silver for his ransom. But, at this time, *Almagro* arrived in *Peru*, from *Panama*, with about 200 men, and proceeded to join *Pizarro* at *Caxamalca*: while some *Spaniards* went to *Cusco*, to expedite the messengers which *Atabalippa*

sent for his ransom, and in their way passed through the town where *Guascar* was prisoner, who informed them that he could provide them more treasure than *Atabalippa*, which cost him his life; for the latter imagined the avarice of the *Spaniards* would make them accept of any proposals from *Guascar*, and got him privately assassinated.

THE treasure for the ransom of *Atabalippa* was brought to *Caxamalca*; when he demanded to be set at liberty; which he was unable to procure, through a controversy that arose between the *Spaniards* lately arrived under *Almagro*, and those who were there before under *Pizarro*, about the distribution of the plunder and spoils: but the *Spanish* generals appeased this mutiny by distributing one hundred thousand ducats among the men under *Almagro*: a fifth was then deducted for his Catholic majesty; and the remainder divided by *Pizarro*, among the officers and soldiers, in such proportion as he thought due to their merit, whose shares amounted in the whole to upwards of one million, five hundred thousand pieces of eight, or about 338,000*l.* sterling; which, considering the value of gold and silver at that time, was more than equivalent to twelve times the same sum at present.

THOUGH *Atabalippa* had paid a prodigious treasure for his liberty, *Pizarro* was determined to put him to death: however, to justify his conduct in this proceeding, he caused a formal process to be drawn up against him, consisting of eight articles; alledging that he had usurped the throne from his brother *Guascar*, whom he had caused to be murdered; that he was an idolater, and offered human sacrifices to his deities; that he

he kept many concubines, raised unjust wars, and exacted heavy taxes; but, above all, that he incited the *Indians* to rebel, and oppose the *Spaniards*, since he had been their prisoner. The inca was arraigned before *Pizarro* and *Almagro*, who sat as his judges; *Philip* the *Peruvian*, being interpreter, whom the *Spaniards* admit was an enemy to *Atabalippa*. The last charge was principally insisted upon, which the unfortunate inca absolutely denied; complaining of the treachery of *Pizarro*, who, after he had extorted such a ransom from him, had broke his faith, and was ungenerously proceeding to take away his life: but, as he had never offended the *Spaniards*, and as they could not put him to death without the greatest injustice, he desired to be sent over to *Spain*, and tried before the emperor. The remonstrances of this unhappy monarch were vain and ineffectual; for he was devoted to destruction like a slave: his judges making no difficulty to condemn him to be burnt; and father *Vincent Valverde*, of approving the sentence under his hand, that it might give the greater satisfaction to the court of *Spain*. When death was pronounced against the royal victim, he bitterly exclaimed against the injustice of the sentence; demanding what he, his wives, or his children had done, to be so cruelly treated? The judges were inexorable; though several *Spaniards* protested against these proceedings, and were ready to mutiny to save the inca from being thus ignobly destroyed; who, notwithstanding, was led to execution in the night; when the friar endeavoured to persuade him to die a christian, which the *Spaniards* assert the inca consented to, upon condition

that he should be strangled, instead of being burnt : so that he was accordingly strangled, after receiving absolution from the friar. Thus *Pizarro*, who, it is said, could neither write or read, erected a tribunal for the trial of a sovereign prince, whom he had treacherously taken prisoner, and now barbarously put to death under colour of law, which was an aggravation of the offence ; because *Pizarro* had no better authority to judge and condemn this prince, or even his subjects, than pirates and banditti have to take away the lives of their unhappy captives : but the death of *Atabalippa* was afterwards revenged on his two judges, who both perished by their own dissentions ; *Almagro* being formally condemned to die by *Pizarro*, who was afterwards assassinated by the son of the former.

PIZARRO thought fit to treat the corps of *Atabalippa* with the respect due to a sovereign prince ; whose funeral he celebrated with great solemnity : but he soon discovered how detestable this murder rendered him to the *Peruvians*, who said their former incas were happy to leave the world without the knowledge of such cruel people ; and, therefore, some of the *Indian* generals prepared to revenge the death of their emperor : while others conveyed his body away privately to *Cusco*, where the *Spaniards* were never able to find it ; though sufficient endeavours were used, for the sake of the treasure which the lamenting *Indians* buried with their unhappy monarch. The *Peruvians* began to bear an implacable aversion to the *Spaniards*, who looked upon their naked enemies with contempt : however, *Pizarro* intended to shew that it was not his resolution entirely to
overturn

overturn the *Peruvian* empire; for which purpose, he enquired of the *Orejones*, who was the worthiest person to be set upon the throne? and they proposed the son of *Atabalippa*, called *Toparpa*, whom *Pizarro* caused to be proclaimed: upon which, the *Peruvians* sacrificed a spotless lamb, and used the other ceremonies practised on the like occasion; though not with such solemnity as was used at *Cusco*. But the two factions of the *Peruvian* generals immediately united against the *Spaniards*, and elected *Huana Capac*, the brother and heir of *Guaspar*, for their emperor: which brought *Pizarro* to the resolution of possessing himself of the capital city of *Cusco*; where he began his march with all his forces, consisting of about four hundred *Spaniards*, besides confederate *Indians*.

ATAUCHI, the brother of *Atabalippa*, surprized the *Spaniards* upon their march to *Cusco*, killing some of them, and making several prisoners: however, *Pizarro* continued his march, being attacked by many parties of *Indians*, at some difficult passes in the mountains: but the new inca *Toparpa* died in the march, and his general *Cbialiquichiana* was burnt, by order of *Pizarro*, in the vale of *Xaquinasaguana*, on a charge of holding a treacherous correspondence with *Quizquiz*, who commanded the army of the new inca elected by the *Peruvians*; for *Pizarro* was jealous of the popularity of *Cbialiquichiana*, who had obtained five victories for *Atabalippa*; and the *Indians* said, that if he had been at *Caxamalca*, when the inca was taken prisoner, the *Spaniards* would not have succeeded in their enterprize. Several thousands of *Indians* were destroyed in these engagements, which convinced

them, that they were incapable of resisting the artillery and horses of their enemies : therefore, they fled to their capital city, which was soon abandoned by its numerous inhabitants, who fled, in the utmost consternation, to the woods and mountains ; leaving the *Spaniards* to enter their metropolis, without any opposition, in the month of *October*, 1534 ; where they found a prodigious booty ; notwithstanding the citizens had sufficient time to remove the greatest part of their treasure, and had put fire to some parts of the city, which was soon extinguished by the *Spaniards*.

PIZARRO permitted his men to plunder ; but with a restriction that all should be divided in common, after a fifth was deducted for his Catholic majesty. They found such quantities of gold and silver, made into vessels, bars, or other kinds of ornaments, that was astonishing ; for, when the fifth was taken out for the king, the treasure was divided into four hundred and eighty parts, each of which amounted to four thousand pieces of eight, being 344,000 *l.* sterling in the whole, exclusive of the fifth for the king : for the temples of the sun and *Curacanche* were very magnificent ; besides which, there was about four hundred more, and several royal palaces full of treasure.

PIZARRO took possession of the magnificent city of *Cusco*, with the greatest solemnity, for his Catholic majesty ; establishing a council, and forming a colony. *Quizquiz*, and some other *Peruvian* generals, were exasperated to see the *Spaniards* in possession of their imperial city, and assembled a numerous army, with which they agreed to attack their enemy ; lamenting their deplorable fate, and com-

complaining of their gods, who had permitted their religion, temples, and all things sacred to be overthrown; their estates ruined, themselves banished, their wives and children made captives, and such multitudes of men to be slain: they sighed for their incas; but upbraided the memories of *Guascar* and *Atabalippa*; by whose dissensions a few invaders had an opportunity of possessing themselves of so extensive and populous an empire. The *Indians* made two attacks upon the *Spaniards*, who marched out of *Cusco* to meet them, and both times defeated them; after which, the *Peruvian* generals retreated into the province of *Quito*; and *Pizarro* published a proclamation to invite the inhabitants of *Cusco* to return to their houses. Many of the *Indians* accepted this invitation, and returned to the city, with the inca *Manco Capac*, the son of *Huana Capac*, whom *Pizarro* caused to be crowned, and invested with the imperial dignity, by binding the royal wreath, or coronet, about his head, and proclaiming him inca in the same manner his predecessors were inaugurated.

QUIZQUIZ and *Yrruminavi*, took possession of *Quito*; which obliged *Pizarro* to send a detachment there, under the command of *Sebastian Belalcazar*, who defeated the *Indians*, took their capital city, and would have brought the whole province into subjection, if he had not been interrupted by the arrival of a large body of *Spaniards* from *Mexico*, under the command of *Don Pedro de Alvarado*, who landed eight hundred men in *Peru*; which alarmed *Pizarro* and *Almagro*, who apprehended his intention was to dispossess them both of their new acquisitions.

AL-

ALVARADO was one of the principal officers that accompanied *Cortez* in the conquest of *Mexico*, and had obtained the government of the province of *Guatemala*, from whence he set sail in 1535, with the hopes of acquiring great quantities of gold and silver in *Peru*: he landed at cape *St. Francis*, one degree north of the equator; and lost several of his men in marching over bogs and mountains which were almost impassable. *Almagro* was sent by *Pizarro* to reinforce *Belalcazar*, and oppose *Alvarado*: but all hostilities were prevented by a conference between *Almagro* and *Alvarado*, wherein it was agreed, “ That *Pizarro* “ should pay the latter a hundred thousand pieces “ of eight, or about 17,900 *l.* sterling: that such “ of the officers and soldiers who came with *Al-* “ *varado*, as desired it, should serve under *Pi-* “ *zarro* in *Peru*; and that *Alvarado* should return “ to his government of *Guatemala*.” which was accordingly put into execution, after an interview between *Pizarro* and *Alvarado*.

THE troops left by *Alvarado* made the *Peruvians* despair of emancipating themselves from the *Spaniards*, to whom they generally submitted as their conquerors. *Pizarro* then employed himself in building towns, and establishing colonies, on the coast; particularly, he built the cities of *Lima*, and *Truxillo*; dividing the country about them among his officers and soldiers, together with the native *Indians* upon those lands, who held what the *Spaniards* were pleased to allow them, by the basest tenures of villenage; being obliged to manure and cultivate their lands, carry burthens like horses, and perform such other servile offices, in
their

their fields and houses, as rendered their condition no better than an absolute slavery; for they were transferred with the lands to any purchaser, obliged to work in the mines, fish for pearls, and to undergo such rigorous labour, that many thousands of them perished, whereby the country in a few years was almost depopulated.

THE court of *Spain* received the treasures sent by *Pizarro* for his Catholic majesty, who conferred the title of marquis upon that general; and honoured *Almagro* with the title of marshal of *Peru*, as also with the government of that part of the country which extended six hundred miles to the southward of the government assigned to the marquis *Pizarro*. Upon this intelligence, *Almagro* assumed the title of governor of *Cusco*, and acted no more in subordination to the marquis; whose brothers entered into a formal war against *Almagro*, which was soon terminated by the presence of the marquis*, who afterwards sent the marshal on an expedition to *Chili*; wherein he was very successful: but returned to claim his right to the government of *Cusco*, which the marquis *Pizarro* had conferred upon his brother *Ferdinand*.

THE inca *Manca Capac* was confined like a prisoner by the *Spaniards*, in the castle of *Cusco*, from whence he escaped, and raised up a general insurrection among the *Indians*, who assembled in three armies, to cut off *Almagro* in *Chili*, invest *Lima*, and besiege *Cusco*; the latter of which was undertaken by the inca in person, at the head of two hundred thousand men: but, though the inca took the castle of *Cusco*, he was obliged to abandon
it

* See this Volume p. 172.

it by the fury of the *Spanish* artillery, which destroyed several thousands of *Indians*, and deterred them from re-attempting the siege. Another party undertook the siege of *Lima*; but were equally unsuccessful: however, they destroyed several detachments of *Spaniards*, and continued in arms for several years, before they were entirely suppressed, which happened on the death of their inca, who had his brains dashed out with a bowl by a *Spaniard*.

ALMAGRO took possession of *Cusco*, and defeated *Alvarado* who was sent to dispossess him by *Pizarro*: but *Pizarro* afterwards defeated *Almagro*, took him prisoner, and ordered him to be strangled privately in prison: though the son of *Almagro* soon afterwards assassinated the marquis in his palace, where he killed him, and his brother-in-law *Don Francis de Alcantara*.

THUS fell these two conquerors of *Peru*; who, with four hundred *Spaniards*, conquered four millions of *Indians*; whereby they obtained the possession of the richest country in the world, lived in the state of sovereign princes, and were superior in wealth to the richest monarchs of *Europe*: though it is observed, that both of them were of mean extraction, and had received no advantage of education; as also that they died, and were buried, with the same obscurity in which they were born.

THE young *Almagro* was immediately proclaimed governor of *Peru*: but *Vaca de Castro*, arrived from *Spain*, with that title, defeated *Almagro*, and beheaded him; whereby his party became totally extirpated. The new governor endeavoured

voured to check the licentiousness of the *Spaniards*, and to grant many indulgencies to the *Indians*; which offended his soldiers, so as to give *Gonzalo Pizarro* an opportunity of raising a mutiny, and of aspiring to become the sole sovereign of the empire of *Peru*, without any dependence on the crown of *Spain*; in which he succeeded so far, as to make the *Spanish* ministry imagine, that he had usurped the sovereign authority over *Peru*, and would extend it all over *America*. Upon this occasion, his Catholic majesty sent Don *Gasca* over, with the title of president of the royal court; who arrived at *Panama*, on the 13th of *August* 1546, when he prevailed on *Hinojoso*, who commanded the fleet kept there by *Pizarro*, to revolt, and declare for his majesty; which was followed by the defection of several of the land forces. However, *Pizarro* was determined to defend his usurpation, and mustered nine hundred well armed veterans in *Lima* only; besides the forces he had at *Cusco*, *La Plata*, and other places; which he collected together, and in *October* 1547 defeated eight hundred men, commanded by Don *Centeno*, one of the royal generals: but in *April* 1548, the president *Gasca* began his march towards *Cusco*, at the head of sixteen hundred veteran *Spaniards*, with ten thousand *Indians*, attended by a fine train of artillery; whom *Pizarro* marched against, and met near *Cusco*; when his troops deserted to the royalists, and *Pizarro* was obliged to surrender himself a prisoner; after which he was carried to *Cusco*, and formally beheaded as a traitor: though all his treason, and other faults, were buried in his grave; for the

next

next generation remembered only his conquests, heroic actions, and noble behaviour at the place of execution.

THE death of *Gonzalo Pizarro* was far from terminating the dissentions among the *Spaniards* of *Peru*; which obliged *Gasca* to divide his forces, and send some of them upon other expeditions; as, particularly *Don Pedro Baldivia*, to finish the conquest* of *Cbili*: his Catholic majesty published an order, that the *Indians* should be treated as freemen, and paid for their labour in the mines; which occasioned several insurrections, wherein some of the vice-roys, who succeeded *Gasca*, were murdered. The principal revolt was conducted by *Hernandez Giron*, who had a considerable army; with which he at first defeated the royalists; but was afterwards taken prisoner, and beheaded at *Lima*, as a traitor; which put an end to the rebellion; and from this time, being the month of *November 1554*, the *Spaniards* may be properly said to have been in the peaceable possession of *Peru*: though the subduing the first turbulent adventurers, who endeavoured to render themselves independant of the crown of *Spain*, proved a much more difficult task, than the conquest of the defenceless *Indians*.

FREZIER reports, that, notwithstanding the wars, and the destruction of the *Indians*, by the *Spaniards*, there is still a family of the race of the incas living at *Lima*, whose chief is acknowledged by the king of *Spain*, as a descendant of the emperors of *Peru*; and, as such, his Catholic majesty gives him the title of cousin; ordering the vice-roy, at his entering into *Lima*, to pay
him

* See this Volume p. 176.

him a sort of publick homage: thus, at every change of a vice-roy, they still externally honour the memory of the sovereignty of that emperor, whom they have unjustly deprived of his dominions. The love which the *Indians* retain for their native monarchs, makes them still sigh for those times, of which they know nothing but what they have been told by their ancestors. The christian religion, which they have been obliged to embrace, has not yet taken deep root in their hearts, most of them having a great inclination towards their antient idolatry: however, they are naturally docible, and capable of receiving good impressions, as to manners and religion, if they had good examples before their eyes; but they are treated with as much severity by the clergy, as by the government.

THERE is no doubt but these people, being drove to despair by the severity of the *Spanish* domination, only wish for an opportunity to shake it off: because, from time to time, they make some attempts at *Cusco*, where they are the principal part of the inhabitants: but, as it is expressly forbidden them to carry arms, without a particular licence; and, as they have no courage like the *Chilefians*, the *Spaniards* know how to appease them with threats, and to amuse them with fair promises:

THE number of inhabitants in this great empire, which historians represent by millions, is considerably diminished since the conquest by the *Spaniards*; whose works at the mines have principally contributed towards this depopulation: besides, the cruelties of the *corregidores*, and *curates*, have
also

also obliged many to go and join the neighbouring *Indian* nations, that are unconquered; not being able any longer to endure the tyrannical dominion of the *Spaniards*.

As to the manners and customs of the creolians of *Peru*, or the *Spaniards* born in that country, *Frezier* observes, that, like the *Spaniards* of *Europe*, they value themselves upon being the best christians of all nations: they even pretend to distinguish betwixt themselves and the *French* by that qualification; so that, among them, it is a very usual way of speaking, to say a christian and a *Frenchman*, to signify a *Spaniard* and a *Frenchman*. But the *Spaniards* here have nothing of the exterior practice of the church discipline, by which they may merit that pre-eminence; and they are superstitious, even to a higher degree than the *Spaniards* of *Europe*; of which *Frezier* gives several instances. Besides, they all live in a state of presumption as to their salvation, grounded on the protection of the virgin and the saints, which they imagine they merit by some brotherhood exercises, wherein the friars have associated them; without making them sensible, that the prime devotion consists in the reformation of the heart, and the practice of good manners.

BUT though the clergy should with their mouths preach up christian virtues, what fruit could they produce, whilst they themselves give such ill examples? If their subject is upon modesty and meekness? they are impudent in the highest degree, and most of them are generally armed with a dagger. Should the subject be poverty, and the contempt of riches? the most regular of them trade, and
have

have their slaves of both sexes; several churchmen appearing in coloured cloaths, adorned with gold, under their usual habit. Should it be humility? they are insufferably proud: and shall they preach up the duty of continence, when the want of it is a general vice among them? However, *Frezier* says, that though the clergy, in general, have many vices; there are, nevertheless, some worthy and learned men in *Peru*: but, he adds, that virtue seems to be more common among the laity, than among the friars and clergy.

THE creolians are generally timorous, and easy to be governed: though dispersed and remote from their superiors; they have a vivacity and disposition for the sciences; and imagine they must exceed the *European Spaniards*, whom, among themselves, they call *cavallos*, that is, horses, or brutes. In relation to commerce, they are as sharp and understanding as the *Europeans*: but, being luxurious and indolent, the *Biscayners*, and other *European Spaniards*, who are more laborious, grow rich sooner.

IT is true, the common people of *Peru* were vassals and slaves to their superior lords, before the *Spaniards* conquered the country: but their princes treated them with the lenity of parents; and the *Spaniards* have exercised upon them all the severity of tyrants. However, some of the poor *Indians* were benefited by this alteration of government; or, at least, imagined themselves to be so at first: for the *Spaniards* gave many of them their freedom, and made use of them in reducing the rest of their countrymen to slavery: but, when the conquest was completed, these *Indians* were not much bet-

ter respected than the others, till the kings of *Spain*, by their repeated edicts, compelled the adventurers and planters to treat the *Indians* as subjects, and not as slaves; since which time, the *Spaniards* have introduced great numbers of negroes to work in the mines, and perform other laborious services: besides, the horses, oxen, and mules, that have been carried to *Péru*, have made it less necessary to exact the same severe and laborious services from the *Indians*, as formerly; such as carrying the baggage, and drawing the carriages of the *Spaniards*, which occasioned the destruction of multitudes of *Indians*.

PERU is now in the possession of a very different set of people, than it was at the time of the *Spanish* conquest: for, besides the native *Indians*, there are the descendants of many *Europeans*, as also of many *African* negroes, of both sexes, who have been transported there in great numbers, and whose mixed embraces have given rise to another race, which is a compound of all three; having different features, and different complexions, from the people of any of the three parts of the world, from whence they are derived; only those that were born in *Spain*, are called *Spaniards*. If any person is born of a *Spanish* father and mother, in *America*, he is called a criollo, or creole; as are also the children of the *Peruvian* negroes; and, it is said, that this term of criollo came first from the negroes, who gave this denomination to their children that were born there, as a distinction from the native *Africans*. The children born between a *Spaniard* and an *Indian*, are called mestizoes; as are also the children of a *Spaniard* and a negro.

negro. Those born of a negro and an *Indian*, are called mulattoes, or molatas; and the children of these mulattoes are called cholo by the *Spaniards*, which signifies a dog of a mongrel breed; nor are they held in much better estimation. The children of a *Spaniard*, and a mestizo, they call quartravos; whereby they would signify they are three parts *Spanish* and one *Indian*: but they call those treasalas, or three parts *Indian*, who are the children of a mestizo with an *Indian* woman. The descendants of all these have distinct names, and different privileges: but, if any of them come to resemble the *Spaniards*, so much in their features and complexion, that it is difficult to make the distinction, they generally remove to some distant town, where their pedigree is unknown; because there they can enjoy the honours and privileges of the native *Spaniards*; especially if they are people of substance or property.

THERE are always great divisions and suspicions between the *Spaniards* born in *Spain*, and the criolli-born in *Peru*: but the latter are much more numerous, and possessed of the greatest part of the lands; though the power is always invested in the hands of the native *Spaniards*, who look down with great contempt on the criolli.

THE religion of all *Peru* appears to be the same; from what nation, or mixture of nations, soever the present inhabitants are descended; which is owing to the inquisition, that reigns here with greater terror, than in any other part of the world; whereby both *Indians* and negroes have been compelled to profess themselves Catholics.

THE *Peruvian*, or *Spanish*, inhabitants have no foreign commerce, but with the other *Spanish* colonies, either in *Cbili* to the southward, or in *Mexico* to the northward: They sail every year, at the proper seasons, from *Peru* to the fairs of *Acapulco* and *Panama*; where they carry the product and manufactures of *Peru*, but chiefly gold and silver; to a very great value: at which fairs they furnish themselves with the product and manufactures of *Cbina* and the *East-Indies* from the west, and those of *Europe* from the east: however; there are not above seven or eight ships annually employed in this rich branch of trade; though they export and import the value of many millions of piastres: Bark-logs, or a kind of floating vessels made of rafts of trees, and heightened by poles, are also used for carrying goods from *Lima* to *Truxillo*, *Guiaquil*, or *Panama*; which carry about seventy ton, and are fit only for these seas, where the wind has little variation: but the float is unable to return against the trade-winds, and is always disposed of, together with the goods, at *Panama*.

SECTION IV.

An account of the three grand divisions of PERU, with a description of their cities, and principal towns; their situation, trade, and number of inhabitants.

THIS country is divided into three audiences, or jurisdictions; which are *LOS CHARCAS*, or *LA PLATA*; *LIMA*, or *LOS REYES*; and *QUITO*.

I. THE

I. THE audience of *LOS CHARCAS*, or *LA PLATA*, sometimes also called *Chuquisaca*, from a city of the same name, is bounded by the audience of *Lima* on the north; by *Paraguay* on the east; by *Cbili*, and *Tucuman*, on the south; and by the *Pacific Ocean* on the west. It extends along the sea-coast from the 25th degree of south latitude, to *Rio Tamma* in latitude $17^{\circ} 10'$; so that its length is 570 miles in a strait line: but, considering the windings of the coast, it may be reckoned above 600 miles: and its greatest extent, from west to east, is about 400 miles; though much less in some places. The climate is indifferent, for it is excessive hot on the coast; and the inland parts of the country partake much of the other extreme: however, the soil is generally fruitful; being rendered so by art in the vallies, and made so by nature among the mountains; for the interior parts are sufficiently watered, though there are few rivers upon the coast. The commodities of the country are silver and gold; as also pimento, which grows upon the coast, and is a kind of *Jamaica pepper*, producing to the inhabitants about six hundred thousand pieces of eight, or 107,500*l.* sterling, annually.

THE principal cities, and places, in this province, are 1. *La Plata*. 2. *Potosi*. 3. *Santa Cruz de la Sierra*. 4. *Misque*. 5. *Porco*. 6. *Oropesa*. 7. *La Paz*. 8. *Atacama*. 9. *Arica*. 10. *Ylo*. and 11. *Cbule*, or *Xuli*.

1. *LA PLATA*, called also *Chaqui*, and *Chuquisaca*, is the capital of the province, and received its name from the silver mines in its neighbourhood, which were the first that were wrought by

the *Spaniards*. It is situated in a fine plain, on one of the sources of the great river *La Plata*, in $65^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude, and $19^{\circ} 33'$ of south latitude; being about 250 miles distant from the sea, and about 780 south-east of *Lima*. This city is the residence of the governor of the province; and an archiepiscopal see, erected by pope *Paul Vth.* in 1605, to which the bishops of *La Paz*, *St. Miguel de Estero*, *St. Cruz de la Sierra*, *Assumption* in *Paraguay*, and *La Trinidad de Buenos Aires*, are suffragans. The houses are well built, and the cathedral is very magnificent; besides which, there are fourteen churches, and several convents: for the town is so large, that it formerly contained eight hundred natural *Spaniards*, with sixty thousand tributary natives under its jurisdiction: but it has been greatly diminished in splendor, since several of its mines have been abandoned, upon the discovery of those of *Potosi*.

2. *POTOSI* takes its name from the mountain at the bottom of which it stands; being situated in $66^{\circ} 16'$ of west longitude, and in $20^{\circ} 26'$ of south latitude, about sixty miles distant from *La Plata*, in one of the most barren countries of *America*; where there are neither trees or grass to be found, but the richest silver mines that ever were discovered; which has brought such multitudes of people there, that it is become one of the largest and most populous towns of *Peru*: nor is it ill supplied with provisions from all the countries within 100 miles of the place, where they bring all kinds of commodities and provisions, which meet with a very beneficial market.

THE town is about six miles in circumference: the buildings are beautiful, and the churches magnificent. The *Spanish* inhabitants may amount to above ten thousand; and *Frezier* says, there are above sixty thousand *Indians*; for the king of *Spain* obliges the neighbouring parishes, to send a certain number of *Indians* yearly to *Potosi*, to work in the mines, where 1500, or 2000 of them, are constantly employed, at the price of two rials, or 10d $\frac{3}{4}$ sterling a day: but, though the generality of them go to this servitude with the utmost reluctance, they soon forget their former habitations, and continue settled at *Potosi*, which makes it so populous. The *Spaniards* and creolians, are possessed of immense riches: their churches beam a refulgence from the great quantities of gold and silver with which they are adorned: the cloaths of the citizens are of gold and silver stuffs; their kitchen furniture all of silver; and the household furniture of the meanest inhabitants sumptuous to an excess: but provisions are very scarce and dear, especially firing, which is entirely of charcoal, brought from 100 or 150 miles distance.

THE incas wrought at the mines of *Porco*, but never knew those of *Potosi*; which were accidentally discovered by an *Indian* in 1545, and afterwards worked by the *Spaniards*. The earth is of a dark red colour, and the mountain of the form of a sugar-loaf; being three miles in circumference at the bottom, and about three quarters of a mile towards the top, as also about three quarters of a mile in ascent, but naturally dry, cold, and barren: for, it is observed, that, where the earth is enriched with this kind of treasure, there are no

fruitful fields, or verdant pastures. The mines of *Potosi* were rendered the more valuable, because the miners were never prevented by water from carrying on their work, as they are in other mines, though they had sunk them 200 fathoms deep. *Acosta* says, that, in his time, the mountain contained four principal veins; all lying on the east side, towards the rising sun: that the veins ran from north to south; the largest of which were six feet over, and the narrowest about a span broad; though there were other ramifications branching out like the boughs of trees: and that, in the richest of these veins, there were seventy-eight mines, eighty or a hundred fathoms deep, and some two hundred. But such great quantities of silver have been drawn from the mountain, that it is now entirely undermined: for, instead of digging downwards, they opened the rock at the bottom, and so proceeded horizontally, till they met with the silver veins; though the vein is always richer, in proportion as it lies nearer to the surface of the earth. These vaults, by which they pierced into the mountain, were called *foccabous*, or *facabouas*, being eight feet broad, and six feet high; whereby the metal was easily drawn out, as it was discovered: but the rock was so hard, that the miners worked between twenty and thirty years, in a *foccabous*, before they came at the ore, which is commonly so hard, that they are obliged to break it with hammers, and it splits like flint. They labour in these subterraneous passages, without receiving either light or heat from the sun; which makes the air so cold and unwholsome, that a person, at his first entrance in-

to them, is seized with a disorder somewhat like the sea-sickness: and the labourers work alternately, night and day; which are equally the same to them, as they are employed continually by candle-light, and entirely naked, to prevent them from concealing or embezzling any of the treasure.

ACOSTA says, that, during the first forty years in which these mines of *Potosi* were wrought, there were registered one hundred and two thousand millions of pieces of eight; besides what had been carried off clandestinely: but this account must be very erroneous, as it amounts to the immense sum of seventeen thousand eight hundred and seventy-one millions sterling. However, it appears from the register, that the king's fifth, from the year 1545, to the year 1595, amounted to one hundred and eleven millions of pesos, or 27,980,000 *l.* sterling; and it has been said, that the fifth produced in that term of forty years, was as much as amounted to 880,000 *l.* sterling annually to the king; which was forty-four millions in the whole: though more probably this was the whole value of the silver out of which that fifth was received.

BUT these mines are so much exhausted, that there are now only forty mills employed, and, for the most part of the year, there is not sufficient employment for them; though there were once one hundred and forty mills: so that there is not now a quarter of the money coined at the mint as there was formerly.

3. *SANTA CRUZ de la SIERRA*, or the *Holy Cross of the Mountain*, called also *Baranea*, is the capital of a little province of the same name, to the east, and under the jurisdiction of *Los Charcas*; situated at the foot of a mountain, on the banks
of

of a rivulet called *Guapay*, in 65 degrees of west longitude, and 18 degrees of south latitude. The river flows from a rock, and runs through the town into a lake full of delicious fish. The houses are of stone, covered with palm-trees; and there is a church, which is a cathedral; the town being the see of a bishop, who resides generally at *Misque*. The *Indians*, in the neighbourhood of this place, are so poor and mean spirited, that they used to cloathe themselves with ostrich feathers: but the *Spaniards* have taught them the use of cotton, with which they carry on a considerable trade. Their summer is excessive hot, and their winter very cold: besides, during the latter season, the ways are rendered impassable by tigers, bears, and serpents.

4. *MISQUE* is about 25 miles south of *Santa Cruz de la Sierra*; being a small town, but abounding in vineyards, whose wine is sent to *Potosi*.

5. *PORCO* is situated twenty miles west of *Potosi*, and was remarkable for its silver mines, before those of *Potosi* were discovered; for the latter being richer, and not incommoded by water, drew all the undertakers, and workmen, from the former: but, as the mines of *Potosi* are decayed, it is probable that those of *Porco* will be resorted to again.

6. *OROPESA* is situated in the valley of *Cochabamba*, in 66° 10' of west longitude, and 19 degrees of south latitude, about sixty miles north-west from *La Plata*: being built by Don *Francisco de Toledo*, who gave it that name in honour of the count of *Oropesa*, in new *Castile* in *Spain*. It is not very populous; but the inhabitants have a profitable trade with *Potosi*, where they carry their sheep, corn, and vegetables.

7. *LA*

7. *LA PAZ*, or the *City of Peace*, is seated in a fruitful plain, near the spring-head of a river, called *Cajana*, or *Choqueasso*; being about 210 miles north-west of *La Plata*, and 125 east from the sea. The adjacent country is full of springs, fruit-trees, and fields of maize; with rich gold mines, and good salt pits; having also a temperate air, except from the beginning of *December* till *March*, when the continual rains occasion fevers.

THERE are several other inland towns in the province of *Los Charcas*, and many villages on the banks of the lake of *Titicaca*; but they are not considerable enough to deserve a particular description: therefore, it is necessary to proceed to those places that are situated on the sea-coast, going from north to south.

8. *ATACAMA* is situated in $69^{\circ}30'$ of west longitude, and $22^{\circ}30'$ of south latitude; about 120 miles up the country: but it has a communication with the sea by the port of *Cobija*, which is a village consisting of between forty and fifty houses of *Indians*, who are supplied from *Atacama* with wheat and papas, in exchange for fish. This port is one of the nearest to *Lipes*, where there are silver mines; as also to *Potosi*, which is above 300 miles distant, through a desert country: but the port is destitute of all necessaries, which has occasioned it to be frequented only by the *French*, who have sought the nearest place to the mines, and the most remote from the custom-house officers, to invite the merchants to them, and facilitate the trade, for the more convenient transporting of plate and commodities. The port is only a little creek, the
third

third part of a league deep, where there is little shelter against the south and south-west winds, which are most usual on the coast; but it is to be known by this land-mark; that from *Morro Moreno*, or the *Brown-head-Land*, which is some leagues to the westward, the mountain goes on rising, till it comes directly over the creek, where the port lies, from whence it begins to lower a little; so that it is somewhat the highest part of the coast.

9. *ARICA* is situated in $70^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude, and $18^{\circ} 27'$ of south latitude; being a port to *Potosi*, though it is above 245 miles from it to the north-west. The shore is full of great stones, has little water, and always rough; so that boats cannot set any thing ashore, except in three little creeks, or guts, the best of which is at the foot of the head-land. It was a strong and populous place in 1680, when *Dampier* and his companions, commanded by captain *Watling*, were repulsed with great loss by the inhabitants: but *Frezier*, who was there in 1712, says, it has fallen to decay, and deserves only the name of a village: for the earthquakes have depopulated the town, which now consists of only about 150 families of blacks, mulattoes, and *Indians*, with a few whites. Most of the houses are built with fascines of a sort of flags or sedge, called *titora*, bound together, standing end-ways, with leather-thongs, and canes crossing them; or else they are made of canes set upright, and the intervals filled up with earth: they are covered with nothing but mats; because no rain ever falls there; which make the houses look as if they were ruins from without. The use
of

of unburnt bricks is reserved for stately houses and churches. The parish church of *Saint Mark* is tolerably handsome: there are two monasteries, the one of the order of *Mercy*, and the other of *Franciscans*; besides which, there is an hospital of the brethren of *St. John of God*.

FATHER *Feuillee* observes, that formerly the silver was brought by land from *Potosi* to *Arica*, where it was shipped off for *Lima*; which greatly contributed to the enrichment of *Arica*; but, since Sir *Francis Drake* took three barks in this port, in one of which there was eleven hundred and forty pounds weight of silver, the *Spaniards* for some time would not expose such treasures to be plundered; and therefore came to the resolution of sending all their silver to *Lima* by land, though it is a very tedious and expensive journey. However, they now continue to bring the silver by sea; for which purpose, it is brought to *Arica* in *March*; and the flota from *Lima*, comes to fetch it in *June*.

THE vale of *Arica* is about three miles wide next the sea; but it is all a barren country, except the place where the old town stood, which is divided into little meadows of clover-grass, some spots of sugar-canes, with olive and cotton trees intermixed, and marshes full of the sedge for building houses. About three miles up the vale, is the village of *Saint Michael de Sapa*, where they begin to cultivate the *agi*, or *Guinea* pepper, which is sown throughout all the higher part of the vale; and there are several scattered farms, that have no other produce but this pepper; of which the *Spaniards* are so fond, that abundance of merchants come down every year, and carry all away that
grows

grows in the vales of *Arica*, *Sama*, *Taena*, *Locumba*, and others about thirty miles distant; from whence it is reckoned, there are annually exported to the value of six hundred thousand pieces of eight, or 107,500 *l.* sterling.

.10. *YLO*, or *Hillo*, is a small port, situated in 71 degrees of west longitude, and 18 degrees of south latitude; near which is a river of fresh water, called the river of *Ylo*. The town lies about a quarter of a league to the windward of the river, and is inhabited by *Indians*: for it was so frequently plundered by the *Buccaneers*, particularly in 1680, by captain *Sharp*, that it has been deserted by the *Spaniards*. The point of *Ylo* is low land, and runs out into the sea; being dangerous to come near, on account of an island which lies off it, and several rocks: but it is a good port for loading and unloading a cargo, which occasioned the *French* to make a settlement there in the reign of *Lewis XIV.* where they carried on a great contraband trade.

.11. *CHULE*, or *Xuli*, is about 55 miles north-west of *Ylo*, and is a good harbour for ships: but there is a rock, a little to the south-east of it, which has a shoal about half a league round it.

THERE are several other places on the coast of *Los Charcas*; but not of such importance as to deserve a particular description. Though it is necessary to mention, that there is a constant intercourse between the mines and the port of *Arica*; for the conveniency of which, there are inns at every twelve miles; and it is computed that there are two thousand persons employed as carriers, or in the management of the inns: yet this is nothing
in

in comparifon of the numbers employed in the fame way, with refpect to the inland commerce of the mines; for, as this extends through all *South America*, there are not lefs than ten thoufand people concerned therein, who are continually in motion: and, befides all this, there is a communication, both by land and water, between *Potosi* and *Buenos Ayres*; by which, if the crown of *Spain* thought fit, the filver might, with great eafe, be brought into *Europe*.

II. THE audience of *LIMA*, *Los Reyes*, or the *Royal Audience*, is bounded on the north by the audience of *Quito*; on the east by the *Cordillera* mountains; on the fouth by the audience of *Los Charcas*; and on the weft by the *Pacific Ocean*; being about 750 miles in length from north to fouth: but its breadth is very unequal, on account of the bending of the coaft, and becaufe it is pent in by the mountains in feveral places. The country abounds with mines of gold, filver, quickfilver, vermillion, and falt. There is plenty of cattle, fowl, and fifh; with all provifions common to *Europe*, except butter, inftead of which they always ufe lard. They have great quantities of oil, wine, and brandy; though not fo good as in *Europe*. It never rains here, but the want of this is fupplied by great dews; fo that they have as good corn and fruits, as any in *Europe*. In the vallies near the fea, the climate is hot; but tempered with breezes from the fea, and mountains: though, in the mountainous part, far up the country, it is very rainy, and like winter; when it is very dry weather, and like fummer in the plains.

THE moft remarkable cities, and other places in this province, are 1. *Lima*. 2. *Callao*. 3. *Cusco*. 4. *Arequipa*. 5. *Pifco*. 6. *Yca*, or *Valverde*. 7. *Guamanca*.

7. *Guamanca*. 8. *Guanca Velica*. 9. *Santa*, or *La Parilla*. 10. *Truxillo*. and 11. *Caxamalca*.

1. *LIMA*, the capital of the audience, and the metropolis of all *Peru*, is situated in a fine plain, on the banks of a river of the same name, in $77^{\circ} 15'$ of west longitude, and in $12^{\circ} 6'$ of south latitude; five miles east from the port of *Callao*, which is its harbour. It was founded by *Francis Pizarro*, the conqueror of *Peru*, on the 18th of *January* 1535, who called it *Ciudad de los Reyes*, or the *City of the Kings*; the plan of which is extremely well contrived, the streets perfectly strait, and of a convenient breadth. It is four miles long, and two broad; surrounded with walls twenty foot high, which are ornamented with bastions; but they cannot support the weight of a cannon, and could be of no defence against any *European* enemies. In the midst of the city is a grand square, which may be justly accounted the finest in the world: on the east-side of it stands the cathedral; on the north the palace of the vice-roy; on the west several pleasant edifices; and on the south there are piazzas, with handsome shops of all sorts. There are eight parochial and conventual churches, twenty-eight monasteries of friars, and thirteen nunneries of different orders, six large hospitals, and an university containing two thousand students.

THE number of inhabitants may amount to eight or nine thousand *Spaniards*; with about twenty thousand *Indians*, negroes, mulattoes, and mestizoes; though *Betagh* says, there are 60 or 70,000, including all sorts and colours. The city may be called the repository of all the treasures of *Peru*; and, some years ago, it was computed,

puted, that the citizens annually expended about 1,200,000 *l.* sterling, in rich silks, laces, pearls, jewels, and other ornaments; of which both men and women are excessive fond: but this expence must be much abated at present, because the *French* trade has carried the commodities of *Europe* there, at an easy rate; and because the trade they have drove at *Arica*, *Ylo*, and *Pisco*, has diverted the people that came to *Lima*; on which account the city is now poor, in comparison to what it was formerly.

THIS city is the usual residence of the vice-roy of *Peru*, who is as absolute as the king, in the courts of *Lima*, *Los Charcas*, *Quito*, *Chili*, *Panama*, and *Terra Firma*; being governor, and captain-general of all the kingdoms and provinces in that part of the new world, as it is expressed in his title; and his annual allowance is forty thousand pieces of eight, or 7166 *l.* sterling, exclusive of his extraordinary perquisites. It is reported that he can raise a hundred thousand foot, and twenty thousand horse, throughout the whole extent of the kingdom; but it is certain, that he cannot arm the fifth of them. The garrison of *Lima* consists of the militia of the city; being fourteen companies of *Spanish* infantry, seven companies of the corporation of commerce, eight companies of *Indians*, and six companies of mulattoes, of one hundred men each; with ten troops of *Spanish* horse of fifty men each, being 4000 in all.

THE royal audience is the supreme court of judicature, where the governor presides, with the assistance of sixteen oidors, that is judges, or assessors; who have several inferior officers dependent

on them. There is a consulship for the regulation of trade, where a prior, or chief, and two consuls preside, who are elected by the principal merchants. And there are several courts of ecclesiastical jurisdiction; particularly that of the inquisition, whose name alone is sufficient to strike a terror, and make it held in abhorrence.

It is impossible to conceive a more pleasant and delightful climate, than that where *Lima* is situated; though it is in the middle of the torrid zone. It never rains, yet the sky is generally overcast; which defends the inhabitants from the heat of the sun, and renders the weather cool and pleasant. The inhabitants enjoy all the advantages of the seasons at once: for the products of all parts are brought here: so that the markets of *Lima* have all kinds of fruit the whole year round, in full perfection. There are variety of pleasant vallies in its neighbourhood, watered either naturally, or artificially, by living streams, adorned with orange-groves, and whatever else can render them pleasing or elegant. But, with all these blessings, the citizens are under continual apprehensions, that must sufficiently qualify their enjoyments, since there is no place in the world more subject to earthquakes. On the 17th of *June*, 1678, a great part of the city, and several of its churches, were thrown down in a quarter of an hour: but this was a slight misfortune to what happened on the 19th of *October*, 1682, when the city suffered two hundred shocks, in the space of twenty-four hours, whereby it was wholly overturned; after which, the inhabitants deliberated for some time, whether they should rebuild their city on the same spot where it stood before,
or

or endeavour to find out some other, where they might have a probability of being more secure from such calamities. However, the city was rebuilt in the same situation, and continued free from earthquakes till the 27th of *October*, 1746, when one happened which destroyed many buildings, and 5000 persons. The same day the port of *Callao* sunk, or rather was overwhelmed by the sea; and, out of 7000 inhabitants, there was not above 100 that escaped from this dreadful accident. The shocks continued in *Lima* every day, from that time to the 14th of *November*; whereby most of the buildings were destroyed; and the number of persons that perished, from first to last, were about eighteen thousand.

2. *CALLAO*, the harbour of *Lima*, extends along the sea-coast, on a low flat point of land; being the largest, fairest, and most secure road in the *South-Sea*: for ships anchor in what depth of water they will, and without any apprehension of danger. The island of *Saint Lawrence* breaks the surges that come from the south-west to the south-east; being situated to the north-west of the little island of *Callao*, which lies before the town: but, in the opening between these islands, there are some other small isles, or rocks. The town contains about five hundred families; and it was fortified, in the reign of *Philip IV.* with an inclosure flanked by ten bastions on the land-side, as also by some redans and plain bastions on the edge of the sea, where there were four batteries to command the port and road: but, at present, the garrison, and fortifications, are no ways considerable.

ALL the conveniencies and necessaries for navigation are to be found in the port of *Callao*; particularly wooding and watering. It has an extensive trade; as it brings from *Chili*, cordage, leather, tallow, dried fish, and corn: from *Chiloe*, cedar planks, woollen manufactures, and particularly carpets: sugars, cocoa, and naval stores from *Guiaquil*, and other places of *Peru*; as also wines and brandy from *Lanasco* and *Pisco*: with pitch, and tar, woods for dying, sulphur, balsam, and commodities of *China*, by way of *Acapulco*, from *Mexico*.

THERE are two flotas which annually sail from *Callao*; the one for *Arica*, and the other for *Panama*. The former sails about the end of *February*; receives at *Arica* the silver sent from *Potosi*, and returns towards the end of *March*. The latter sails for *Panama* in the beginning of *May*, with the wealth brought from *Potosi* and *Chili*; as also with the king's revenue, and merchandizes from all parts of *Peru*: and, on the return of this fleet, laden with *European* commodities, they are disposed of from hence, partly by sea, and partly by land, to all the different places to which they are destined.

3. *CUSCO*, formerly the capitol of *Peru*, and the seat of the incas, is situated in $71^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude, and in $13^{\circ} 15'$ of south latitude; about 360 miles to the eastward of *Lima*. It stands in an uneven country, surrounded with mountains on every side, near the rivers *Yucay* and *Apurina*; still retaining some marks of its former magnificence; being such as will always strike intelligent strangers with a just idea of the wisdom, opulence, and

and potency of the ancient monarchs of the country; notwithstanding all the pains which the *Spaniards* have taken to pull down and destroy the royal palaces, and the rest of the public edifices, out of whose ruins they have built their own houses.

DE la VEGA compares the ancient *Cusco* to ancient *Rome*: for, 1st. like *Rome*, he observes, it was founded by its own kings; and, 2^d. was the métropolis of many nations subjected to its empire: 3^d. it might be compared to *Rome* for the excellency of its laws; and, 4th. for the admirable virtues and endowments of its citizens, who were remarkable for their political virtues, as well as military discipline; civilized, and freed from all barbarous customs. However, he says, it must be confessed, that *Rome* had one great advantage in her knowledge of letters, which rendered her fame immortal: whereas poor *Cusco* had only memory and tradition, to deliver its great actions to posterity.

THE city is now entirely built in the *Spanish* manner; being thrown into large squares, with piazzas; from whence the principal streets, which are very long and broad, run in direct lines, and these again are crossed by other streets at right angles. Besides the cathedral, there are several churches, monasteries, and nunneries; as also some hospitals. It contains about 16,000 *Spaniards*, creolians, and *Indians*; besides the strangers who come there to trade; for there are manufactures of bays and cotton-cloth carried on in this city, which are of some prejudice to the trade of *Europe*; and they also make some sorts of work in leather, as well

for the uses of men, as for the furniture of horses and mules.

THE air of *Cusco* is very fresh and healthy : the vallies about the city abound with corn and fruit ; where the *Spaniards* have their gardens and country-seats, in which they have done every thing that could agreeably gratify the passions : whereby nothing is wanting at *Cusco* that can contribute to health or pleasure.

THE mines of *Lampa*, and *Cordillera de Cusco*, are very considerable ; though there are others much richer towards the *Moxos*, where the *Indians* have plenty of gold ; but they are fierce and uncivilized : however, the *Spaniards* have some little trade with the nations that dwell beyond the mountains of *Cusco*.

4. *AREQUIPA*, or *Arequipa*, is situated in the valley of *Quilca*, in $72^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude, and $16^{\circ} 40'$ of south latitude, about 380 miles south-east of *Lima*, and 240 south-west of *Cusco*. The air is very temperate, and the town exceeding pleasant, containing four or five hundred houses : but it is very ill fortified, considering its importance ; for the greatest part of the silver from *Los Charcas*, *Potosi*, and *Porco*, is brought here, to be sent to *Callao*, and from thence to *Panama*. The adjacent country abounds in corn and wine : but there is a dreadful vulcano near the town, which frequently causes very terrible earthquakes, and one of them destroyed the whole town, about forty years after it was built by *Pizarro*. *Frezier* says, the town is 72 miles from the sea ; and that the port is called *Quilca* ; which is little resorted, because there is no secure anchorage.

5. *PISCO*,

5. *PISCO*, or *Pisca*, is a port town, situated about a quarter of a league from the sea, in $75^{\circ} 15'$ of west longitude, and $13^{\circ} 50'$ of south latitude; about 123 miles south of *Lima*. The whole town consists of 300 families, among which are some whites; but the most of them are mestizoes, mulattoes, and negroes, who are governed by a *corrigidore*, and a *cabildo*, or council, for the administration of justice. The road of *Pisco* is large enough to contain a royal navy; being open to the northward, from whence no dangerous winds blow in that latitude; and ships are sheltered from the usual winds, which blow from the south south-west, to south-east. The neighbouring country is almost entirely planted with vines, of which excellent wine is made, to be sent to *Lima*, and other places. All the ships that sail from *Callao*, for the northern or southern coasts, take their provisions of wine and brandy at *Pisco*: but some vessels take their lading of them here for *Panama*, which is afterwards sent by land to *Porto Bello*, and from thence to *Carthagena*.

6. *YCA*, *Valverde*, or the *Green Vale*, is about 41 miles south-west of *Pisco*; being a beautiful and opulent town, inhabited by about 500 *Spaniards*; who are governed by a lieutenant appointed by his Catholic majesty. The town has a port, about 18 miles from it, called *Porto Quemado*; where the *Spaniards* carry the wine which is made in the adjacent valley; from whence it is transported to *Lima*, and other places.

7. *GUAMANCA*, or *St. Juan de la Vittoria*, is an inland city, situated in $73^{\circ} 40'$ of west longitude, and 13° of south latitude; about 150 miles north;

north-east of *Pisco*, and 180 east of *Lima*; being seated at the foot of a high mountain, in a very healthful country, fruitful in all sorts of provisions. It is large, and populous; containing about ten thousand communicants; and the number of *Indians*, who pay tribute in the district of this city, are reckonèd to amount to 30,000. There are three churches, several convents, and a fine hospital; the houses being built with stone, and covered with pantiles. The principal trade of the inhabitants consists in leather, and pavillions, which serve instead of bed curtains; there are also several sorts of printed or gilt leather; and they make great quantities of boxes, of confectionary pastes, marmelades, jellies, preserved quinces, and other sweetmeats, of which there is a considerable consumption. The fields produce excellent corn, and the pastures keep large flocks of cattle; being watered by several brooks and rivulets.

8. *GUANCA VELICA*, is about 130 miles north-east of *Pisco*, 90 south-east of *Lima*, and 27 west of *Guamanca*. It is a small town, consisting of about 100 families; but rich, and famous for the quicksilver mines in its neighbourhood, called *El Assiento de Oropesa*; from which, according to *De Laet*, the *Spaniards* get as much quicksilver as amounts annually to about 50,000 *l.* sterling. The principal mine is 40 yards in front, where private persons work at their own expence; but are obliged to deliver up all they get to the royal officers, upon pain of forfeiture of their effects, banishment, and perpetual servitude at *Baldivia*: his majesty then pays an established price for the same, which is 68 pieces of eight, or 12*l.* 3*s.* 8*d.* sterling, the quintal,

quintal, or hundred weight, upon the spot ; which is sold for 80 pieces of eight, or 14*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* sterling, at the remoter mines : and, when a sufficient quantity has been taken out, the royal officers order the mouth of the mine to be stopped up ; when it is impossible to get any other than what comes from the royal stores.

9. *SANTA*, or *La Parilla*, is situated in a valley of the same name near the sea, on the banks of the river *Santa*, in $77^{\circ} 50'$ of west longitude, and $8^{\circ} 25'$ of south latitude ; being about 200 miles north from *Lima*. It contains a hundred and fifty *Spanish* families, with several *Indians* and negroes ; who cross the river on fruits, like gourds, flat on both sides, and almost round like shields, which the *Indians* string together, and fasten them one to another like rafts, or floats of timber, where they put the merchandizes, the passengers, and their own cloaths ; then swim before, and draw the rafts after them over the river. The port lies between the town and the river, in a bay sheltered from the winds ; on which account the ships, that sail along the coast, generally take in here wood, water, and other necessaries. The valley of *Santa* is long and broad ; abounding with all sorts of fruit-trees, both *Peruvian* and *European* : but the woods and thickets, with which it is covered, breed a prodigious quantity of musketoes, that are very troublesome to travellers.

10. *TRUXILLO* is situated about six miles from the sea, on the banks of a little river, near some rocky hillocks, in $78^{\circ} 10'$ of west longitude, and $8^{\circ} 16'$ of south latitude ; about 250 miles north-west of *Lima*. It is justly reputed one of
the

the principal cities of *Peru*; being not only, at present, the residence of the royal officers of this district, within which there are 50,000 tributary *Indians*, but also having formerly 500 houses, and four monasteries, which have lately been upon the decline; though the town was so strong, when *Dampier* was there, in 1684, that it deterred his companions from attacking it, after they had made the necessary preparations. The inhabitants have a great trade for flax, brandy, sugar, wine, and marmelade; of which they export three or four ship-loads annually, to supply the city of *Panama*. *Guanchaco* serves *Truxillo* for a port; being a small fishing town, six miles west of the other: but it is bad for ships, as it is exposed to all winds, and without any defence; the sea running frequently so great upon the shore, as to prevent any boats from putting in, or coming out, and even the fishermen not excepted: however, it is frequented as a place of considerable trade.

II. *CAXAMALCA*, or *Caxamarca*, is an interior town, about 340 miles north of *Lima*, and 115 from the sea-coast to the east; being seated at the foot of the mountains, in an open plain, in $77^{\circ} 25'$ of west longitude, and $6^{\circ} 15'$ of south latitude. It was a magnificent city during the reigns of the incas, and is remarkable for being the place where *Atabalippa* was put to death by *Pizarro*. The soil of this plain is prodigiously fruitful in corn; with fine pastures, well stocked with cattle; producing also maize, and roots, which serve the *Indians* instead of bread: besides, there is plenty of fruit and mines of several metals.

THERE

THERE are other towns in this province ; as *Camana*, *Pauca Parinacocha*, *Chumbibilcas*, *Atum Lucanas*, *Cotambas*, *Nasca*, *Otoca*, *Angaraes*, *Tanuo*, *Campas*, *Comabos*, *Guaruchiri*, *Canta*, *Chancay*, *Caxatambo*, *Llata*, *Guancuo*, and many others of less importance, which deserve no particular description.

III. *QUITO* is the most northerly province of *Peru* ; being bounded on the east by part of the country of the *Amazons* ; on the south by the audience of *Lima* ; by the *South-Sea* on the west ; and by *Popayan* on the north. It is about 420 miles in length from south to north ; and 360 miles broad in some places to the east, in others more, but generally less : which the *Spaniards* have subdivided into the three districts of *Quito proper*, *Los Quixos*, and *Los Pacamores*. The climate is immoderately hot, and very unwholsome in many places ; being subject to heavy rains, and thick fogs, especially in the vallies, and near the sea shore, which makes these parts extremely intemperate : though, *De Laet* says, the climate is rather cold than hot, in general. The soil is commonly sandy and barren ; but there are some spots of tolerable ground, which are well cultivated. They have abundance of kine and sheep, which multiply here abundantly : though there are few of the llamas, or *Peruvian* sheep ; because the inhabitants make them carry too heavy loads, and suffer them to perish with too much labour. There is a great deal of salt-petre, in several parts of this province, where the soil is marshy, which makes very good gunpowder : there is also excellent sulphur, or brimstone, which is of a gold colour, and as clear

as the salt-petre; being gathered out of the veins that are near the gold mines, of which there are several in the country, as well as of silver, quicksilver, and copper; besides emeralds, and many kinds of medicinal drugs.

THE principal cities and remarkable places, are
1. *Quito*. 2. *Tacunga*. 3. *Baeza*. 4. *Cuenca*. 5. *Zamora*. 6. *Loxa*. 7. *Paita*. 8. *Colan*. and 9. *Guiaquil*.

1. *QUITO*, or *St. Francisco del Quito*, which gives name to, and is the metropolis of the whole province, is situated in a valley, at the foot of very high mountains, in 77° of west longitude, and 20 minutes of south latitude; about 720 miles north of *Lima*, and 120 east of the sea. It is a populous and opulent city, built after the *Spanish* model; with four squares, a cathedral, two other churches, and several monasteries; being the see of a bishop, who is suffragan to the metropolitan of *Lima*, and has above 50,000 tributary *Indians* in his diocese, divided into 87 districts. There are about 3000 *Spaniards* in the city, and 30,000 *Indians*. The president, and all the other officers of the audience, have their residence in this city; where wine, oil, spices, and *European* merchandizes, are first brought from the *South-Sea*, by the river of *Guiaquil*, and then by land in carts. There is a grand manufacture here of cloth and serges; which make the cloathing of the common people all over *Peru*. The inhabitants also draw immense riches from the adjacent mountains, where there are many lavaderos of gold. Besides, the *Indians* have their fairs and markets, where they bring their fruit, cattle, cheese; cloaths and cloths of cotton, wool,
and

and flax; cables, and leather; which they sell by way of exchange, and not by any certain weight or measure: though those *Indians*, who live near this city, are more civilized, ingenious, and industrious, than all the other nations of *Peru*. Notwithstanding all these advantages, the inhabitants usually quit the province, when they have accumulated sufficient fortunes, and settle either at *Maracaibo*, or *Venezuela*; because of the inclemency of this climate: besides, there is a volcano in one of the mountains near this city, whose eruptions have threatened its destruction.

2. *TACUNGA* is about 20 miles south of *Quito*, and is a populous town; whose inhabitants weave woollen cloth, in which they carry on a considerable trade.

3. *BAEZA*, or *Baeca*, is about 50 miles south-east of *Quito*; being the principal town of the province, called *Quixos*, and the residence of its governor.

4. *CUENCA*, or *Bamba*, is about 170 miles south of *Quito*, and stands at the foot of the *Cordillera*, on the river *Curaray*; being inhabited by *Spaniards*, who are governed by a *corregidore*.

5. *ZAMORA* is 210 miles south of *Quito*, and 120 east of the *South-Sea*. It is a fine city, elegantly built with stone and timber; having gold mines in its neighbourhood; with plenty of cattle, fresh water fish, corn, herbs, salt, and honey.

6. *LOXA*, *Loja*, or *Lo Zarga*, is 50 miles west of *Zamora*, in 78 degrees of west longitude, and $4^{\circ} 15'$ of south latitude; being seated on the banks of the river *Catumayo*, in the pleasant valley of *Caxibamba*: but it is of no consequence as a place of trade.

VALADODID

VALADODID is the capitol of *Los Pacamoros*: but this, as well as *St. Jago de Montanas*, *St. Francis de Borgia*, and some other inland towns, are not considerable enough for any particular description; being of no farther service to the *Spaniards*, than as a bridle to the bordering *Indians*, who are a strong and robust people, brave and generous in their dispositions, easily wrought upon by kind and gentle usage; but fierce and intractable if any attempts are made upon their liberty.

7. *PAITA*, or *Payta*, is a sea-port town, built on the sand, close by the sea, in a small bay, under a hill; having its situation in 80 degrees of west longitude, and 5° 12' of south latitude; about 325 miles south-west of *Quito*. It contains about 200 families, whose houses are only ground-floors; the walls built of split cane and mud, and the roofs thatched with leaves: but these slight buildings are sufficient for a climate where rain is not seen in many years, and is always considered as a prodigy. The inhabitants are principally *Indians*, and black slaves, or at least a mixed breed; the whites being very few. In the middle of the town is a square, on one side of which is the fort, mounted with eight cannon; and, on the other side is the house where the governor resides: but, in the last war, the fort had neither ditch nor outwork, being surrounded by a plain brick wall; and the garrison consisted only of one weak company; though the town might have armed 300 men more; which made it fall an easy conquest to commodore *Anson*, on the 11th of *November*, 1741, who lost only one man in the attack, obtained a
booty

booty, which the *Spaniards* estimated at a million and a half of dollars, or 268,750 *l.* sterling, and burnt the whole town to ashes, except the two churches, which were at a distance, and where he had confined his prisoners.

THE country about *Paita* is mountainous and barren, having neither wood nor water; but the port, though in reality little more than a bay, is esteemed the best on that part of the coast; and is indeed a very secure and commodious harbour, where there is room enough for a fleet of ships, and good anchoring in any depth, from six fathom water to twenty, opposite the town; upon which account, it is greatly frequented by all vessels coming from the north; because the ships from *Acapulco*, *Sanfonnate*, *Realeijo*, and *Panama*, can touch no where else for refreshments in their passage to *Callao*; and the length of these voyages renders it impossible to perform them without calling upon the coast for a supply of fresh water. Besides, the port of *Paita*, is the usual place for disembarking those passengers as are bound to *Lima*, from *Acapulco* or *Panama*: for, as it is 200 leagues from *Paita* to *Callao*, and, as the wind is generally contrary, the passage by sea is very tedious and fatiguing; but by land there is a tolerable good road parallel to the coast, with many stations and villages for the accommodation of travellers.

8. *COLAN* is a small town, about 2-leagues north north-east from *Paita*, and inhabited by *Indian* fishermen, who go out to sea, and fish in bark-logs.

9. *GUIAQUIL*, or *Guayaquil*, is situated in $78^{\circ} 45'$ of west longitude, and $2^{\circ} 30'$ of south latitude;

tude; about 185 miles south-west of *Quito*, and 565 north of *Lima*. It is built on both sides of a navigable river of the same name, about 20 miles from the mouth of it; part of it lying on the ascent of a steep hill, and the other part in a bottom on a bog; but it is divided into the old and new town by the river, and consists chiefly of one street, about a mile and half in length. There are five churches, several convents, and 500 houses; besides, many huts built of bamboe-canes for the common people: the whole being defended by three forts, two of which are upon the river, and the other upon the hill. The town is governed by a *corregidore*, appointed by the king: though there is also a council for managing the affairs of the government, and determining causes of consequence.

THE mouth of the river of *Guiaquil*, is about 2 miles over: it is navigable 14 leagues above the town for large vessels; and the tide flows 20 leagues beyond: but the country, on both sides of it, is low marshy ground, encumbered with shrubs and mangroves: however, there are several villages and farm-houses on its banks, which supply the town with plenty of all kinds of provisions. There is a low island in the river, about a mile long, and 4 miles below the town, which divides the stream into two very fair channels for ships to pass up and down. The river is almost a league over about this island; in which spacious place, ships of the greatest burthen may ride afloat: but the best place for ships is nearest to that part of the land where the town stands, which is seldom without shipping.

THERE

THERE is plenty of timber brought from the island of *Gallo*, and other places, to *Guiaquil*; on which account a great number of ships are built there for his Catholic majesty. The inhabitants carry on a considerable trade; especially in exporting timber, cocoa, cotton, rice, salt, salt-fish, dried beef, hides, tallow, sarsaparilla, and other drugs: but there are no gold or silver mines near it; nor have they any corn, but *Indian* wheat. They are supplied with flour from *Truxillo*, and other southern parts; with woollen cloth, and strong bays, from *Quito*, where they are manufactured: they receive wine, brandy, oil, olives, and sugar, from *Pisco*, and other towns to the southward: besides, a market is daily held in boats and bark-logs on the river, where all sorts of provisions are sold very cheap.

THE *Spaniards* have a considerable garrison in *Guiaquil*; yet no town has suffered more from the depredations of the buccaneers: for *Dampier* and his companions had like to have surprized it in 1685: but it was actually taken and plundered, in 1687, by the *French*, who took the governor, and 700 prisoners, from whom they exacted a ransom of 260,000 pieces of eight, or 46,958 *l.* sterling: and captain *Rogers* took it by storm, in 1709, when he plundered it, and obliged the *Spaniards* to pay 30,000 pieces of eight, or 11,125 *l.* sterling, to ransom the town, and ships in the harbour.

PORTO VIEJO, or *St. Jago*, lies in $1^{\circ} 15'$ of south latitude; and was formerly remarkable for having a quarry of emeralds in its neighbourhood, which is now exhausted: but the town was so fre-

quently plundered by the buccaneers, that it sunk at last into a village.

TUMBEZ is situated at the foot of the mountains, upon a good fresh-water river, about 60 miles south of *Guiaquil*: and *Thomebamba* is 160 miles south of *Quito*, being remarkable for some rich gold mines, which were discovered there by the *Spaniards*, in 1554.

THE province of *LOS QUIXOS*, is very far from being thoroughly settled; though the *Spaniards* esteem it of great consequence, as some advantages are drawn from the commerce carried on with the numerous nations of *Indians* to the east: but the inhabitants of the *Pacamores* are industrious and rich; having several woollen and cotton manufactories; besides which, they make no inconsiderable profit of their *lavaderoes*.

SECTION II.

A description of the principal islands upon the coast of PERU; as also of the Gallapagos, and the islands of Solomon.

THERE are several islands upon the coast of *Peru*; but the most remarkable are those of *LOBOS*, *PUNA*, *COCOS*, and *PLATA*.

1. The isles of *LOBOS*, or *Seals*, according to *Dampier*, are two little islands, each of them about a mile round, and of an indifferent height, situated in about $79^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude, and $6^{\circ} 20'$ of south latitude; being 135 miles north west of *Truxillo*. The same author distinguishes them by the

the names of *Lobos de la Mar*, and *Lobos de la Terra*; between which, he says, there is a small channel fit for boats only; and that there are several rocks lying on the north side of the islands, a little way from shore. There is a small cove, or sandy bay, sheltered from the winds, at the west end of the eastermost island, where ships may careen: but the rest of the shore is a rocky coast, consisting of small cliffs. Within land, they are both of them rocky, and partly sandy; being barren, without any fresh water, tree, shrubs, grass, herbs, or any land animals, except fowls, of which there are great multitudes, particularly of boobies, and penguins; besides, great numbers of seals and sea lions come ashore upon both islands: he adds, that there is good riding between the eastermost island and the rocks, in ten, twelve, or fourteen fathom: for the wind is commonly at south, or south south-east, and the eastermost island, lying east and west, shelters that road.

DAMPIER, and his companions, were cruizing about these islands in *May*, 1684, and took three *Spanish* ships, laden with flour, from *Guanachaco* for *Panama*: but the account given of these islands, by captain *Rogers*, is different from what has been delivered by captain *Dampier*: for the former says, there are several islands called *Lobos de la Mar*, and that the two largest islands of that name, are about sixteen leagues from the main, and six miles in length: being so called, to distinguish them from those named *Lobos de la Terra*, which are only two leagues off the continent. There is another small island, close by the eastermost to the windward, not half a mile long; with

some rocks and breakers near the shore, all round, and off of each side of the entrance to the road, which is bold, and has no visible danger. He says, there is a passage for boats to windward, to come into the road, which is to the leeward of these islands, in a sound between them: it is not half a mile broad, but above a mile deep; having from ten to twenty fathom water, with good anchorage: though there is no coming in for ships, except to leeward of the islands. Captain *Rogers* also says, that there is a round hammock on the eastermost island, behind which is a small cove, very smooth, deep, and convenient enough for a ship to careen in. He adds, that the highest part of the island, appears, in the road, not much higher than the top-mast-head of a large ship: as also that the soil is a hungry, white, clayish earth, mixed with sand and rocks.

2. The island of *PUNA*, is situated in the bay of *Guiaquil*, in 79 deg. of west longitude, and 3 deg. of south latitude. It is flat and low, stretching east and west about 12 or 14 leagues; and was formerly very populous: but now there is only one town on the island, which is also called *Puna*, lying on the south-side, close by the sea, about 7 leagues from *Guiaquil*, and the same distance from *Punta Arena*, or *Sandy Point*, which is the westernmost part of the island. The town of *Puna* is inhabited by *Indians*, who are all seamen, and are the only pilots in these seas, particularly for the river of *Guiaquil*. They have a small church, and about twenty houses in the town: but the houses stand all on posts, ten or twelve feet high, with ladders on the outside to go up into them; being
thatched.

thatched with palmetto leaves, and the chambers well boarded. The ships bound to the river of *Guiaquil*, anchor at *Punta Arena*, and wait for a pilot; because the entrance is very dangerous for strangers. The tide runs very strong all about the island; but so many different ways, on account of the branches, creeks, and rivers, which run into the sea near it, that it casts up many dangerous shoals on all sides of it. The best place for ships to lie at anchor before the town, is against the middle of it; where there is five fathom water within a cable's length of the shore, and good soft deep ooze, where ships may careen, or hale ashore; and it flows 15 or 16 foot water up and down.

3. THE island of *PLATA*, or *Plate*, lies in $79^{\circ} 40'$ of west longitude, and $1^{\circ} 10'$ of south latitude; about eight or ten miles from the continent, and twenty from *Porto Viejo*; being four or five leagues W. S. W. and half a point westerly from *Cape St. Laurent*, or *Lorenzo*. The island received its name from the *Spaniards*; after Sir *Francis Drake* took the *Cacafogo*, a ship chiefly laden with plate, which he brought here, and divided with his men: it is about four miles long, and a mile and half broad; being surrounded with high steep cliffs, except at one place on the east-side. The top of it is flat and even; but the soil is so sandy and dry, that the trees it produces, which are of three or four sorts, unknown to the *Europeans*, are small bodied, low, and overgrown with long moss: however, there is good grass, especially in the beginning of the year. There is no water on the island, except at one place, on the east-side, close by the sea, where it drills slowly

down from the rocks, and may be received into vessels.

THE island formerly abounded with goats, which are now all destroyed; and *Dampier* says, he never saw any other quadrupeds here: but there are plenty of boobies and men of war birds, as also of small sea-turtle.

THE anchoring place is on the east-side, near the middle of the island, close by the shore, within two cables length of the sandy bay; having 18 or 20 fathom good fast oozy ground, and smooth water; because the S. E. point of the island shelters from the south winds, which blow here continually. From the S. E. point, a small shoal strikes out a quarter of a mile into the sea, where there is commonly a great riplin, or working of short waves, during the flood, which runs to the south, and the ebb to the north, with a pretty strong tide. There is good landing on the sandy bay, opposite the anchoring place; from whence there is a passage into the island, and at no place besides: but there are two or three high, steep, small rocks at the S. E. point, not a cable's length from the island, and another much larger at the N. E. end; though it is deep water all round, except at the anchoring place, and at the shoal at the S. E. point.

THERE are also the islands of *Salango*, and *St. Claro*, a few leagues to the south of *Plata*: the island of *St. Roch*, in $7^{\circ} 20'$ of south latitude; the isle *St. Gallant*, near *Pisco*; *Gouanne*, in $20^{\circ} 40'$ of south latitude; and some others upon the coast of *Peru*, which require no particular description: but there are the *Gallapagos*, and the islands of
Solomon,

Solomon, in the *Pacific Ocean*, westward of *Peru*, that are worthy of observation.

I. THE *GALLAPAGOS*, or *Gallipago* islands, that is of tortoises, are a great number of uninhabited islands, in about 90 degrees of west longitude; lying under, and on both sides of, the equator; being 110 leagues from the northern part of the continent of *Peru*, almost opposite to *Cape Passao*, and the town of *Quito*. The *Spaniards*, who first discovered them, and in whose draughts alone they are laid down, report them to be a great number, stretching north west from the line, as far as five degrees north: but *Dampier* says, he saw only about 14 or 15; some of which were 7 or 8 leagues long, and 3 or 4 broad; being tolerably high, and flat on the top. Four or five of the eastermost islands are rocky, hilly, and barren; producing neither tree, herb, or grass, except by the sea-side, and a few dildoe trees within land, which are green prickly shrubs, that grow about 8 or 10 feet high, without leaf or fruit, and not so much as fit to burn: but close by the sea there are bushes of burton wood, in some places, which are good for firing: however, there is water upon these barren islands, in ponds and holes, among the rocks. Some other of these islands are mostly plain, and low; the land more fertile, and producing trees of several sorts, unknown to *Europeans*; particularly some of the westermost islands, which are 9 or 10 leagues long, and 6 or 7 broad: having a deep and black mould, that produces trees of great and tall bodies, especially mammee-trees, which grow here in extensive groves. In some of these larger islands, there are pleasant rivers; and

there are brooks of good water on several of the lesser islands : but they all abound with guanoes, and land turtle, or tortoise ; the former being fat, large, and tame ; and the latter are so numerous that 5 or 600 men may subsist on them alone for several months. Some of these land-turtle are 150 or 200 *lb.* weight ; and so sweet, that no pullet eats more pleasantly, if *Dampier* is to be credited. There are some green snakes on these islands ; and great plenty of turtle-doves, which are tame, and somewhat less than a pidgeon ; but good meat, and commonly fat.

THERE are good wide channels between these islands, fit for ships to pass ; and shoal water, in some places, where there grows plenty of turtle-grass ; therefore, these islands are also plentifully stored with sea-turtle, of that sort which is called the green-turtle : for there are these four kinds of sea-turtle ; the trunk-turtle, the loggerhead, the hawksbill, and the green-turtle ; the latter of which is so called because its shell is greener than any other, but extraordinary thin, and used only for inlays. One of these green turtle will generally weigh from 2 to 300 *lb.* their backs are flat ; their heads round and small ; being the sweetest of all the kinds : but there are degrees of them, both in respect to their size and their flesh. Green turtle live on grass, which grows in the sea, from 3 to 6 fathom water, about a quarter of an inch broad, and 6 inches long : but the turtle of these *Gallapago* islands, according to *Dampier*, are a sort of bastard green turtle ; for their shell is thicker than those in the *East* or *West Indies* ; nor is their flesh so sweet and wholesome. Both males and females
come

come ashore in the day time, and lie in the sun, upon these islands: but, in other places, only the females go ashore, and in the night, to lay their eggs. There is plenty of salt in these islands; and the sea about them is well stored with excellent fish: but there are also abundance of sharks.

THESE islands were discovered, and described, by captain *Cowley*, in 1684; who calls them by the names of, *King Charles's island*, *Crossman's island*, *Bruttle's island*, the *Duke of Albemarle's island*, *Narborough's island*, *Cowley's Inhabited island*, *King James's island*, *Dean's island*, *Duke of Norfolk's island*, *Dassigney's island*, *Albany island*, *Eurefs's island*, *Bindos's island*, *Earl of Abingdon's island*, *Lord Wenman's island*, and *Lord Culpeper's island*.

THE air of these islands is temperate enough, considering the climate; for there is constantly a fresh sea-breeze all the day, and cooling refreshing winds in the night: therefore, the heat is not so violent here, as in most other places under the equator. The rains fall in *November*, *December*, and *January*; when there is frequently excessive dark tempestuous weather, mixed with much thunder and lightning: sometimes, before and after these months, there are moderate refreshing showers: but, in *May*, *June*, *July*, and *August*, the weather is always very fair.

2. THE islands of *SOLOMON* are a cluster of islands, situated in the *Pacific Ocean*, between 130 and 140 degrees of west longitude, and between 7 and 12 degrees of south latitude. They were originally discovered by *Alvaro de Mendoza*, under the orders of the licentiate *Lopez Garcia de Castro*,
in

in 1567; which was then esteemed a very important matter: but, as the *Spaniards* were always slow in their motions, and, besides, were under a necessity of waiting for orders from *Europe*, it was ten years before they made any farther progress: though, when they were preparing to undertake such an expedition, as they flattered themselves would have put them in possession of a new *Indies*, they received directions from *Spain* to lay aside the design for a while; and to suppress all papers, charts, letters, and whatever else might give the least light into the nature and situation of these islands; on account of the expedition made by Sir *Francis Drake*, who actually visited the *South Seas* in 1578. As soon as the *Spaniards* were recovered from this fright, and were in a condition of thinking of such matters again, the project of discovering the islands of *Solomon* was revived: but was again defeated, before it could be put into execution, by the arrival of admiral *Cavendish* in the *South Seas*, in 1586. However, in 1595, Don *Alvaro de Miranda* was sent with four ships upon this discovery: but, though they could not find the islands of *Solomon*, they found other islands near them, of equal, or greater, value; where they behaved so ill, that they compelled the natives to have recourse to arms, by whom they were driven out, and obliged to fly for shelter to the *Philippines*. *Ferdinand de Quiros* laboured hard to get this project resumed in 1610; but the *Spaniards* have not applied themselves to it: so that providence may have reserved the discovery of these islands, and the southern unknown continent, for some other nation.

THESE

THESE islands have received the particular names of, *James Island*, *St. Christopher*, *Guadalcanal*, *Seslargo*, *Bonavista*, *Rameaux*, *Malaita*, *Isabella*, and *Jesus*; besides several others, which have received no denomination. They are reported to be worth the seeking and possessing; as being large, and pleasant; with excellent ports, and great quantities of silver: yet, in the space of 188 years, these valuable countries have scarce been seen, and never settled or conquered. It is true, they lie at a great distance, between the continent of *Peru*, and the *Philippine Islands*; which has induced some persons to think that the islands of *Solomon* are only imaginary: but, if this sort of suspicion had been prevalent, in *Portugal*, or *Spain*, when the first proposals for discovery were made, the *Europeans* might have known as little of the *East* or *West Indies*, as they now understand of these islands: since the reasons, and rumours, upon which these discoveries were undertaken, were certainly less clear and cogent, than what has been, or may be, offered in respect to the islands of *Solomon*.

CHAP. IV.

The DESCRIPTION of TERRA
FIRMA, and GUIANA.

SECTION I.

A particular representation of the province of TERRA FIRMA: its boundaries, extent, climate, and soil. The discovery of it, and the settlements made there, by the Spaniards. The eight sub-divisions, or districts, of this country; with an account of their rivers, and principal places of trade; as also of the native Indians, the produce of the country, and the commerce of the Spaniards.

THE province of *TERRA FIRMA* is a very extensive country; being bounded by part of *Peru*, the country of the *Amazons*, and part of *Guiana*, on the south; by the river *Oroonoko*, which separates it from *Guiana*, on the south-east; by the *North Sea*, or part of the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the north and east; and by the *South Sea* on the west, where the isthmus of *Darien* also divides it from *Mexico*, or *New Spain*. It extends from about $61^{\circ} 20'$ to 83 degrees of west longitude, and from one degree to $12^{\circ} 30'$ of north latitude; being about 1300 miles long from east to west, and about 750 broad from north to south; but, in several places, it is so much pent in by the river *Oroonoko*, that it is not half that breadth, and not
above

above 180 miles towards the mouth of the same river. The province of *Guiana* is sometimes included in the *Terra Firma*, which would make it of a much greater extent: but it will be proper to give an account of that country by itself; because it is not under the dominion of the *Spaniards*.

THIS country, like that of *Chili*, was divided into many governments, and the people into several tribes, governed by their respective caziques, or princes. It was first discovered by *Christopher Columbus*, in his third * voyage to *America*, in 1498; whose failors called it *New Castile*; because most of them were natives of *Old Castile* in *Spain*: it afterwards obtained the name of the *Castilla del Oro*, or the *Golden Castile*; on account of the large quantities of that metal, which were found there, and particularly in the district of *Uraba*: but at last it recovered the name first given it by *Columbus*, of *Terra Firma*, or *Firm Land*.

THE climate cannot be called either pleasant or healthful; because the inhabitants are scorched by the violent heat of the sun in one part of the year, and flooded with continual rains in the other. The soil is very different: for there is a perfect verdure in some places, though the trees produce little or no fruit; but, in other parts, there is such a great plenty of all things, that the inhabitants have two harvests, and their meadows feed prodigious multitudes of cattle. The mountains abound with lions, tigers, and many other kinds of wild beasts. There are abundance of rivers and rivulets; but some of them are so far from being wholesome, that their waters are dangerous,

* See this Volume, p. 104.

gerous, and not fit to be drank. There were formerly very rich mines of gold in this province, which are now almost exhausted; though there are still some remains of them, as well as some silver and iron mines, that have been since opened. There was once a very rich pearl fishery on the sea coast, which is now greatly decayed. But, as the districts of this country are so numerous, it will be proper to represent their different products, and rivers, under their respective divisions, as also the particular nations of *Indians*, throughout the whole country.

COLUMBUS barely discovered this north coast of *South America*, from the mouth of the river *Oroonoko* in the east, to *Porto Bello* in the west; and, though he went on shore in several parts, he established no settlements upon the coast*. *Alonzo de Ojeda*, and *Americus Vesputius*, made a farther discovery of the northern part of this country, in 1499: they were immediately followed by *Peter Alonzo Nino*, *Vincent Yanez Pinson*, *James de Lepe*, and *Roderic de Bastidas*, who severally undertook the same expedition, as is more particularly represented in the 4th chapter of the 1st. part of this work.

VASCO NUNEZ de BILBOA, who attended general *Enciso* in an expedition from *Cuba*, first settled a colony, and erected a fort, on the west side of the gulph of *Darien*, in 1510. He afterwards took the command from *Enciso*, who was very unfortunate in this expedition, and lost several men in his engagements with the *Indians*. *Nunez* then cultivated a friendship with *Careta*, *Ponca*, and

* See this Volume, p. 120.

and *Comagre*; who were the caziques, or princes, that governed the country of *Darien*: after which, he took 200 *Spaniards*, and 1000 *Indians*, to penetrate through the mountains, and discover the *South-Sea*, wherein he happily succeeded, in the year 1513; when he made a settlement, near the place where *Panama* was afterwards situated.

IN this expedition, the *Spaniards* killed a great number of defenceless *Indians*; who, at first, took these invaders for gods, but soon looked upon them as devils; being obliged to surrender themselves to their mercy, or expose themselves to their cruelty. *Nunez* went up to his knees in the *South-Sea*, and took a formal possession of it for his Catholic majesty: after which, he returned to *Darien*, and solicited a reinforcement from *Spain*, where he sent a great part of the gold which he acquired from the *Indians*.

ACCORDINGLY, *Peter Arias*, or *Pedrarias*, was appointed governor of the province, and sent over with 1500 men: being accompanied by father *John Quevedo*, a *Franciscan* friar, as bishop of the place, with several other monks of that order, to instruct the natives in the christian religion. *Nunez* was also appointed adelantado, or lieutenant of the *South-Seas*: but received great indignity from the governor, who plundered the country, and massacred the *Indians* without mercy. However, *Quevedo* interposed his good offices, so as to procure a reconciliation between the two generals; and, to cement their friendship the stronger, *Nunez* married the daughter of *Arias*: but the latter, soon afterwards put his son-in-law to death, in a barbarous, unexpected, and unjustifiable manner,

at a time when he was undertaking the discovery of *Peru* *.

ARIAS, being without a rival, or any person to check his cruelty, ravaged the country, from sea to sea, in a terrible manner. He reduced the provinces of *Veragua*, and *Nicaragua*; built *Panama*, *Nombrede Dios*, and other towns: but committed such horrid depredations on the *Indians*, that he thought proper to remove to his acquisitions in *Veragua*, where he imagined himself to be out of the reach of justice, and was never mentioned afterwards: though *Bartholomew de Capas*, bishop of *Chiapo*, says, that *Arias*, and his successors, destroyed no less than eight hundred thousand people, and plundered the country of several millions of gold; but sent no more than three thousand crowns to his Catholic majesty.

THE rest of *Terra Firma*, from *Darien* to the river *Oroonoko*, was subdued by private adventurers, at their own expences; who obtained a particular extent of country from the court of *Spain*, and used the natives at discretion; ravaging and plundering the several countries, for 1500 miles together; and murdering, or enslaving, the miserable inhabitants, who were incapable of making any considerable resistance against their rapacious invaders, and gave them an opportunity of depopulating many countries, which were well inhabited.

It was the office allotted for the bishop of *Chiapa*, to make a strict enquiry into the usage of these oppressed *Indians*; and the reverend author asserts, That his countrymen were not contented with barely massacring these miserable people: but tortured

* See this Volume, p. 133.

tortured and oppressed the survivors with so much inhumanity, that they thought death was more preferable than life, under such an insupportable tyranny. He observes, *That* the *Spaniards* carried two millions of *Indians* into slavery, from the coasts of *Guiana*, and *New Andalusia*; many of whom died at sea, for want of provisions, and the remainder perished in the mines: besides, many thousands more were destroyed in the pearl-fisheries on this coast, by being compelled to dive for pearls beyond their strength and abilities. *That* the *Dutch* and *German* adventurers, who were only 900 men, brought into the province of *Venezuela*, by *Ambrose Alfringer*, destroyed upwards of four millions of souls, within that district; where they put the caziques to most cruel tortures, to make them discover the gold, which these barbarous invaders suspected they had concealed. To all which he adds, *That* these adventurers kept packs of great mastiff dogs, on purpose to hunt the *Indians*, and tear them to pieces: *That* it was a common thing to kill the *Indians* without offence, or to cut off their hands and noses in sport, and give them to the dogs for food: *That* the poor natives frequently fled to the woods and mountains, to shelter themselves from the rage of the *Spaniards*, who called this a rebellion, and sent their dogs out to hunt the *Indians*, by whom they were torn in pieces; or slaughtered by their masters, and thrown by hundreds from the precipices of rocks. All which facts, how monstrous soever, appeared to be true, by the testimony of witnesses, on the trial of several causes in the courts of *Spain*, between the several adventurers, who had dissentions concerning the limits of their respective provinces,

the distribution of the natives, and the rest of the plunder: so that, by these contests, the truth of such barbarities was occasionally manifested.

HOWEVER, the natives of this part of *America* were never entirely conquered; and never will, in all human probability: because, they are not only a brave people, but they also entertain the most inveterate hate, and hereditary aversion, to the *Spaniards*; which has several times induced them to assist the *English* buccaneers in their expeditions: though it is not to be expected, that these *Indians* would contribute a great deal towards the absolute conquest of these parts from the *Spaniards*; because they are not very potent, or numerous: besides, they are of an inconstant disposition; and, in reality, not cordially affected to any *Europeans*.

THIS country, is subdivided into the following provinces, or districts: 1. *POPAYAN*. 2. *TERRA FIRMA* Proper, or the *Isthmus of Darien*. 3. *CARTHAGENA*. 4. *SANTA MARTHA*. 5. *RIO de la HACHA*. 6. *VENEZUELA*. 7. *NEW GRANADA*. And, 8. *NEW ANDALUSIA*.

I. THE province of *POPAYAN* is bounded by *Peru* on the south; by part of the country of the *Amazons*, *Guiana*, and *New Granada*, on the east; by *Carthagena*, on the north; with the *South-Sea*, and part of *Terra Firma*, on the west: being about 400 miles in length from north to south, and about 300 in breadth from west to east. It is separated from *Peru*, and the country of the *Amazons*, by a part of the *Andes*, which send out several branches, or ridges; from whence many rivers descend, and several deep vallies are formed. The
country

country is partly mountainous, and partly plain ; which occasions a variety of weather ; some places being very hot, and others cold ; some healthy, and others unwholsome ; some very wet, and others dry : however, the soil, wherever it is cultivated, appears to be rich and fruitful : but the country is far from being thoroughly settled.

THE rivers of *Santa Martha*, and *Magdalena*, run through this province ; the former of which rises in a valley, near the mountains, about 25 miles south-east of the city of *Popayan* ; and the latter has its source in the province of *Quito*, near the equator : they both receive several inferior rivers, which render them very broad ; and they run parallel to each other for many leagues : but their streams are united, near the town of *Tamalameque*, in nine degrees of north latitude ; after which, the river runs directly northwards, and falls into the north sea, between the towns of *Cartagena*, and *Santa Martha*. The chief rivers of this province, that fall into the *South-Sea*, are 1. *Bonaventura*, which rises in the mountains, runs westward, and falls into a bay of the same name, in 4 degrees 15 minutes of north latitude. 2. The *Tomaco*, which rises in the same mountains, and runs parallel to the former ; falling into the *South-Sea* in 2 degrees of north latitude. And, 3. the river of *St. Jago*, which falls into the sea, near the promontory of *Manglares*, about 20 leagues south of the *Tomaco*. But, as it rains near three quarters of the year, in some parts of this province, there are also several other little streams, which fall from the mountains into the *South-Sea*, whose sands afford a great deal of gold dust ; and there

are mines of gold in the mountains; which induced the *Spaniards* to build towns, and reside there; notwithstanding, it is very uncomfortable to live so near the equator, where the heat and rains are extremely unhealthy and troublesome.

Most of the trees, herbs, and flowers, that grow in any part of *America*, are to be found in *Popayan*; particularly cotton trees, cedars, red wood, and trees that yield the balsam of *Tolu*. Besides the mines of gold, there are also precious stones frequently found here, such as jasper, chalcidony, and various kinds of agates.

THE *Spaniards* have made some settlements in the low parts of this country: but the mountains are inhabited by the *Indians*, who are a brave people, and retain their freedom, like the *Chilefians*; though surrounded on every side by the *Spanish* dominions. However, the *Spaniards* carry on a trade with these *Indians*, by the intercourse of those whom they have converted: the principal merchandizes brought there by the *Spaniards*, being wine, cinnamon of *De los Quixos*, iron, copper; several sorts of silk and woollen stuffs made in *Europe*; gold, silver, and thread lace; with great quantities of mercery goods; on which they gain five hundred per cent. though the natives never make exchanges according to the real value of things; but according to the pleasure they take in the possession of them, or the occasion they have for such commodities.

THE most considerable places in this province, are 1. *Popayan*; 2. *Pasto*; 3. *St. Sebastian de la Plata*; 4. *St. Vincent de la Paz*; 5. *Agreda*; 6. *Santa Fè d'Antiochia*; and, 7. *Bonaventura*.

1. THE city of *POPAYAN* is the capital of this province, which gives name to it; being situated in $74^{\circ} 35'$ of west longitude, and $2^{\circ} 40'$ of north latitude, at the bottom of the mountains, on the banks of a river which falls into the *Magdalena*. It is the see of a bishop, who is suffragan to the archbishop of *Santa Fè de Bogota* in *New Granda*, from which city it is about 115 miles distant to the south-west: and it is the residence of the lieutenant-general for the province. The town is large, but has few *Spanish* inhabitants; so that it is filled with creolians and *Indians*, who live both plentifully and pleasantly, except when they are in danger of an invasion from the unconquered *Indians*.

2. *PASTO*, or *St. Juan de Pasto*, is seated in a beautiful valley, called *Atris*, watered by a fine river, and several brooks, about 117 miles south-west of the city of *Popayan*. The *Spaniards* have some considerable farms in this valley, where they have many sugar plantations; and feed abundance of cattle in the savannahs: they also sow maize, and wheat, along the banks of the river: for the climate is very temperate, being even colder in summer, than in winter; so that they distinguish the seasons here, by calling the dry season summer, and the wet season winter.

3. *St. SEBASTIAN de la PLATA* is about 60 miles north east of the city of *Popayan*; being situated in a large plain on the banks of the river *Galli*, which falls into the *Magdalena*. It has several silver mines in its territory, on which account it is called *De la Plata*, or of *Silver*: but the town is subject to earthquakes.

4. *St. VINCENT de la PAZES* is 25 miles east of *St. Sebastian*, and seems to be the same place which is called *Onda*, by *Martiniere*; who says, it is a small port on the river *Magdalena*, where the canoes, that come from *Carthagena* and *Santa Martha*, unload their merchandizes.

5. *AGREDA*, called also *Malaga* by the *Spaniards*, is about 55 miles east from the *South-Sea*, and 153 west of the city of *Popayan*; having some gold mines in its neighbourhood: but it is a small town, and thinly inhabited.

6. *SANTA FE D'ANTIOCHIA* is the most northern town of all this province; being situated on the banks of the river *Santa Martha*, near the border of the province of *Carthagena*, 200 miles north of the city of *Popayan*; and is the capital of a government, called the audience of *Santa Fe*, to which the name of *Antiochia*, or *Antioquia*, was added, to distinguish it from *Santa Fe de Bogota*, in *New Granada*.

7. *BONAVENTURA* is a port town, and the general staple for all the southern part of *Terra Firma*; situated in the bottom of a deep bay, of the same name, in $3^{\circ} 30'$ of north latitude; being inhabited by a few *Spanish* families, who receive the merchandizes brought here from *Mexico*, and send them to the interior part of the country. The mouth of the harbour is difficult to find, and the town is very unwholsome; because the adjacent country is surrounded with high mountains, where it rains almost incessantly. *Coreal* says, that the *Spaniards* have built a fort in this bay, for the security of the coast on that side, and to awe the neighbouring *Indians*: it is defended by four bastions,

tions, on which they have planted a few guns: but the garrison is weak, and ill supplied with ammunition; though the bay might easily be rendered inaccessible.

As the northern frontier of this province joins the isthmus of *Darien*, which is also inhabited by free *Indians*, the *Spaniards* have been extremely apprehensive that the *English* would make some attempt this way, and thereby secure to themselves a settlement on both seas: but this could not be undertaken, without a large body of land forces, much hazard, great expences, and extraordinary difficulty.

II. *TERRA FIRMA* proper, is that country which lies between the gulph of *Darien*, and *Mexico*, or *New Spain*, along the coasts of the north and *South-Seas*: being that narrow neck of land which joins *South* and *North-America* together: though it is called by some the isthmus of *Darien*; and by others the isthmus of *Panama*, or of *America*. The most exact boundary of this province, on the west, according to *Waser*, is a line drawn from the fort at the mouth of the river *Chagre*, on the *North-Sea*, to the town of *Nata* on the *South-Sea*: and the truest eastern boundary is a line drawn from point *Garachina*, or the south part of the gulph of *Saint Michael*, directly east to the nearest part of the great river of *Darien*. It extends, in the form of a bow or crescent, about the noble bay of *Panama*; being about 300 miles long, and 60 broad from sea to sea. It is situated between 83° and $87^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude, and between 8 and 10 degrees of north latitude: bounded by the *North-Sea* on the north; by the gulph, or river of *Da-*

rien, which separates it from the province of *Cartagena*, on the east; by *Popayan*, and the *South-Sea*, on the south; and by the same sea, and the province of *Veragua*, on the west. This situation, both on the *North* and *South-Seas*, as also on the confines of *North* and *South America*; together with the gold mines, gold sands, and pearls, with which this province, and the adjacent seas are replenished, render it invaluable, and make it the darling object of all enterprising people; especially, considering that this is the narrowest land that disjoins the *South-Sea* and the *Atlantic Ocean*; as also how very great the compass is that must be fetched from one shore to the other by sea.

THE land of this province is almost every where of an unequal surface, distinguished with hills and vallies; of great variety, for height, depth, and extent. The vallies are generally watered with rivers, brooks, and perennial springs, some of which fall into the *North*, and others into the *South-Sea*: most of them taking their rise from a ridge, or chain, of hills higher than the rest, running the length of the isthmus, and in a manner parallel to the shore, about 10 or 15 miles distant from the *North-Sea*, of which there is a fair and clear view from this main ridge; though the *South-Sea* cannot be discovered from any part of these mountains: because, on the north side of the main ridge, there are either no hills at all, or such as are rather gentle declivities, than distinct hills: but the country on the south side of the ridge, is intermixed with considerable hills, cloathed with tall woods, that greatly incommode the prospect which would otherwise be of the *South-Sea*. The country,

country, on the north-side of these mountains, is so much covered with woods, that it appears like one continued Forrest : nor is the main ridge every where carried on with a discontinued summit; but is rather a chain of separate hills; and, accordingly, has several large vallies disjoining the particular eminences, that compose its length : and these vallies not only make the ridge more useful and habitable ; but some of them are so deep in their descent, as to admit a passage for rivers.

THIS province, being very narrow, and lying between two great oceans, is observed to have more wet weather than any other place within the torrid zone. The rains usually begin in *April* or *May* : they are very heavy in *June*, *July*, and *August* ; when it is also extremely hot, if the sun happens to shine ; because, at this time, there are no breezes to cool the air. The rains begin to abate in *September* : but it is *November*, or *December*, and sometimes *January*, before the fair season returns : so that the country is very wet for two thirds, if not for three quarters, of the year : but, in the wettest season, there are now and then some fair days, with only a tornado, or thunder-shower. The floods, and torrents, caused by these rains, frequently bear down trees, which dam up the rivers, and occasion all the adjacent country to be overflowed : but the coolest time of the year is after the rains, about Christmas, when the fair weather approaches.

THE principal rivers, that fall into the *North Sea*, are, 1. The river, or gulph, of *Darien* ; which is the eastern boundary of this province : it rises in the south, and runs directly north, upwards of

100 miles ; falling into the *North Sea*, near *Golden Island* : it is between 6 and 7 leagues wide at the mouth ; but has not above 6 foot water in a spring-tide : however, it is navigable about 80 miles ; though very little traffic is carried on there, because no vessels can get over the bar. 2. The river of *Conception* rises about the middle of the great ridge of mountains, runs precipitately to the north-west, and falls into the *North-Sea*, opposite to *La Sound's Key*, which is one of the *Samballoe* islands : it is pretty broad, and makes a good appearance at the mouth ; but has also a bar, that prevents any ships of burthen from getting in : though there is fine riding in the channel, at the mouth of this river, between the islands and continent, which form a tolerable harbour. 3. The *Chagre*, which is more frequented by navigators, than any other river of this province, and rises not far from *Panama* : it takes a north west course, runs through very deep winding vallies, and falls into the *North-Sea*, about 10 leagues west of *Porto Bello* : so that all the merchandizes, sent from *Panama* to *Porto Bello* for the galleons, are embarked upon this river ; except the gold and silver, which are carried directly over land, upon the backs of mules, to *Porto Bello*.

AND the most considerable rivers that fall into the *South-Sea*, are, 1. The *Santa Maria*, or *St. Mary's*, which rises in the mountains on the north-east part of the province, runs to the eastward, and falls into the gulph of *St. Michael's*, on the south side of the bay of *Panama* : it is tolerably large, and navigable : but is most considerable on account of its proximity to the gold mines ; and for
the

the rivulets which fall into it, in whose sands are found abundance of gold; particularly in one, called the *Golden River*, from whence the *Spaniards*, in some seasons, have carried off 18 or 20 thousand pounds weight of pure gold. 2. The *Congo*, rises in the east part of this province, and runs to the south-west, almost parallel to the river of *Santa Maria*; falling to northward of it, into the same gulph of *Saint Michael*: there are several small streams that fall into this river, both on the east and west; which render it navigable for great vessels within the bar; but it is so shallow at the mouth, that the entrance is to be made with great difficulty. 3. The *Cheapo*, which rises in the mountains near the *North-Sea*, bends its course westwards, and then turns to the south; falling into the bay of *Panama*, seven leagues to the westward of that city: it runs a long course, and is navigable a great way; but has the same misfortune as the others, to have a bar at the mouth, which hinders the entrance of large ships.

BOTH the northern and southern coasts are well watered with other inferior rivers: besides, neither of the oceans fall in at once upon the shore; but are intercepted by a great many valuable islands, that lie scattered along each coast.

THE principal towns in this province, are, 1. *Panama*; 2. *Lavelia*; 3. *Nata*; 4. *Cheapo*; 5. *Schucadero*; and 6. *Santa Maria*, on the *South-Sea*: 7. *Porto Bello*; 8. *Venta de Cruz*; and, 9. *Conception*, on the *North-Sea*.

I. THE city of *PANAMA*, or *New Panama*, is situated upon the finest and most capacious bay of the *South-Sea*, in 80 deg. of west longitude, and 9° of north

north latitude. It is well built, with brick and stone, in the form of a half moon; being surrounded by a stone wall, fortified with bastions, and other works, planted with great guns, both towards the sea and land. It is the see of a bishop, suffragan to the archbishop of *Lima*; and contains upwards of six thousand houses, eight parish churches, besides the cathedral, thirty chapels, and several monasteries and nunneries: so that it is a flourishing city, and the residence of the president: but it is most considerable on account of the treasures of gold and silver, and the rich merchandizes of *Peru*, which are lodged in the magazines of *Panama*, till they are sent to *Europe*, as well as the merchandizes sent over by the galleons from *Spain*, to be transported to the several cities and provinces of *Peru* and *Chili*.

THE chief advantage that the new town has above the old one, is an excellent road for small ships, as good as a harbour; being sheltered by the neighbouring islands of *Perica*, which are three small rocky places, lying in a row, parallel to the shore, two leagues from the town, and where the fleet from *Lima* rides at anchor; for there is very good anchoring between those islands, at a good distance from the town; but there is a shoal between the road and the town, which large ships cannot get over.

THE bay of *Panama* is remarkable for several navigable rivers that run into it, some of which are very rich in gold: and it is sprinkled with several small islands, which are as pleasant to a spectator, as profitable to the proprietors. The country on the land-side is full of small hills, verdant vallies,

vallies, and fine groves of trees, which appear like islands in the savannahs, where there is a fine dry champain country, little subject either to fogs or mists. The rainy season continues here from *May* to *November*: but the rains are not so heavy as on the other side of the isthmus, though they are very unwholsome to strangers.

THE merchants of *Panama* are generally very rich, and the port is never without a considerable number of ships in it; because it is the grand center of commerce from *Peru* and *Cbili*: besides, there is an armadilla, or a squadron of small men of war, commonly either before the town, or cruising in its neighbourhood.

OLD *Panama* stood about four miles to the eastward of this city, and was destroyed by the *English* buccaneers, commanded by captain *Morgan*, in 1670, who loaded two hundred beasts with the treasure he acquired in plundering the city, and returned with 400,000 pieces of eight, or 71,666 l. sterling to *Jamaica*, where he received the honour of knighthood, from king *Charles II.* for his conduct and bravery; though, like the glorious *Sir Walter Raleigh*, he was afterwards imprisoned in the tower of *London*, as a sacrifice to the resentment of the *Spanish* ministry.

SIR *Henry Morgan*, when he undertook the expedition against *Panama*, began with the reduction of the castle of *Chagre*, which stood at the mouth of the river of the same name, upon the *North-Sea*. He left 500 men to garrison the castle, 500 more to take care of the fleet, and then embarked 1200 selected fellows on board such boats and canoes as he had in the river, which he soon found

found impassable for large vessels, and therefore was obliged to leave his great boats and artillery behind him, under a guard, advancing only with the canoes and small boats; some of his people going by land, and others by water, who suffered intolerable hardships for want of provisions. However, after a laborious march of six days, they arrived at *Venta de Cruz*, where the *Spaniards* of *Panama* embark their goods on the river *Chagre*, for *Porto Bello*, and continued their march over land; being incommoded by several parties of *Spanish Indians*, as also by several intermediate morasses, and the heavy rains that fell at this season. The buccaneers were met by the governor of *Panama*, with four regiments of foot, and two squadrons of horse: but the *Spaniards* were defeated, with the loss of 600 men; after which, the buccaneers pressed towards the city, scaled the walls, and became masters of the place, without making the least breach, and without any artillery. The town was set on fire, and plundered: after which, the buccaneers returned to *Venta de Cruz*, and conveyed their plunder down the river to the castle of *Chagre*, where they blew up the fortifications.

NOTWITHSTANDING the feeble condition to which commodore *Anson* was reduced, on his arrival at *Juan Fernandes**, he had first determined in himself to touch in the neighbourhood of *Panama*, and to get some correspondence over land with the fleet commanded by admiral *Vernon*; for, when the commodore departed from *England*, he left a large force at *Portsmouth*, which was intended to be sent to the *West-Indies*, to be employed

* See this Volume, p. 256, and 266.

ployed on an expedition against some of the *Spanish* settlements. Commodore *Anson* was therefore of opinion, that this expedition had succeeded, and that *Porto Bello* might be then garrisoned by *British* troops; in which conjecture the commodore was right: for admiral *Vernon* took *Porto Bello*, on the 22d of *November* 1739; and Mr. *Anson* continued at *Juan Fernandes* till the 19th of *September* 1741: on which surmise, the commodore hoped, that, on his arrival at the isthmus, he should procure an intercourse with his countrymen on the other side, either by the *Indians* who were greatly disposed in favour of the *English*, or even by the *Spaniards* themselves, some of whom might be induced to carry on this intelligence for proper rewards; which, after it was once begun, might be continued with very little difficulty: so that Mr. *Anson* flattered himself, that he might, by this means, have received a reinforcement of men from the other side; and that, by settling a prudent plan of operations with the *English* commanders in the *West-Indies*, he might have even taken *Panama* itself; which would have given the possession of that isthmus to the *British* nation; whereby the *British* government would, in effect, have been masters of all the treasures of *Peru*; and would have had in their hands an equivalent for any demands which they might have been induced to make to either of the branches of the house of *Bourbon*. Indeed, had the success of the *British* force in the *West-Indies*, been answerable to the general expectation, these views would have been extremely prudent and reasonable: but the commodore, on examining the papers which were found on board the *Carmelo* prize,

prize, learnt that the attempt against *Carthagena* had failed ; and that there was no probability of the *British* fleet, in that part of the world, engaging in any new enterprize, that would at all facilitate this plan : therefore, Mr. *Anson* gave over all hopes of being re-inforced across the isthmus, and consequently had no inducement to proceed to *Panama*, as he was incapable of attacking the place ; besides, by this time, there was great reason to believe that there was a general embargo on all the coast.

AFTER the retreat of general *Wentworth* from the unsuccessful expedition against *St. Jago*, in the island of *Cuba*, towards the latter end of the year 1741 ; it was proposed to the council of war held at *Jamaica*, at which were present vice-admiral *Vernon*, general *Wentworth*, Sir *Chaloner Ogle*, brigadier-general *Guise*, and governor *Trelawney*, to make an attempt either upon *Guatemala*, or *Panama* : but the latter was agreed upon, and immediately put into execution ; it being also agreed to convey the troops and artillery up the *Chagre* to *Cruzes*. The fleet consisted of eight sail of the line ; with three fire-ships, and two hospital-ships : the transports were about forty sail, having on board 3000 land forces, and 500 negroes. Admiral *Vernon* sailed directly into the harbour of *Porto Bello*, on the 28th of *March*, 1742, with an intention of sending the troops up the river *Casabal* : he met with no opposition ; though the governor of *Porto Bello* had three companies of *Spanish* soldiers, and two companies of mulattoes and negroes, who abandoned the town ; and the magistracy sent deputies to the admiral, to desire protection

tection for their persons and effects, which was formally and readily granted. But, on the 30th, it was determined, in a council of war, among the land officers, "that, at this conjuncture, an attempt " on *Panama* was not consistent with his majesty's " service, and should therefore be laid aside:" upon which, the whole armament returned to *Jamaica*: though admiral *Vernon* was of opinion, that less than 1500 men would have been sufficient for the enterprize against *Panama*, which had been formerly taken, by Sir *Henry Morgan*, with a less force, who marched over the isthmus, and got possession of the town with little difficulty: but the sea officers concluded, that the land officers had no intention of going to *Panama*, even before they arrived at *Porto Bello*.

2. *LAVELIA*, is a pretty large town, on the banks of a river, on the north-side of the bay of *Panama*, about 18 miles from the sea.

3. *NATA*, is a port town, situated in a plain, on the west-side of the bay of *Panama*, and about 70 miles south-west of the city of the same name: but this town, and some others on the same coast, are only remarkable for their breed of cattle, hogs, and poultry, as also for their planting of maize, purposely for the support of *Panama*, which is chiefly supplied with provisions from other towns, and the islands in the gulph.

4. *CHEAPO*, is a small town, situated on a river of the same name, about 18 miles from the sea, and 25 north-east of *Panama*.

5. *SCHUCADERO*, is also a small town, on the north-side of the river *Santa Maria*, in a good

dry foil, and open to the gulph of *St. Michael*, from whence it is refreshed by the sea-breezes.

6. *SANTA MARIA*, is situated 18 miles from the sea, on the south bank of the river to which it communicates its name, about 90 miles south-east of *Panama*; being considerable on account of the gold mines in its neighbourhood: but it has been frequently plundered by privateers, and buccaneers.

7. *PORTO BELLO*, is situated in the cod of a bay of the *North Sea*, in 82 degrees of west longitude, and $9^{\circ} 35'$ of north latitude; about 70 miles north of *Panama*, and 300 west of *Carthagena*; having this name given to it by *Columbus*, on account of the security of its harbour. The town lies at the bottom of the harbour, bending with the shore like a half moon: it is long and narrow, containing about 500 houses, two churches, a treasury, custom-house, and exchange: having two principal streets, besides those that go across; with a small parade about the middle of it, surrounded with good buildings. The harbour is very fair, large, and commodious; affording good anchoring, and convenient shelter for ships; being about three miles long, and one broad, defended with high hills. There are about twenty fathoms water at the entrance of the port towards the north coast: fourteen on the south; and about ten in the midst of the harbour all the way. At its mouth, on the larboard side, was the *Iron-Castle*, on the side of a steep rock, with 100 guns, and 300 men; near the end of the harbour, about a mile farther up, on the starboard side, was a stronger fort, called *Gloria*; having 120 guns, and 400 men: and at the upper end of it was fort *Feronymo*, which

which commanded the mouth of the harbour : but they were all demolished by admiral *Vernon*, when he took this strong town with ONLY SIX SHIPS OF WAR.

THE town is situated in an unhealthful place : for the east end is in a low swampy ground ; and the sea, at low water, leaves the shore bare, within the harbour, a great way from the houses ; which creates a black filthy mud or ooze, and occasions very noisome vapours in this hot climate. From the south and east part of the town, the country rises gradually in hills, which are partly woodlands, and partly savannah or pasture : but there are few fruit-trees, or plantations, near the town.

THERE are between 2 and 3000 inhabitants : but the greatest part of them are *Indians*, mulattoes, and negroes : for no *Spaniard*, of any substance, chooses to reside in so unhealthful a situation : though, at the time of the fair, it is very populous. This fair continues a month, or six weeks, while the galleons are here ; and the concourse of people is so great, from *Lima* and *Panama*, that the smallest shops are frequently lett for as much as 200 *l.* sterling, during this term ; a very indifferent chamber for 25 *l.* sterling ; and the price of provisions is also augmented in proportion.

THE commodities, brought by the *Spaniards* to *Porto Bello*, consist in all kinds of linnens and cottons, woollen and silk manufactures, hard and haberdashery wares ; and, in general, all necessaries for the use of mankind ; whereby a large profit is obtained, some of them producing 300 *per cent.* and others 100, or 150. Two thousand mules are usually employed in carrying the merchandizes

from *Panama* to *Porto Bello* : but their principal loading is gold and silver, which is set down in the midst of the fair ; where it is weighed, and marked, by the officers ; remaining there, till the departure of the fleet, with as much negligence as a parcel of small value in the corner of a warehouse : but the other *American* commodities, as well as those of *Europe*, are laid up in warehouses, which make the greater part of the buildings in the town ; for all the merchants of *Panama* have large houses here, appropriated entirely for this use ; as also several stables for the convenience of mules, and other beasts of burden. However, this commerce is carried on in the winter by the river of *Chagre*, which is navigable from *Venta de Cruz*.

BEFORE the departure of the fleet from *Porto Bello*, the ships are visited by the royal officers, who are to see that nothing goes on board, but what has paid the fifth to the king : though this is no more than a matter of form ; because there is always an understanding between them and the merchants : so that scarce more than the half of the gold, silver, and other rich merchandize, embarked for *Spain*, is declared : besides, upon the arrival of the fleet in *Spain*, the *European* officers are as unfaithful as those in *America*, and shut their eyes against the unloading of the ships.

WHEN the cargo of the galleons is adjusted, the fleet sails for *Carthagena* : but this passage, though inconsiderable for its distance, was very dangerous when the *English* were in possession of the island of *Providence*, which they called *Saint Catherine's*.

THE city of *NOMBRE de DIOS*, which is now entirely abandoned, was situated about 20 miles

miles east of *Porto Bello*, on the sea-shore, in the midst of a great wood ; which rendered it extremely inconvenient, and excessive unwholsome : neither was the road, or harbour, safe or commodious : besides, it was frequently plundered by the buccannereers ; which compelled its inhabitants to look out for some place with a better port, and more capable of being fortified than their ancient town ; when they fixed upon the spot where *Porto Bello* now stands, and erected that town in its stead.

BUT, notwithstanding all the pains which have been taken to fortify *Porto Bello*, there are few places that have more frequently fallen into the hands of an enemy. In 1595, before the town was half built, it was taken and ransomed by the famous Sir *Francis Drake*, who died, and was thrown over-board, in the harbour. It was also taken, in 1601, by captain *Parker* : in 1669, by captain *Morgan* : in 1678, by captain *Croxon* : and, in 1739, when it was strongly fortified, and well garrisoned, it fell an easy prey to the brave admiral *Vernon*.

THE country, westward of *Porto Bello*, as far as the mouth of the river *Chagre*, is partly hilly ; and near the sea very much swampy. The river makes at its mouth a small bay ; at the bottom of which, on the eastern bank, stood *Fort Chagre*, or *San Lorenzo*. It was situated on the top of a high rock, and was strongly fortified : but it was taken by Sir *Henry Morgan* ; and also by admiral *Vernon*, soon after he had reduced *Porto Bello*, who took in the custom-house 4300 serons and bags of goods for the lading of the galleons ; such as *Guiaquil* cocoa, jesuit's bark, and *Spanish* wool ; he also

brought off eleven brass cannon, and eleven patereroes ; after which, he demolished all the fortifications ; but permitted the garrison to retire into the village of *Chagre*, whose inhabitants were protected and preserved in all their immunities.

8. *VENTA de CRUZ*, is situated on the banks of the river *Chagre*, where it begins to be navigable, about 30 miles north of *Panama* : but it is considerable only for being the place where the merchandize is embarked for *Porto Bello*, to be sent to *Europe*.

9. *CONCEPTION*, is a town near the mouth of the river of the same name, which falls into the *North Sea*, opposite to *La Sounds Key*, one of the *Samballo* islands : but it is no ways remarkable.

NEAR the north-west point of the gulph of *Darien*, in $8^{\circ} 32'$ of north latitude, stood the fortrefs of *New Edinburgh*, built by a *Scotch* colony, in *November* 1699, when they attempted to make a settlement on the coast of *Darien*, and denominated the country about it *New Caledonia*. The occasion of this settlement was as follows. The parliament of *Scotland*, in 1695, passed an act for erecting a company to trade to *Africa* and the *Indies* ; whereby the company were authorized to plant colonies and settlements in the *East* and *West Indies*, under his majesty's letters patent, which they also obtained : in consequence whereof, both the *English* and *Hamburg* merchants contributed very largely to this enterprize, and equipped several ships, which sailed with forces, and every thing requisite to plant a colony, on or near the isthmus of *Darien*, in the year 1698. They first landed

on

On *Golden Island*, at the mouth of the river *Darien*: but they disliked that situation, and went over to the continent, where they built the fort of *Edinburgh*, with the permission of the native *Indians*, who were free people, and in possession of that part of the isthmus which extends along the *North Sea* from the gulph of *Darien* to *Port Scrivan*, being about 140 miles; and from *Caret Bay*, in the south-west part of the gulph of *Darien*, to the head of the river *Cheapo* on the *South Sea*, about 150 miles; the breadth in some places 60, and in others 100 miles, or upwards. This territory was governed by eight *Indian* princes, who were all at war with the *Spaniards*, and received the *Scotch* into their country with infinite satisfaction; in hopes of their assistance against their ancient enemies: so that the *Scotch* erected their fortrefs on a most excellent harbour, about a league in length from the north-west to the south-east, half a mile broad at the entrance, and upwards of a mile broad within; being large enough to contain 500 sail of ships, untouched from any wind that can blow; and the access to the fort was so well defended by rocks and precipices, that a very little art would have rendered it impregnable. The adjacent land abounded in venison and poultry: besides, the fort stood in the neighbourhood of the richest gold mines in *America*; and a communication with the *South Sea* might easily have been opened from thence, by the way of the river *Darien* and the gulph of *St. Michael's*. The *Scotch* thought themselves extremely fortunate in the discovery of this important situation, which, they say, was unknown to the *Spaniards*; and their settlement, at first, went

on in a very prosperous manner : but this was soon impeded, by complaints from the court of *Madrid* to the court of *London* ; declaring, that *Darien* had long been subject to the crown of *Spain*, and that his Catholic majesty should look upon this as an act of hostility : the *English East-India* company, at the same time, also complained against this settlement, as an infringement of their charter : upon which, the parliament of *England* thought fit to interpose, and addressed king *William* to vacate the patent granted to the *Scotch* company. Agents were also sent by the company to the king, to represent that this was no invasion of the *Spanish* dominions ; because they were either never possessed of that part of the isthmus ; or, if they were, they had been expelled from it by the natives, who were then actually in possession of the country, and at war with the *Spaniards* : but the influence of the court of *Spain*, and the *English East-India* company, was too powerful for the solicitations of the *Scotch* company, and all measures were taken to ruin their settlement : the *Hamburgers* were prevailed on to withdraw their subscriptions ; the merchants of *London* were threatened with ministerial displeasure ; and orders were sent to the *English* plantations to furnish the *Scotch* with no provisions, and to give them no assistance : upon which, the company were unfortunately compelled to abandon the enterprize ; though it is universally agreed, there is not a spot of ground, on the continent of *Spanish America*, that could be of equal service to *Great-Britain*, with the situation of *New Edinburgh*, whenever a rupture happens with *Spain* : for the *Spanish* treasures must be de-
tained

tained in *America*, if the isthmus of *Darien* should be in the possession of the *British* crown.

III. THE province of *CARTHAGENA*, which received its name from the capital city, is bounded by the *North Sea*, on the north and north-west ; by *Popayan*, and *New Granada*, on the south ; by the province of *Santa Martha* on the east ; and by the river and gulph of *Darien*, which separate it from *Terra Firma Proper*, on the west : being about 300 miles long, from north to south ; and about 200 broad, from east to west.

THE country is diversified with hills and vallies ; covered with thick forests and groves ; among which are many tygers, snakes, and other noxious animals : but the soil is generally wet and marshy, which is occasioned by the great rains ; so that it is not proper for *European* seeds ; nor will wheat ripen there : however, some of the vallies are tolerably fruitful. The balm, gums, and drugs, which this province produce, are in great estimation : some emeralds are also found here : but there are no mines of gold or silver.

THE principal river of this province is that of *Rio Grande de Magdalena* ; which divides it from the province of *Santa Martha*, and falls into the *North Sea*, in 11 degrees of north latitude, about 72 miles north-east of the city of *Carthagena*. It is 2 leagues broad at the mouth : but the rocks and sands, that lie before it, prevent the entrance of large ships : likewise the stream is so rapid, that boats are obliged to be dragged up by men or horses ; and there is an island at the entrance of the river, which divides it into two channels.

THE

THE *Indians*, who inhabit the interior part of the country, are not very well converted to the christian religion; for most of them still worship the sun as their principal deity: but there remain only a few of the ancient inhabitants; because their courage has engaged them in several wars against the *Spaniards*, whereby the greatest part of them have been cut off. Their chiefs have several wives: but the first is distinguished above the rest, and her children alone inherit the patrimonial estate. They tie the bones of their military men to reeds, and carry them before them in war, instead of banners or standards, to animate their revenge, and to imitate the courage of those bravoes: but their chiefs are buried in rich sepulchres, with golden collars adorned with emeralds. That part of the country which is in the possession of the *Spaniards*, was conquered by Don *Pedro de Heredia*; whose successors made it their business to extirpate the inhabitants.

THE principal cities and towns, in this province, are 1. *Carthagena*; 2. *Madra de Popa*; 3. *Zenu*; and 4. *Tolu*.

1. THE city of *CARTHAGENA*, the capital of this province, is situated upon the sea-coast, on a peninsula near a bay of the *North-Sea*, in $75^{\circ} 25'$ of west longitude, and $10^{\circ} 30'$ of north latitude; about 95 miles south-west of *Santa Martha*, 300 east of *Porto Bello*, and 400 south of *Port Royal* in *Jamaica*; being one of the largest and best fortified towns of *South America*; with a very secure and capacious harbour, well defended by strong fortifications. It was founded in the year 1532; and was so named by the *Spaniards*, either because they

they were natives of *Carthagera* in *Old Spain*, or because it resembled that harbour in the *Mediterranean*. The city is well built with free stone, and very populous; consisting of five large streets, each near half a mile in length: but one of them is larger and longer than the others, in the center of which there is a magnificent square. There are five churches, besides the cathedral, which is a noble structure: there are also eleven convents, a fine palace for the governor, a sumptuous town-house, and a grand custom-house; the whole being walled round, and defended by forts. The inhabitants are about 20,000; of whom only about 4000 are *Spaniards*, the rest being creoles, *meztizoes*, and negroes.

It is divided into the upper and lower town: but the upper is called *Carthagera*; for the lower is called *Hemenie*, or *Gafimana*; which is a suburb situated to the south-east of the upper town, and separated from it by a canal. The whole lies in a sandy plain; that on the north-side reaches to the sea, which is very shallow there, and the coast has an easy descent to the southward: so that, though the town lies open to the sea, it cannot be taken this way; because large ships cannot approach near enough to batter it in breach. It is surrounded with a muddy ditch, or pond; which is the north-end of the lake of *Carthagera*, and where the tide comes up: but there is a causeway which leads from the town to the main land, 300 paces long, and 12 broad; with two arches under it, to let the tide in and out.

THE harbour may justly claim the first rank among the best in *America*. It is formed by an island,

island, called *Terra Bomba* ; and a peninsula called *Nave*, about four miles in length. The coast of both runs south by west, and north by east : but to the south of the peninsula lies the island, which, on the north-east, is separated from the land by a very narrow passage. The entrance of the harbour is called *Bocha Chica*, or *Little Mouth* ; and the harbour lies behind the isthmus, between it and the continent ; being one of the finest and most commodious ports in the universe, capable of containing several large fleets, which might ride safely in many parts of it ; and, therefore, the galleons winter here, whenever they are obliged to stay in *America*. This harbour is naturally strong, and better fortified than any place in *America*, except the *Havannah*. The mouth of it was commanded by the castle of *Bocha Chica*, or fort *St. Louis*, mounted with 94 guns ; as also by the forts of *St. Philip* and *James*, which stood on the shore three quarters of a mile from *Bocha Chica*, the one planted with 8, and the other with 12 guns. Within, on a small island, stood the fort of *St. Joseph*, mounted with 16 guns : and, at some distance, to the north-west of fort *St. James*, stood fort *Cambia*, mounted with seven guns. Towards the head of the harbour stood *Castle Grande*, mounted with 64 guns, on the east part of the peninsula : and, directly opposite to it, on the other side of the harbour, stood fort *Mansenilla*, mounted with 7 guns. Farther up, nearer the town, stood fort *Pasarilla*, mounted with 7 guns : and, somewhat to the north of that, fort *St. Lazar*, mounted with 25 guns. Besides, the town was defended by 160 guns ; and the suburbs by 140 ; when the city was besieged by

by admiral *Vernon*; who gloriously performed the part of a naval commander; and, in all probability, would have taken the place, if the commander of the land forces had acted with equal prudence.

THIS is one of the richest and most important towns of all *America* for trade: besides, all the revenue is brought here from the other provinces of *Terra Firma*: but the most profitable trade consists in pearls, brought from the island of *Margaretta*, on the coast of *New Andalusia*, in such quantities, that there is a whole quarter of the town where the inhabitants have no other employment than to choose the pearls, and bore them for making bracelets, or necklaces. *Carthagena* is not only enriched by being the retreat of the galleons, whereby a considerable commerce is promoted in the city; but it has also a fund of riches in itself: for there is scarce any of the provinces of *Mexico* and *Peru*, wherewith it does not drive on a trade, either by sea or land; without mentioning what is carried on by the *English* of *Jamaica*, and the *Dutch* of *Curacao*, notwithstanding all the vigilance of the *Spanish* guarda costas. Great quantities of gold and silver are sent from *Lima*, and other parts of *Peru*, to *Carthagena*, in exchange for *European* commodities. The greater part of the indico, cochineal, sugar, and cocoa, gathered in the province of *Guatemala* in *Mexico*, is also sent to *Carthagena*, by the lake of *Nicaragua*. It is furnished with sugar, tobacco, confects, and especially marmalades, from *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*; as also with hogs, poultry, and other refreshments. It has also, from the interior part of
the

the country, gold gathered in the rivers and torrents, aromatic gums, excellent balsams, long pepper, and fruits.

NOTWITHSTANDING *Cartbagena* is well fortified by land, and secure by sea, it was taken by Sir *Francis Drake*, in 1585, with a body of 2300 land forces; who kept possession of it six weeks, burnt part of the city, and received to the value of 30,000 *l.* sterling, for the ransom of the remainder. In 1697, it was taken and plundered by Monsieur *De Pointis*, who commanded a squadron of *French* men of war, on board of which there were upwards of 4000 men; and it is computed that the plunder amounted to about two millions sterling. But, on the 9th of *April* 1741, the *British* forces were defeated in an attack upon fort *St. Lazar*, and abandoned the siege; though the army then consisted of more than 5000 men: however, admiral *Vernon* bravely discharged his duty, by safely landing and reimbarking the forces; besides, he burnt or destroyed six *Spanish* men of war, with six galleons, and all the shipping that were in the harbour of *Cartbagena*; after which, he entirely demolished all the forts and strong castles, that had been erected for the security of the harbour. Sir *Charles Wager*, with four men of war, attacked and defeated the *Spanish* fleet off *Cartbagena*, on the 28th of *May*, 1709; though the *Spaniards* had 17 sail of men of war and galleons: the *Spanish* admiral blew up, and the rear admiral was taken: but, through the cowardice of two of the *British* captains, the vice admiral and the rest of the *Spanish* ships made their escape. However, this was a fatal blow to the *Spaniards*: for the
ship

ship that blew up was worth 30 millions of pieces of eight, or 5,374,995 *l.* sterling: and the share of the *British* commodore, in the prize that was taken, was computed to amount to about 100,000 *l.*

2. *MADRA de POPA*, or *Madra de Dios de Popa*, is a town situated on a high mountain, on the western bank of the river *Santa Martha*, about sixty miles south-east of the city of *Carthagena*; being chiefly remarkable for a convent and chapel dedicated to the *Virgin Mary*; which is only exceeded in riches, by the chapel of *Loretto* in *Italy*; and is greatly frequented by pious pilgrims from all parts of *Spanish America*.

3. *ZENU*, or *Cenu*, is situated upon a river of the same name, about 20 miles from the *North-Sea*, and 75 south of *Carthagena*: but it is only remarkable for its salt, and its fisheries:

4. *TOLU* is situated upon the *North-Sea*, about 76 miles south-west of *Carthagena*; being celebrated for the excellent balsam found in its neighbourhood.

SAINTE SEBASTIAN is also a town on the sea-coast: *St. Mary* is another, at the head of a brook that runs into the river near *Madra de Popa*: and *Mopox*, or *Santa Cruz de Mopox*, lies on the western bank of the same river: but none of these places are considerable enough to deserve a particular description.

IV. THE province of *SANTA MARTHA*, or *Saint Martha*, is about 140 miles in length, from east to west; and above 200 in breadth, from north to south: being bounded by *Rio de la Hacha*, on the east; by *New Granada*, on the south; by the province of *Carthagena*, on the west; and by the

the *North-Sea* on the north. This is a very mountainous country; and, according to *Dampier*, higher land than the peak of *Teneriff*, or any other land in the known world; being seen near 200 miles at sea: besides, a chain of hills runs almost directly south, quite through *South America* to the straits of *Magellan*; those, which bound *Peru* on the east, and are usually called the *Andes*, being a part of them. The climate is sultry hot towards the sea-coast: but the high mountains are covered with snow, extending 60 miles round the capital city, which render the inland country much colder. It rains greatly in the months of *September* and *October*, in that part of the country which lies towards the sea-coast: but there is little rains in the other months; because the east and north-east winds blow there, which drive away the clouds, and are reckoned both dry and unhealthy. The soil not only produces *Indian* corn, and fruits; but almost all manner of *European* fruits and plants come to great perfection. The country also affords indico, cochineal, brazil, and logwood. There are likewise several mines of gold and copper in the mountains: with various kinds of precious stones, such as emeralds, sapphires, and jaspers; besides marble finely veined: and, on the sea-coast, there is a very rich pearl fishery.

THE most considerable places, are 1. *Santa Martha*; 2. *Teneriffe*; 3. *Tamalameque*; 4. *Ciudad de los Reyes*; 5. *Ramada*; and, 6. *Baranca*.

1. THE city of *SANTA MARTHA*, which gives name to the province, is situated on a branch of the *Rio Grande*, close to the *North-Sea*, in 74^o

12' of west longitude, and 11° 35' of north latitude. *La Martiniere* says, it was formerly very populous; but that it is much decayed since the *Spanish* fleets have neglected touching here; though, at present, it is supposed to contain about 3000 inhabitants, including *Indians*, mulattoes, and negroes. The governor of the province resides here, with the royal officers; and it is the see of a bishop, suffragan to the metropolitan of *New Granada*. It lies near the great mountain of *St. Martha*, in the neighbourhood of a fine fruitful plain, and in a healthy pleasant country; having a large, safe, and commodious port, where there is a considerable trade carried on in the richest commodities; and there is also a great manufacture of cotton cloth, which the *Spaniards* dispose of to the *Indians*. There are good salt-ponds, about 5 miles from the town; and the salt is transported into the bordering provinces. Between the city and the mountains, which are rocky, and barren, the land is even, producing some grapes; with abundance of oranges, lemons, and pine-apples.

THIS place is well situated for trade; but it has been so frequently plundered, that people have been afraid to settle there: for, in 1525, it was entirely ruined by Sir *Francis Drake*; and the next year it was plundered by Sir *Anthony Shirley*. It fell into the hands of the *Dutch*, in 1630: and was several times afterwards taken by the buccaneers; who, in 1681, scarcely thought it worth the pillaging.

2. *TENERIFFE* is seated on the eastern bank of the great river *Santa Martha*, below its confluence with the river *Magdalena*; about 135 miles south of the city of *Santa Martha*: but the

road from that city is very difficult ; so that *Teneriffe* is of little consequence with regard to trade.

3. *TAMALAMEQUE*, or *Villa de la Palmas*, is about 28 miles above *Teneriffe*, on the same side of the river ; a little below which the two great rivers of *Santa Martha* and *Magdalena* form their junction : but it is only considerable for the great number of palm-trees in its neighbourhood ; and its fine pastures, where there are plenty of cattle.

4. *CIVIDAD de los REYES*, or the *City of the Kings*, is seated at the east-end of a valley, called *Upari*, 110 miles south-east of *Santa Martha*, near the head of the river *De Cesar Pompateo* ; or rather the junction of two small rivers, which, when joined, run south-west, and fall into the river *Magdalena*, about 30 miles above *Tamalamque*. The climate here is not too hot in summer, which begins in *December* ; because the easterly winds temper the heat of the sun : though it rains very much in winter. The soil abounds with good pasturage, and is fertile in fruit : but the *Spaniards*, who are not numerous in the town, cannot bring the neighbouring *Indians* to bear the yoke patiently ; as they are a warlike, revengeful, and enterprising people.

5. *RAMADA* lies at the foot of a mountain, on the *North-Sea*, upon the mouth of the river *Piro* ; in $72^{\circ} 35'$ of west longitude, and 11° of north latitude, about 100 miles east of the city of *Martha* ; and is remarkable for its copper mines.

6. *BARANCA del MALAMBO*, is situated on the east-side of the river *Grande*, in $74^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude, and $10^{\circ} 15'$ of north latitude ;
about

about 70 miles south of *Santa Martha* ; being a place of great trade ; because the merchandize of *New Granada* is brought down there by the river, from whence it is conveyed to the bay of *Samba*, about 45 miles below ; or else directly to *Santa Martha*, by means of a branch of the great river, which issues about 10 miles above *Baranca*, and falls into the *North Sea* at *Santa Martha*.

V. THE province of *RIO de la HACHA*, is bounded by the *North Sea* on the north ; by the province and gulph of *Venezuela* on the south and east ; and by the province of *Santa Martha* on the west. It is a small territory, in the form of a peninsula, between the gulph of *Venezuela* on the east, and a bay of the *North Sea* on the west : the middle of the peninsula being about 50 miles broad ; but increasing to double that breadth within land : and it is about 120 miles in length.

THE country is both pleasant and fruitful ; abounding with *Indian* corn, herbs, and fruits : nor is it so subject to rain as towards the west of *Santa Martha* ; though there are tornadoes, or thunder-showers, which are not so violent, or so frequent, as on the coast of *Porto Bello*. There are some mines of jasper, and chalcedonies ; as also salt-pits ; and a pearl fishery on the coast, wherein the *Indians* are chiefly employed : but they retain their freedom up in the open country, where they form a numerous nation. They are a stubborn sort of people ; with long visages, and black hair ; their noses somewhat rising in the middle, and their looks very stern : however, they have some *Spanish* missionaries among them, who have opened a trade, and rendered them more sociable than

formerly. The land is in common among these *Indians*; except their houses, and small plantations, which every man maintains with some kind of fence about his habitation: but they may remove from one place to another as they please; and no man has a right to any land but what he possesses.

THE principal towns, are, 1. *Rio de la Hacha*; and, 2. *Rancheria*.

1. *RIO de la HACHA*, which gives name to the province, and receives its own from the river at the mouth of which it stands, was formerly called, by the *Spaniards*, *Neustra Senora de los Neuves*, and afterwards *Neustra Senora de los Remedios*. It is situated on the west side of the peninsula, upon a little hill, near the banks of the river, in $72^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude, and $11^{\circ} 6'$ of north latitude, about 120 miles east of the town of *Santa Martha*; and contains about 100 houses. There is a good road for ships, directly opposite to the town; with a clean and sandy bottom; where the *Jamaica* sloops frequently come over to trade. This has been a strong town; but was so often taken by the buccaneers, that the *Spaniards* abandoned it in 1682: though they soon settled it again; and have since fortified it, so as to be no longer apprehensive of such visits. It was formerly very rich, on account of the pearl fisheries in its neighbourhood; which are now very much decayed.

2. *RANCHERIA*, or *Rancho Reys*, is a town on the same coast; about 18 miles north-east of the town of *Rio de la Hacha*; being chiefly inhabited by *Indians*, who are pearl-fishermen; and the pearl-banks lie about 4 or 5 leagues off from the shore, where

where the *Spaniards* used to have two barks to fish for the oysters.

THERE are also the towns of *Portete*, near *Honda-Bay*, upon the north part of the peninsula ; and *Conquibacoa*, in the mouth of the gulph of *Venezuela*, from whence an adjacent cape is denominated : but they are places of little consequence.

VI. THE province of *VENEZUELA*, including the district of *Caracas*, is bounded by *New Andalusia* on the east ; by *New Granada* on the south ; by *Santa Martha*, and part of *Rio de la Hacha*, on the west ; as also by a part of the last mentioned province, and the *North Sea*, on the north. The *Spaniards* have not ascertained the limits of the several provinces, or districts, of *Terra Firma*, and more especially of this province ; so that its extent has not yet been set down with any accuracy : however, the best accounts say, it extends about 400 miles along the coast of the *North Sea*, and above 300 into the heart of the continent.

THE climate is moderately temperate ; and the soil is so rich that the inhabitants have two harvests annually, which produces great plenty of corn. There are very good meadows, well stocked with cows and sheep : besides, there is much game, and many kinds of wild beasts. In the heart of the country are the plains of *Corora*, where the soil is wonderfully rich, and feeds great numbers of *European* sheep. The country is also remarkable for its plantations of cocoa, sugar, and tobacco : but it labours under one great inconvenience, which is the want of fresh water ; for there are very few rivulets, though there are some considerable lakes in the province.

THE lake of *Maracabo*, which the *Spaniards* call *Lago de Nuestra Senora*, or the *Lake of our Lady*, is about 170 miles deep; and about 40 miles broad in some places, in others more, but in some less: though, where it opens into the sea, it is called the gulph of *Venezuela*. The lake abounds with several kinds of fish, and some of them very large: but, as the tide comes up, the water is brackish, notwithstanding it receives many fresh-water rivers. The *Spaniards* of this province carry on a trade with those of *New Granada*, by means of this lake; which grows narrower, about the middle of it, like the mouth of a gourd bottle, where the town of *Maracabo* is situated.

THERE is also another lake, called *Tocarigua*; but nothing like so large as that of *Maracabo*.

IT is affirmed, that the *Spaniards* behaved with great cruelty to the original inhabitants, when they invaded and conquered this country: however, the *Indians* are very numerous at present in this province; and, though they have been subjected to the *Spanish* servitude, enjoy some portion of happiness.

THE principal cities, and other places, are, 1. *Maracabo*; 2. *Truxillo*; 3. *Gibraltar*; 4. *Baracoa*; 5. *New Valencia*; 6. *Venezuela*; 7. *Paragoana*; 8. *Coro*; 9. *St. Jago de Leon*; 10. *Caraccas*; 11. *Porto Cavallo*; and 12. *La Guerre*.

1. *MARACABO*, or *Maracaibo*, is pleasantly situated, on the western banks of the lake of the same name, in 71 degrees of west longitude, and 10 degrees of north latitude; six leagues from the mouth of the gulph, and about 73 miles south-west of *Coro*. It is well built, and has a great many

many stately houses, very regular, and adorned with balconies, from whence there is a prospect of the lake, which looks like a sea, and has three small islands near the town. The inhabitants are about 4000; out of which there are 800 men capable of bearing arms. There is a large parochial church, an hospital, and four convents; besides a noble house for the deputy-governor, who is dependent upon the governor of the province, whose residence is at *Coro*. Vessels, from 25 to 30 ton, are continually coming here, with the merchandize and manufactures from the other places near the lake, particularly cocoa, indigo, sugar, tobacco, and green hides; which are afterwards put on board the *Spanish* ships that come here to purchase them: besides, this place is so convenient for ship-building, that the *Spaniards* build several vessels here, for trading all over *America*, and even into *Spain*. This place is also the staple for the commodities of *Merida*, and some other towns situated upon the frontiers of *New Granada*: but all the gold, silver, and precious stones, are brought from *Merida*.

THE commodities proper for the gulph of *Venezuela*, and the lake of *Maracabo*, are silks, linnens, wire, husbandmens implements, with hard and haberdashery wares.

THE town of *Maracabo* was taken and plundered by the *French* buccaneers: as also by captain *Morgan*, in 1669, who demolished the forts at the mouth of the gulph, and got possession of the town without any opposition; though his force consisted only of 500 men.

2. *TRUXILLO*, is situated at the top of the

lake of *Maracabo*, in 8 degrees of north latitude : but is a place of little consequence in itself.

3. *GIBRALTAR* stands in a pleasant country, on the south-east part of the same lake, in $70^{\circ} 40'$ of west longitude, and in $8^{\circ} 24'$ of north latitude. Its neighbourhood abounds with plantations of cocoa, sugar, and tobacco ; as also with cedar-trees, and other valuable timber, fit for building ships or houses : but this town was also plundered by captain *Morgan*, as well as *Maracabo*.

4. *BARACOA* lies on the same side of the lake, about 25 miles north of *Gibraltar* : but is of little note.

5. *NEW VALENCIA* is seated in the heart of the province, at the north end of the lake of *Tocarigua*.

6. *VENEZUELA* is a small town, lower down the lake, almost opposite to the town of *Maracabo*, in $70^{\circ} 15'$ of west longitude, and $10^{\circ} 16'$ of north latitude : but this is not the capital of the province ; for that lies on the sea coast, and is also called *Venezuela*, as well as *Coro*.

7. *PARAGOANA* lies on the gulph, about 50 miles west of *Coro* : but is of no consideration.

8. *CORO*, or *Venezuela*, is situated on the *North Sea*, upon the north-east part of the peninsula, in $69^{\circ} 50'$ of west longitude, and $10^{\circ} 40'$ of north latitude ; about 54 miles south-east of *Cape St. Roman*. It is the capital of the province, the residence of the governor, the seat of the courts of judicature, and the see of a bishop, who is suffragan to the archbishop of *St. Domingo* in *Hispaniola* : but it is not remarkable either for its commerce or buildings ; though it is said to derive its name of
Venezuela,

Venezuela, or *Little Venice*, from the similarity of its situation to the city of *Venice* in *Italy* : for, like that, it stands upon a peninsula, near a gulph, to which it communicates its name.

9. *St. JAGO de LEON*, is about 120 miles south-east of *Coro*, and about 18 south of the sea. It is sometimes the residence of the governor of the province : but it was taken by the *English*, in 1595, after they had made themselves masters of the town of *Caraccas*.

FROM the town of *St. Jago de Leon*, the country of the *Caraccas*, or *Curaccas*, extends as far as *Cape Blanco* ; being so called from the native *Indians*, who bore that name : but it is under the government of *Venezuela*. This coast, according to *Dampier*, is remarkable upon several accounts ; being a continued tract of high ridges of hills, and small vallies, intermixed for about 20 leagues, stretching east and west : though, in such a manner, that they alternately run pointing upon the shore from south to north. Some of the vallies are about 4 or 5 furlongs wide ; and others not above one or two : but there are few of them above 4 or 5 miles long from the sea ; because a long ridge of mountains runs at that distance from the coast, almost parallel to it, joining those shorter ridges, and closing up the south-end of the vallies, which lie open to the sea at the north ends, and make so many little sandy bays, that are the only landing places on the coast. Both the main ridge, and these shorter ribs, are such very high land, that the vallies make little appearance about 3 or 4 leagues off at sea ; where all looks like one continued mountain : which is plainly seen on shipboard at the isles of
Rocas,

Rocas, and the isles of *Aves*; the former being about 15, and the latter about 20 leagues distant: though, when ships are at anchor on the coast, those islands are not to be seen; yet, from the tops of the hills, they appear, at no great distance, like so many hillocks in a pond. These hills are all barren; except the lower sides of them, which are covered with some of the same rich black mould that fills the vallies, and is very good. There is a strong red clay in some of the vallies; which, in general, are extremely fertile, well watered, and populously inhabited by *Spaniards* and their negroes; who have maize and plantains for their support; with *Indian* fowls, and hogs: but the principal product of these vallies, and the only commodity vended in the country, is the cocoa-nut, for making chocolate.

THE cocoa, or cacao, is a kind of nut, about the size of a moderate almond; being the seed, or fruit, of a tree of the same name, much resembling the cherry-tree, and growing in several parts of *America*; particularly in the provinces of *Guatemala* and *Nicaragua*, in *Mexico*; *Maragnan*, in the north part of *Brazil*; in some of the *Caribbee* islands, and *Jamaica*; as also in the isles of *Magdalen*, in the gulph of *St. Lawrence* in *Canada*. The largest sort of the cocoa-tree, according to *Dampier*, is about a foot and a half thick; being 7 or 8 feet high to the branches, which are large, and spreading like an oak; with a pretty thick, smooth, dark-green leaf, shaped like that of a plumb-tree, and larger. The nuts are inclosed in cods, as big as both the fists of a man put together; at the broad end of which, there is a small, tough, limber

limber stalk, whereby they hang from the body of the tree, in all parts of the greater branches from top to bottom, scattered at irregular distances, especially at the joints, where they hang thickest ; though never on the smaller boughs. There are generally about 20 or 30 cods upon a well-bearing tree : of which there are two crops annually ; the one in *December*, and the best in *June* : there are sometimes 100 nuts in a cod, which is about half an inch thick ; being neither spongy, nor woody ; but of a substance between both, brittle, and harder than the rind of the lemon ; like which its surface is grained, or knobbed ; yet more close and unequal. The cods are at first of a dark green on the side next the tree ; though the side next the sun is of a muddy red : but, as they grow ripe, the green turns to a fine bright yellow, and the muddy to a more beautiful lively red, very pleasant to the eye. They neither ripen, nor are gathered at once : for, when the season happens, the overseers of the plantations, go every day about, for three weeks, or a month together, to see which are turned yellow, and seldom cut above one from a tree. As soon as the cods are gathered, they are laid in several heaps to sweat ; when the planters burst the shell with their hands, and take out the nuts, which are the only substance they contain ; having no stalk, or pith, among them ; and being very closely stowed together, more or less in number, according to the proportion of the nut, which varies in bigness : and, when the nuts are taken out, they are dried in the sun, upon mats spread on the ground : after this, they require no more care ; having a thin hard skin, and much oil, which preserves

preserves them so well, that they receive no prejudice from salt-water. The plantations are called cocoa-walks, in one of which, there are commonly from 500 to 2000 trees; the young ones being sheltered for 2 or 3 years from the weather, by setting plantains, which are destroyed when the cocoa-trees are of a good body, and able to endure the heat. Of this nut, with the addition of vanilla, and some other ingredients, the *Spaniards*, and other *Europeans* after their example, prepare a cake; which is diluted in hot water, and makes a delicious drink, called chocolate: but, in some parts of *America*, particularly in the bay of *Campachy*, the cocoa-nuts are used by the *Indians* for money; 12, or 14, being held equivalent to a *Spanish* rial, or 5d. $\frac{1}{2}$ sterling: and sweet-meats are made of cocoa in the *Carribbee* islands. The excessive duties in *Spain*, upon this commodity, made the prime cost exceed the value of the cocoa, by a third part, to the *Spanish* merchants; which obliged them to abandon this commerce, and resign it to foreigners. However, to prevent these, and other injurious consequences, his Catholic majesty, in 1720, published a decree, for the diminution of those duties, and the encouragement of this commerce by the hands of the *Spaniards*; which will be taken notice of in the first dissertation.

THE coast of the *Caraccas* is subject to dry winds, at different seasons of the year, and generally north-west: tho', in other respects, it enjoys a sweet, clear air, and is very healthy. The *Spaniards* used to have look-outs, or scouts, upon the hills, with breast-works in the vallies; and most of

of their negroes are furnished with arms for the defence of the bays: but the *Dutch* carried on so profitable a trade, that *Dampier* says, he has known three or four great ships at a time on the coast, each of them mounted with 40 or 50 guns; which carried there all sorts of *European* commodities, especially linnen; making great returns, chiefly in silver and cocoa: so that the same author observes, with regret, that none of his own countrymen found the way there directly from *England*: adding, that the *Jamaica-men* traded there, and found it very profitable; though they carried *English* commodities at second or third hand.

10. *CARACCAS*, the chief town of the district, is situated in $67^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude, and $10^{\circ} 10'$ of north latitude; about 56 miles north-west of *St. Jago de Leon*. *Dampier* says, the town lies a good way within land, and is a large wealthy place, inhabited by the proprietors of those cocoa-walks, which are in the vallies along the shore, and worked by negroes, under the management of overseers. It stands in a large savannah country, abounding with cattle; and is reported to be three times as large as *Corunna* in *Galicia*: but the way to it is very steep and craggy, over a ridge of hills, that closes up the valley and partition-walks of the cocoa coast; which is remarkable for the best nuts in *America*.

11. *PORTO CAVALLO*, or *Porto Cabelo*, is a port town on the *Caraccas* coast, situated in $67^{\circ} 50'$ of west longitude, and $10^{\circ} 12'$ of north latitude; about 25 miles north-east of *St. Jago de Leon*, and 31 south-west of the town of *Caraccas*. This port is inconsiderable for the number of its inhabitants;

bitants; yet they carry on some trade with the province of *Guatimala*, according to monsieur *Savary*, who was entirely mistaken with regard to the situation and nature of this town.

12. *LA GUERRE*, *La Guaire*, or *La Guiara*, is about 40 miles east of *Porto Cavallo*, and 15 west of *Cape Blanco*, situated close by the sea, and is one of the principal places upon the coast, though it has a bad harbour; which, however, is much frequented by *Spanish* shipping; besides, the *Dutch* and *English* anchor in the sandy bays, that lie interspersed on the coasts, in the mouths of several vallies, where there is very good riding. The town has a strong fort; but is open to the sea; and was taken by captain *Wright*, in the last century, with a few privateers: though commodore *Knowles* miscarried before it, on the 18th of *February* 1743, when he had eight men of war, and three sloops, under his command; with 2300 sailors and marines, besides 400 of *Dalzell's* regiment on board: he had 92 men killed, and 308 wounded: however, the *Spaniards* had little reason to be elated; as their town and fortifications were greatly damaged, with the loss of 700 men.

COMMODORE *Knowles* refitted his squadron at *Curacao*, and attacked *Porto Cavallo*, on the 17th of *April* following; when, after silencing some batteries near the harbour, 1200 men were landed to assault the castle; who were suddenly put into great disorder, and returned with the utmost precipitation. On the 24th, the attack was renewed from the ships: but, after the loss of 200 men, the commodore was obliged to desist from the enterprize, and return to *Jamaica*.

VII. THE province of *NEW GRANADA*, *Santa Fè*, or *Castilla del Oro*, is bounded by *Popayan*, and part of *Carthagena*, on the west; by the provinces of *Saint Martha*, and *Venezuela*, on the north; by *New Andalusia*, and *Guiana*, on the east; and by the country of the *Amazons*, on the south: being 340 miles in length, from north to south; and as many in breadth, from east to west.

THIS large inland country affords a great variety of hills and fruitful vallies; being well watered with navigable rivers, and esteemed as healthful as any part of *Terra Firma*. The mountains have mines of gold, silver, and emeralds; abounding also with cedar trees, and other good timber. The vallies are not proper for sheep: but there is no want of horses, oxen, hogs, goats, and venison: besides, there is plenty of fish and fowl; as also of corn and fruits, both *American* and *European*; with great quantities of guiacum, balm, and several other valuable gums and drugs.

THE principal rivers, are 1. the *Rio Grande*, or *Magdalena*, which runs directly across the province: and, 2. the river *Oroonoko*, which runs through all the eastern part of it.

THE province is surrounded by several *Indian* nations, who have never been subdued, and inhabit a very hot country: though, in general, *New Granada* is cold, or at least temperate; being first discovered, in 1536, by *Gonzalvo Ximenes de Quesada*; who reduced several of the *Indian* caziques, and called their country the new kingdom of *Granada*; because he was a native of *Old Granada* in *Spain*.

THE principal places are, 1. *Santa Fè de Bogota*;

gota; 2. *Trinidad*; 3. *Tunia*; 4. *Pampeluna*; 5. *Truxillo*; 6. *Tucuyo*; and, 7. *Merida*.

1. *SANTA FE de BOGOTA*, is the capital of the province, and of the whole *Terra Firma*; situated on the banks of the lake *Gutavita*, near the river *Magdalena*, in 73° of west longitude, and $3^{\circ} 35'$ of north latitude; about 180 miles east of *Bonaventura* bay in the *South Sea*. It is adorned with fine buildings, and is very populous; being the residence of the governor, the see of an archbishop, and the seat of an university.

2. *TRINIDAD*, or *Trinity*, lies about 23 miles north-east of *Santa Fè*, and about 30 miles east of the river *Magdalena*. It is remarkable for having some quarries of fine marble; as also some rocks of crystal, emeralds, and other precious stones: but the inhabitants are frequently disturbed by the bordering *Indians*, who are of very turbulent and warlike dispositions.

3. *TUNIA*, is the capital of a district of the same name, which has several mines of gold and emeralds. It stands on the top of a mountain, about 80 miles east of *Santa Fè*, and serves to keep the neighbouring *Indians* in awe. It has two convents, and is the principal place of trade in the whole country.

4. *PAMPELUNA*, is situated 140 miles north-east of *Santa Fè*; and has some gold mines in its neighbourhood; with rich pastures, that feed great flocks of sheep.

5. *TRUXILLO*, or *Nostra Senora de la Paz*, is 215 miles north-east of *Santa Fè*, and 125 south of the lake of *Maracabo*: but there is a village of the same name, on the southermost bank of that lake;

lake; where the inhabitants of *Truxillo* town carry meal, biscuit, bacon, and other provisions; which they embark on the lake twice a year, in *May* and *November*; from whence it is transported into the other provinces of *South America*.

6. *TUCUYO*, is 320 miles north-east of *Santa Fè*, and 160 south from the nearest coast of the *North-Sea*; being situated in a valley, surrounded with mountains. It is about half a league in length, and as much in breadth; but it is divided into two, by a river which runs through it, and falls into that of *St. Pedro*. The soil in its neighbourhood produces plentiful crops of sugar, wheat, and fruit: the woods abound with game, and particularly stags: but the inhabitants principally apply themselves to the feeding of cattle, as cows, sheep, and especially horses. The *Indians*, in this part of the country, are a warlike people, armed with bows and arrows, large clubs, and stones: though some of them pay a tribute of maize to the *Spaniards*, which they bring to *Tucuyo*.

7. *MERIDA*, lies almost on the limits which separate *New Granada* from *Venezuela*, about 260 miles north-east of *Santa Fè*, and 54 south of the lake of *Maracabo*. It has some gold mines in its neighbourhood; and the soil abounds with all sorts of fruit, which, as well as other merchandizes, the inhabitants carry to *Truxillo*, on the lake, once or twice a year, for sale.

THERE are also the towns of *Marguetta*, *Velez*, *Placentia*, *El Desembaradero*, *St. Christophal*, and others of inferior note: but the accounts of all these places are very imperfect; because this is an inland country, seldom visited by foreigners; and be-

cause the *Spaniards* industriously conceal the produce of it from other nations, for fear they should disturb them in the possession of these valuable acquisitions.

VIII. THE province of *NEW ANDALUSIA*, including the districts of *Cumana* and *Paria*, is bounded by the *North-Sea*, on the north; by the river *Oroonoko*, on the east; by part of *Guiana*, and of *New Granada*, on the south; and also by part of *New Granada*, and of *Venezuela*, on the west: extending about 500 miles in length, from north to south; and about 270 in breadth, from east to west.

THE inland part of this country is mountainous, and covered with woods; intermixed with vallies and meadows, that yield corn and pasturage: but this province is not so fruitful, or so full of towns and inhabitants, as that of *Venezuela*: and it is the most easterly of all the *Spanish* provinces; because the *Spaniards* have few settlements in *Guiana*, though they usually include it in their *Terra Firma*. The produce of *New Andalusia*, consists chiefly in sugar and tobacco; brazil wood, and other woods for dying; with some gums, and drugs; as also other valuable timber.

THE streight and gulph of *Paria* lie on the north-east part of *Andalusia*; and the streight is formed by the island of *Trinity*.

THE principal river which waters this province, is the *Oroonoko*, whose source is near that of *Magdalena*, in the province of *Quito* in *Peru*, almost under the equator. It first runs to the eastward, and then turns to the north; receiving several other rivers in its course, which some have

have computed to be about 3000 miles; though it is made much less by others, who also say, that it rises in *Popayan* *: but, as this is so considerable a river, it deserves a more particular description; which has been extracted, as follows, from writers of the best merit, and maps of the greatest credit.

THE *Oroonoko*, or *Aranaca*; called also by the *French* *Oronoque*, or *Orinoque*; is formed of two principal rivers; the most considerable of which is at first called *Pato*; having its source in *Popayan*, in the mountains that stand to the south of *Santa Fe de Bogota*; and, at the foot of those mountains, it waters a town called, by the *Spaniards*, *Saint Juan de los Lanos*. It runs a great way eastward, winding and turning about to the north-east; and, in five degrees of north latitude, it is joined by the river *San Pedro*, which comes from the northward, near the frontiers of *Venezuela*. The united rivers are called *Oroonoko*; and, at their junction, form a considerable island, called *Acamacori*; beyond which, to the eastward, is a large lake formed by these rivers, named *Casipi*, containing two small islands. The *Oroonoko*, lower down, receives the *Vararacayari*, *Coyrama*, *Maryowapanaba*, and some others from *Guiana*; as also three smaller rivers from *New Andalusia*; continuing its course north-east to the town of *Saint Thome*, which stands on its eastern banks; and so runs to the *North-Sea*, where it disembogues itself, in nine degrees of north latitude, near the island of *Trinity*; and forms several little islands at its mouth, where it is above 100 miles over. Mr. *Sparrey*, who was

I i 2

left

* See this Volume, p. 301.

left in the adjoining country by Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in 1595, says, this river is also called *Baraquan*, or *Paria*, and falls into the sea by sixteen mouths; though what he calls mouths are the streights between the islands, that lie near the shore, at the entrance of the river; the chief of which is the farthest south, and is called *Capuri*: but there is no good modern account of the *Oroonoko*; because it is not much frequented for trade. The river *Europa* is formed by two branches which meet in $8^{\circ} 40'$ of north latitude, and the united stream falls into the gulph of *Paria*, in $9^{\circ} 20'$ of north latitude, opposite the island of *Trinity*. There is also another river called *Ouarabache*, which rises in $9^{\circ} 25'$, and also falls into the gulph of *Paria*: but neither of these rivers are of any importance.

THE principal towns are, 1. *Cumana*; 2. *Verina*; and 3. *Saint Thome*.

1. *CUMANA*, *Comana*, or *New Corduba*, the capital of this province, which is sometimes called by the same name, is situated in $65^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude, and $9^{\circ} 55'$ of north latitude, nine miles south of the *North-Sea*, and 80 south-west of the island of *Margaretta*. It was built by the *Spaniards* in 1520, and is defended by a strong castle: being so much surrounded by hills and woods, that it cannot be discerned till a ship enters the harbour: and it is a place of such strength, that the buccaneers were repulsed, when they attacked it, in 1670.

2. *VERINA* is a small town, situated on the south-west part of the gulph of *Curiaco*, about 60 miles east of *Cumana*; and is remarkable for its plantations of excellent tobacco.

3. *SAINTE*

3. *SAIN'T THOME*, or *Saint Thomas*, is also included in the province of *New Andalusia*; though it is situated on the east side, and near the mouth, of the river *Oroonoko*, in the country of *Surinam*, at the top of a peninsula formed by that river; and another called *Coyrama*, in $62^{\circ} 10'$ of west longitude, and $8^{\circ} 26'$ of north latitude: being the only considerable settlement which the *Spaniards* have to the eastward of the *Oroonoka*. Sir *Walter Raleigh* took this town with the forces which he carried over to plant a colony in *Guiana*: though it proved fatal to that illustrious man; who lost his son in the enterprize, and was himself afterwards beheaded in *England*, on a complaint preferred against him to king *James I.* by the *Spanish* ambassador: but the death of such a subject, and on such an occasion, will always be a disgrace to the annals of that monarch, and even a reproach to *England* itself. The *Spaniards* were then very apprehensive, that the *English* would fix a settlement in this country, as it lay in the neighbourhood of some of their gold mines, which they were beginning to work: but these mines never answered their expectation; nor have any others, of any consequence, been discovered in this province.

THERE are also the towns of *St. Jago*, and *St. Josepho*; the one on the north-east part of the gulph of *Curiaco*; and the other at the mouth of the bay *del Drago*: besides which, there are the towns of *Comanagotta*, 23 miles west of *Cumana*; and *Otchierado*, about the same distance north-west of *Comanagotta*: but none of these are of any consideration.

THE Spaniards pretend to have a right to those countries stretching along this coast to the south; though they have no settlements there: which, however, should not be esteemed so great a wonder, as that other *European* nations should leave such a fine country to a nation, so incapable of converting it to the utility of mankind.

SECTION II.

A description of the several islands, on the coasts of TERRA FIRMA, both in the South and North Seas.

THE principal islands along the coast of the general province of *Terra Firma*, are, 1. *Gorgonilla*; 2. *Gallo*; 3. *Gorgona*; 4. *Palmas*; and 5. *King's Islands*, or *Pearl Keys*, in the *South-Sea*: as also, 1. *The Bastimentoes*; 2. *the Samballas*; 3. *the isle of Pines*; 4. *Golden island*; 5. *Tortuga*; 6. *Forta*; 7. *Friend's island*; 8. *Baru*; 9. *Arenas*; 10. *Monjes*; 11. *Aruba*; 12. *Curacoa*; 13. *Bonaire*; 14. *Tortuga*; 15. *Margaretta*; 16. *Trinity*; and 17. *Oroonoko islands*, in the *North Sea*.

1. THE island of *GORGONILLA* lies in $77^{\circ} 46'$ of west longitude, and $2^{\circ} 20'$ of north latitude, opposite to *Point Manglares*, on the coast of *Popayan*, and about 7 leagues south-west from the continent. It is a small island; but has a river, where ships may water, and anchor on a clean ground.

2. THE

A M E R I C A.

487

2. THE island of *GALLO* lies in a deep bay, in $77^{\circ} 38'$ of west longitude, and $2^{\circ} 40'$ of north latitude; about 7 leagues north-east of *Gorgonilla*, and as many west of *Point Manglares*. There is good riding for ships on the north-east part of this bay; and the land is pretty high, well furnished with good timber, as also with several springs of fresh-water: besides, there are some other sandy bays, where a ship may be cleaned; but the water is shallow all round the island; at the north and south points of which are several rocks; some looking like barns, and others like ships under sail.

3. THE island of *GORGONA* lies in $77^{\circ} 28'$ of west longitude, and $3^{\circ} 5'$ of north latitude, about 7 leagues north-east of *Gallo*, and about 8 north-west from the continent. It is about 6 miles long, and 3 broad; being very remarkable, on account of two saddles, or risings and fallings, on the top. It is a deep water round the island, and no anchoring but at the west end, where there is a small sandy bay, and good landing. The soil is black, and deep, in the low ground: though it is a kind of red clay on the side of the high land. The island is very well furnished with several sorts of large trees, which are green and flourishing all the year; for the rains are almost perpetual hereabouts; and many small brooks issue from the high land. There are a great many little black monkies upon the island; as also some *Indian* colonies, and a few snakes. At the east and west ends are two other small islands, which look white with the dung of wild fowls; where many periwinkles and muscles are to be had at low water; as also

great plenty of pearl-oysters, which grow to the rocks, in four, five, or six fathom water, by beards, or small roots, like a muscle.

4. THE island of *PALMAS*, lies about two leagues west from the continent, and about 19 north-east of *Gorgona*. But all these islands are uninhabited: though they have been frequently visited by the buccaneers, and other adventurers, to take in wood and water, careen their ships, and wait for *Spanish* prizes; because these islands lie directly in the road from *Peru* to *Panama*.

5. THE *KING'S ISLANDS*, or *Pearl Keys*, are a numerous cluster of low woody islands, almost in the middle of the bay of *Panama*; stretching about 14 leagues in length, from the south-east to the north-west. The northermost of them, called *Pacheque*, or *Pachea*, is about 12 leagues south-east of *Panama*: and the southermost of them, called *St. Paul*, is 12 leagues north-west of *Point Garrachina*: but the whole range of these islands are generally about 7 leagues distant from the main land of *Darien*. Between them and the main, is a channel 6 or 7 leagues wide, where there is a good depth of water, and anchoring all the way: though the islands border so thick on each other, that they make several small, deep, narrow channels, only fit for boats to pass between most of them: and, at the south-end, about a league from the island of *St. Paul*, there is a good place for ships to careen, or hale ashore.

CHEPELIO is the most pleasant island in the bay; being about a mile long, and almost as broad; lying a league from the main, and 7 leagues from *Panama*; having several forts of delicate fruits

fruits planted there; such as sappadilloes, which are much like bergamot-pears; avogato-pears, as big as a large lemon; mammees; mammee-sappotas, which is accounted the principal fruit in the *West Indies*; the star-apple, of the size of a large apple; and plantains.

THE island of *Tapago*, is about six leagues south of *Panama*; being a large mountainous place, about three miles in length, and two in breadth: but the north side of it makes so very pleasant an appearance, that it seems to be a garden of fruit-trees, inclosed with many other high trees; for there are several plantains and bananoes that thrive well from the foot to the middle of the mountain; and there are many cocoa-nut trees close to the sea, which afford a very agreeable prospect: besides, there is a fine small brook of fresh water, that springs out of the side of the mountain, and, gliding through the grove of fruit-trees, falls into the sea, on the north side.

THERE is a small pleasant island on the north-west side of *Tabago*, called *Tabogilla*; and another about a mile from it on the north-east, with a good channel between them. Those called *Perico*, are three small islands, which lie before the city of *Panama*, about three miles from it; where the great ships lie at anchor, because there is not depth of water to approach nearer the city. There are also the islands of *Otoque*, *Chuche*, *Gallera*, *Quicara*, *Sebaco*, and *Quibo*: but the last is the most remarkable, and was the place where commodore *Anson* wooded and watered, in *December*, 1741, in his way from *Paita*, to *Acapulco*.

THE

THE island of *Quibo*, the south-east point of which is in $7^{\circ} 20'$ of north latitude, is extremely convenient for wooding and watering: for the trees grow close to the high-water mark; and a large rapid stream of fresh water runs over the sandy beach into the sea. The whole island is of a moderate height, excepting one part; and consists of a continued wood spread all over the surface of the country, which preserves its verdure throughout the whole year. Among the other wood which commodore *Anson* found upon the island, there was abundance of cassia, and a few lime-trees: but there were no other birds than parrots, parroquets, and mackaws; of which last there were prodigious flights: there were many herds of deers; with plenty of guanos, and monkeys: though the *Spanish* prisoners asserted, that this island also abounded with tigers; and that a most mischievous serpent, called the flying snake, was frequently found in the woods, which they said darted itself from the boughs of trees, on either man or beast that came in its way; and whose sting they believed to be inevitable death. Besides these dangerous land animals, the sea, hereabouts, is infested with great numbers of alligators, of an extraordinary size: and the *English* sailors often observed, a large kind of flat-fish, jumping a considerable height out of the water; which they supposed to be the fish that is reported to destroy the pearl-divers, by clasping them in its fins, as they rise from the bottom; but the divers are now always armed with a sharp knife, which they stick into the belly of the fish whenever they are entangled, and thereby disengage themselves from its embraces.

COMMODORE *Anson*, and his people, saw great heaps of shells of fine mother of pearl, scattered up and down in different places ; which were the remains left by the pearl-fishers of *Panama* : for the pearl-oysters abound very much at *Quibo* ; being usually large, but extremely tough and unpalatable.

THE oysters most productive of pearls, are those found in considerable depths ; and the pearl partakes of the quality of the bottom on which the oyster is lodged : so that, if the bottom is muddy, the pearl is dark and ill coloured. The taking up oysters in great depths, for the sake of the pearls, is a work performed by negro slaves, of which the inhabitants of *Panama*, and of the neighbouring coast, formerly kept great numbers, who were carefully trained to the business : but these are said not to be complete divers, till they have, by degrees, been able to protract their stay under water so long, that the blood gushes out from their nose, mouth, and ears. For it is the tradition of the country, that, when this accident has once befallen them, they dive for the future with much greater facility than before : and, as the bleeding generally stops of itself, they have no apprehension, either that any inconvenience can attend it ; or that there is any probability of their ever being subjected to it again.

THESE islands are of great use to mariners who frequent the *South-Seas* ; though they are uninhabited : for they belong to the citizens of *Panama* ; who keep negroes here to plant and cultivate them, at proper seasons ; as also to sow rice in some of the small islands : but the large ones are wholly uncultivated,

uncultivated, and overrun with weeds; notwithstanding their soil seems to be productive of any tropical vegetables.

THE islands of *Terra Firma*, along the coast of the *North-Sea*, are as follow.

1. THE *BASTIMENTOES* are a few small uninhabited islands, at the mouth of the bay of *Nombre de Dios*, about half a mile from the coast of *Terra Firma proper*, and about five leagues east of *Porto Bello*. They are all of them pretty high, and cloathed with woods: there is also a spring of good water upon one of them; and they all together make a very good harbour, between them and the isthmus: but they are chiefly remarkable for being the station of the *British* Squadron, commanded by admiral *Hofier*, in 1727, when his orders restricted him from taking and destroying the *Spanish* fleet and galleons.

2. THE *SAMBALLAS*, or *Sambaloes*, are a great multitude of little uninhabited islands, scattered in a row, at very unequal distances, along the east part of the isthmus, from *Nombre de Dios* to the isle of *Pines*; some being three or four miles from the shore, others less, and the same distance from one another; which, with the hills and woods of the adjacent shore, make a delightful landscape off at sea. There are several navigable channels between the islands; and the sea is also navigable from end to end, between the whole range and the isthmus; with good anchorage every where, in hard sandy ground; as also good landing on the islands, and on the main. Let the winds be how they will, there is always a good place for any number of ships to ride at, on the inside of some
of

of these little keys, or islands: on which account, the *Samballas*, and particularly *La Sound's Key*, or *Springer's Key*, were the greatest rendezvous of the buccaneers on this coast: for they not only afford shell-fish, and other refreshments; but are covered with variety of trees, yield some wells of fresh water, and have good shelter for careening.

3. THE island of *PINES* is a small uninhabited place, about three leagues east of the *Samballas*, and is very remarkable off at sea; being covered with tall trees, and having a fine rivulet of fresh water.

4. *GOLDEN ISLAND* lies at the mouth of the gulph of *Darien*, about four leagues east of the isle of *Pines*. It is small, steep, rocky, covered with trees or shrubs, and uninhabited; having a fine deep channel between it and the continent. This island was recommended to the *Scotch East India* company, as a proper place for establishing their first colony in *America*: but the adventurers found it too barren a spot, and were obliged to remove to the opposite shore; which they were soon afterwards compelled to abandon, and to relinquish their enterprize, as has been above related*. There is another low, swampy island, between this and the isle of *Pines*; which is so much beset with mangroves, that it is difficult to go ashore; and ships can hardly pass between this island and the isthmus, even at high water.

5. 6. 7. 8. *TORTUGA*, *Forta*, *Friend's Island*, and *Baru*, are four little islands, lying scattered among some others, at a small distance from each other; between 9° and $9^{\circ} 48'$ of north latitude:
the

* See this Volume, p. 454.

the island of *Tortuga* being about 18 leagues east of *Golden* island. 9. *Arenas* is a small island opposite to the mouth of the river *Magdalena*; about 10 leagues north of the continent, and about 23 north-east of *Cartbagen*. 10. *Monjes* are small islands at the mouth of the gulph of *Venezuela*. But none of all these islands are inhabited, or of any consequence.

11. 12. 13. 14. *ARUBA*, *Curacoa*, *Bonaire*, and *Tortuga*, with *Margaretta*, *Trinity*, and some other inferior places, such as *Orchilla*, *Roca*, and *Aves*; are what properly form the *Little Antilles* islands; being situated between $51^{\circ} 28'$, and $69^{\circ} 40'$ of west longitude; and between $9^{\circ} 37'$, and $12^{\circ} 38'$ of north latitude; extending from the gulph of *Venezuela* to the gulph of *Paria*: some of them being about 40 leagues north of the coast of *Venezuela*, and others very near it: but none of them are possessed by the *Spaniards*, except *Margaretta* and *Trinity*, for the others are subject to the *Dutch*, and should be treated of under the grand division of the *American* islands.

15. THE island of *MARGARETTA*, or *Santa Margareta de las Caraccas*, is situated between 64° and $64^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude, and between $10^{\circ} 54'$ and $11^{\circ} 15'$ of north latitude; opposite to the gulph of *Caracca*, or *Curiaco*, on the coast of the *Caraccas*, from which it is separated by a streight, about seven or eight leagues over. It is about 48 miles in length from east to west, and about 24 in breadth from north to south; being about 108 miles in circumference; and was discovered by *Christopher Columbus*, in 1498, when he made his third voyage to *America*. The island is very fertile

fertile in maize, fruit, and many *European* vegetables: but the inhabitants are obliged to import all the water they drink from the continent; and there is little wood, or pasture, on the island; though what there is, has a perpetual verdure, and affords an agreeable prospect. This island is under the command of a particular governor, who has his residence at the town of *Montepadre*, which is on the east cape, and is defended by a good fort: but there is no other place of consequence in the country. The island was formerly remarkable for its fine pearl-fishery; which seems to be exhausted at present. The *Dutch* took *Margaretta*, in 1620, when they demolished the castle, and plundered the town: upon which, the *Spaniards* retired to the continent; leaving the island to be inhabited only by the native *Indians*, and a few mulattoes, who were frequently plundered and carried off by the buccaneers.

16. THE island of *TRINITY*, or *Trinidad*, is situated near the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, opposite to the east end of the province of *New Andalusia*; from which it is distant about three leagues, and 38 leagues south-west of the island of *Margaretta*. It is about 90 miles long, and 60 broad: lying between $60^{\circ} 26'$, and $62^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude; and between $9^{\circ} 37'$, and $10^{\circ} 27'$ of north latitude; the north end of it being about 12 leagues south east of the island of *Tabago*, which is one of the neutral islands in dispute between the crowns of *Great Britain* and *France*.

THIS island was also discovered by *Christopher Columbus*, in 1498: but the air is esteemed unhealthful; though the soil is tolerably fertile, producing

ducing sugar, cotton, *Indian* corn, and fruits; with the best tobacco that is cultivated by the *Spaniards*: besides, it abounds with wild hogs and fowl. The principal town is called *St. Joseph*; which stands on a bay, at the north-west part of the island, and was taken by Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in 1595; as also by the *French*, in 1676, who plundered the place, and extorted 80,000 pieces of eight, or 14,333 *l. 6s.* sterling, to ransom it from flames.

17. THE islands of *OROONOKO* are several little islands, lying in the mouth of that river: but none of them are inhabited.

IT should be observed, that there are several pearl fisheries all along the coast from *Carthagena* to *Venezuela*; particularly those of *Santa Martha*, *Rancheria* on the coast of *Ria de la Hacha*, *Comanagotta* in the gulph of *Curiaco*, and at the island of *Margaretta*; where the time of the fishery is from *October* to *March*; when 10 or 12 barks sail from *Carthagena*, escorted by some men of war, called the *Armadilla*; and these ships, having made their tour, return again to *Carthagena*, which is the centre of the pearl trade: but the pearls are of different values, according to their fineness and magnitude.

SECTION III.

A description of the country of GUIANA: Its three divisions, of Dutch GUIANA, or Surinam; French GUIANA, or Cayenne; and Indian GUIANA, or Caribana: with an account of the commerce carried on by the Dutch and French colonists.

THE province of *GUIANA* is bounded by the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, and the *Northern, or Atlantic Ocean*, on the north and east; by the country of the *Amazons*, on the south; and by the provinces of *New Andalusia*, and *Granada*, on the west. It extends from $49^{\circ} 20'$ to 64° of west longitude; and from the equator to 9° of north latitude: being about 1200 miles in extent, along the *Atlantic Ocean*, from the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, to the mouth of the river of *Amazons*; and about 540 miles from north to south.

THE best geographers divide this territory into two parts; *Guiana-Propria*, called also *El Dorada*, or the *Gold Country*, by the *Spaniards*, on account of the immense riches it was once supposed to contain; and *Caribana*, or *Caribiàna*: the former of which is properly the inland country, and the latter lies along the coast. All that part of the coast, which lies to the south of the north cape, has been yielded to the crown of *Portugal*, and is included as a part of *Brazil*. The *French* have some settlements in the isle of *Cayenne*, as also upon the adjacent coast. And the *Dutch* have *Surinam*. But all the interior part of the country is inhabited by

several numerous nations of *Indians* ; who are reported to have some flourishing cities, a regular polity, with the same manners, customs, and religion, as were established among the *Peruvians*.

THE sea coast of this country is generally low, and subject to inundations, from a multitude of rivers, that run precipitately from the mountains, in the inland country, during the rainy season. The air is excessive hot, and very unhealthful ; especially in such parts of the country as are not cleared of woods : but there are some situations tolerably cool and healthful, where the air has a free passage, and is uninfected by the ooze and salt-marshes.

THERE are several considerable rivers, besides those of *Oroonoko*, and the river of *Amazons* ; the principal of which are, the *Esequibe*, *Berbie*, *Corretine*, *Surinam*, and *Maroni* : the *Mawwarpari*, *Moraga*, *Uraque*, *Maiacaret*, *Cayenne*, and *Oyapoc* : as also the *Arcoa*, *Casipura*, *Corassune*, *Aricary*, and *Machacari* ; with some others that empty themselves into the *Oroonoko*, and the *Atlantic*.

I. *Dutch GUIANA* extends along the coast, from the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, in 9° of north latitude, to the river *Maroni*, where the *English* formerly built a little fort, in $6^{\circ} 20'$ of north latitude. The chief settlement is that of *Surinam*, which is situated 5 leagues within the river of the same name, in $6^{\circ} 16'$ of north latitude : but they have given the name of *Surinam* to all the country, for several hundred miles about this town ; and look upon themselves as sovereigns of it : for, indeed, this is the only part of the continent of *America* left in the possession of the *Dutch*,
since

since the *Portuguese* drove them from *Brazil*, and the *English* expelled them from *New-York*.

THE river of *Surinam* has sand-banks at its mouth, over which there is three fathom water at high tide; it being about a league broad, and continuing the same breadth to the place where the river *Commewine* falls into it: but the united rivers are only about a league over above their conflux; though so deep, that they are navigable for large vessels 30 leagues up into the country.

THE *Dutch* have a fort called *Zelandia*, two leagues above the mouth of the river *Surinam*, built with bricks: and also a small town, called *Paramaraibo*, containing about 400 houses. The *French* seized upon this fort, in the year 1640: but soon abandoned it, as they found the country very unwholesome: whereupon the *English* took possession of it; though they made no difficulty of surrendering it to the *Dutch*, in the reign of king *Charles II.* in consideration of the states relinquishing their pretensions to *New York*, and other places, in the northern colonies, which had been taken from them by the *English*. However, the *Dutch* afterwards cut down so many trees, that they gave the sun and wind an opportunity of drying the soil; which rendered the climate much more healthy and pleasant.

THIS colony is called *The Society of Surinam*; because it is the joint property of the *Dutch West-India* company, the city of *Amsterdam*, and the lord of *Somelsdyk*: but the sovereignty of it belongs to the states-general; who, in 1683, granted a patent, containing 32 articles, in favour of the

West-India company, as also for the security and advantage of the colonists.

THE great number of *Dutch* people, who have made plantations here, have raised this colony to such a very flourishing condition, that it has extended itself about 100 miles above the mouth of the river *Surinam*, where the mountains serve them as a barrier against the incursions of the *Indians*, who cannot be civilized. Besides, there are some other towns in this province: as *Machariby*, on the eastern banks of the river *Corretins*, about 60 miles south-west of the town of *Surinam*; *Mapueta*, seven miles north-west of *Machariby*; *Kyckoveral*, 40 miles north-west of *Mapueta*; *Warawalli*, 44 miles west of the town of *Surinam*; the *Dutch Colony*, 18 miles north of *Warawalli*: *New Zeland*, 122 miles north-west of *Surinam* town; *New Middleburg*, nine miles west of *New Zeland*; and some others of no consequence. There are between seven and eight hundred families in the colony, besides *Indians*, and a great number of negroes; who cultivate about 400 plantations, which are situated along the rivers, and afford immense profits to the proprietors.

THE chief trade of this colony, consists in the product of this country, which is sugar, tobacco, coffee, gums, wood for dying, cotton, flax, and skins, that are sent to *Holland*, in exchange for *European* commodities.

THIS colony is governed by a college, or council, of ten directors, at *Amsterdam*; five of whom are chosen by the magistrates of that city, four by the *West-India* company, and one by the lord of *Somelsdyk*: but, though these directors have the nomination,

nomination, the governor must be approved by the states-general, and take an oath to them as well as to the directors.

THERE are only three churches in the whole province, which is divided into eight parts, and each division has a company of militia: besides which, there are four companies of regular soldiers, for the defence of the colony; all of whom are under the command of the governor, who, upon any extraordinary matters, is obliged to consult with the political council, of which he is chairman, as well as of the court of justice.

II. *FRENCH GUIANA*, called *Old Cayenne*, or *Equinoctial France*, because it reaches so near the equator, extends from the eastern banks of the river *Maroni*, in 55 degrees of west longitude, and $6^{\circ} 24'$ of north latitude; to *Cape d' Orange*, in $51^{\circ} 40'$ of west longitude, and $4^{\circ} 10'$ of north latitude; being about 240 miles along the coast. The principal settlement is the island of *Cayenne*, which lies at the mouth of a river of the same name, about 100 miles north-west of *Cape d' Orange*; being about 17 leagues in circumference, five of which are washed by the sea, and the rest by the two branches of the river. The *French* have erected a fort, on a little rising ground, at the point of the island; but it has no other fresh water than what is preserved in cisterns. There is good anchoring near the foot of the fort, where above a hundred ships may ride in security: and boats may come up without danger, on each side of the point of land on which the fort stands, till within a foot of the shore. There are some pleasant hills, very convenient for settlements; as also
several

several meadows, producing very good grass, in the island, which is almost cut in two by a salt water river, that affords an easy communication between the plantations, and facilitates the transportation of merchandize: but the island has also several springs, which afford good water for drinking, and are very proper to turn sugar-mills.

THE *French* first established themselves here, in 1635, under the sieur *Poncet* of *Bretigny*, who was massacred by the *Indians*; but the remains of his colony defended themselves, till they received a reinforcement: though they afterwards abandoned it; when it was taken possession of by the *English*, who, in 1664, were expelled by the *French*: in 1676, it was taken by the *Dutch*; but the *French* retook it the next year, and have retained the possession of it ever since.

NEAR the fort of *St. Lewis*, is a village containing about 200 houses, inhabited by tradesmen, and the soldiers in garrison. About 12 miles north-east of the fort, is another village, called *Lance de Remire*, the lower part of which is inhabited by 60 *Jews*, and 80 negroes; but on the upper part are the habitations of 60 *French*, and 25 negroes. There are also several other plantations scattered up and down the island: besides, as the *French* were inclinable to extend themselves on the main, they have built a redoubt on one side of the river, to defend its entrance. Further in land, they have another fort, called *Sinarary*, which serves them instead of an advanced post, where they have 80 men in garrison. And there are some other small islands near the great one; as the *Devil's Island*, to the north-west; and those of

Remire

Remire to the north-east; each of them about three leagues distant from *Cayenne*.

THE principal trade of *Cayenne* consists in sugar, rocou, indigo, cotton, and vanilla. The commodities sent from *France* for *Cayenne*, are chiefly corn, wine, brandy, linnen-cloth, mercury, hardware, and especially salted-flesh; because large cattle are scarce in the island, and no oxen are allowed to be butchered, without a licence from the governor.

III. *INDIAN GUIANA*, or *Caribana*, is reported to contain all the country between *Cape d'Orange*, and the river of the *Amazons*; being about 240 miles along the coast, which is very dangerous, on account of the high tides, and great surges of the sea: but the air is too unwholsome for *Europeans*, who fall sick on board their ships, whenever their business obliges them to make any considerable stay: even the natives are put to great inconvenience; for they have no ground fit to build houses upon; and, therefore, are obliged to make their huts in trees, which have more the appearance of large birds-nests, than the habitations of human beings.

THE country, between *Cape d'Orange*, and the north cape, is pretty well known to the *English*, *French*, and *Dutch*; who frequently go there in barks, to trade with the natives for seals: but the country is very little known from the north cape to the equator.

DISSERTATION I.

On the SPANISH Colonies in SOUTH AMERICA.

The nature of colonies ; and how they were established in AMERICA : with observations on the gold and silver brought from thence into Europe, and re-exported to Asia. The claim of the Spaniards to the dominion of the American Seas ; with remarks thereon. Their polity in their colonies ; and in what manner their trade is conducted by the galleons, and register ships. An estimate of the value of the gold, silver, and other commodities, annually imported into Spain, from AMERICA : with reasons why the former country has been rather impoverished than enriched by the latter.

SOME of the ancient *Greeks* endeavoured to persuade their countrymen, that all the western nations were derived and peopled from them : but their opinion of being *Aborigines*, or of springing out of the earth where they inhabited, ought rather to be looked upon as a frivolous notion in their philosophy, than an error in their history : for, in arguing against their conceit, why might not the conclusion be made, that the primitive *Grecians* were only colonies from the south-east parts, instead of their land peopling itself ; unless they pretended to prove, that their soil was better able, and more disposed, to bear mankind than any other ? The *Americans* have always retained the same opinion as the *Grecians* : but it is highly probable,

probable, that their extensive tract of country was originally peopled by sea, either by the *Phenicians*, or *Carthaginians*. If the *Americans* were pagans, so were the *Europeans*: and, if it is urged, that they went naked, or painted their bodies, when *Columbus* discovered their country; it is no more than what was done by the *Britons*, when their island was invaded by *Cæsar*; who found their ideas of religion, their form of government, their customs and manners, as imperfect and uncivilized as the *Spaniards* first found the *Americans*: though this ought not to be alledged against the *Britons* in particular; because the same may be said of all the northern nations in general, till they were refined by the *Roman* polity, or improved by the doctrine of christianity. Besides, when *Cæsar* discovered *Britain*, he took it for a new world; being uncertain whether it was an island, or a distinct continent; and *Columbus* was under the same uncertainty upon the discovery of the island of *Cuba*: nor were the *Romans* less transported at their *British* acquisitions, than the *Spaniards* were at their *American* conquests: but the *Roman* provinces were like so many saplings, that impoverished the mother root; while those which the *Spaniards* established in *America*, gave nutriment and strength to their mother country, which was languishing beneath her own infirmities.

WHEN the world became populous, it was necessary for some states to make migrations, for the foundations of others: thus the *Phenicians* planted *Carthage*; and the *Romans* extended their provinces throughout the greatest parts of *Europe*, and *Asia*, as also in the most desirable parts of *Africa*: but colonies

colonies have properly three kinds of distinctions. The *First*, are those serving to ease, or discharge, the inhabitants of a country; where the people are become too numerous for some of them to get subsistence, without great inconvenience to others. The *Second*, are those established by victorious princes and people, in the middle of vanquished nations, to keep them in awe and obedience. And the *Third*, are distinguished by the name of commercial colonies; because trade should be the sole occasion and object of such settlements.

It was by means of the *First* kind of colonies, that, some ages after the deluge, first the eastern, and successively all the other parts of the earth, became inhabited: for, without mentioning any thing of the *Phenician* and *Grecian* colonies, it is well known, that it was for the establishment of such settlements, that the northern nations overrun *Gaul*, *Italy*, and the southern parts of *Europe*; where, after several long and bloody military contentions, they divided the country with the ancient inhabitants.

THE *Romans* used the *Second* kind of colonies more than any other people; principally to secure the conquests they had made from east to west, and to prevent the necessity of constant standing armies: which policy they practised, till their conquests grew too numerous, the conquered countries too distant, and their empire too unwieldy to be managed by their native force; so that they became the slaves of those whom they conquered.

THE *Third* sort of colonies are for trade; being intended to encrease the wealth and power of the native kingdom; to which they will abundantly contribute,

contribute, if conducted with prudent management, governed by salutary laws, and kept under a proper regulation. No nation has, or ever had, all the materials of commerce within itself: no climate produces all commodities: and, yet it is the interest, pleasure, or convenience of every people, not only to use or trade in most, or all of them; but to raise such things themselves, rather than to purchase them from others; unless in some instances, when they barter their own commodities for them, to employ as many, or more, people at home in that exchange, and such persons as would lose their employment, if these commodities were purchased from abroad.

INDEED the *Spaniards*, after the discovery of *America*, set up a fourth pretence for the colonization of countries; which was the conversion of pagans to the christian religion: but, in this, they had no more sincerity than those *Mahometans* that invaded *Spain*, and, for many years, kept possession of a great part of the country.

THE present colonies of commerce are those established by the *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, *English*, *French*, *Dutch*, and *Danes*, within these two last centuries; and which they continue still to establish in several parts of *Asia*, and *America*; either to keep up a regular commerce with the natives, to cultivate the ground, or to embowel the mines. The principal colonies, of this kind, are on the southern and northern continents, as also in the islands of *America*; particularly *Chili*, *Peru*, *Brazil*, *Guiana*, *Mexico*, *Canada*, *Louisiana*, *Carolina*, *Virginia*, *Maryland*, *Pensylvania*, *New England*, *Acadia*, and *Hudson's Bay*; with the *Caribees*, *Jamaica*,

maica, Cuba, Domingo, and other islands. These colonies, in *Africa*, are along the coast of *Guinea*, the cape of *Good Hope*, and all those extensive coasts from thence as far as to the *Red Sea*. And, in *Asia*, there are the famous *Batavia* of the *Dutch*; *Goa* and *Diu* of the *Portuguese*; *Madras, Bombay*, and *Fort William*, of the *English*; *Pondicherry* of the *French*; and some other less considerable places.

PLANTATIONS are among ancient, primitive, and heroical works. When the world was young, it begat many children: though, lord *Bacon* says, now it is old, it begets fewer; for new plantations may justly be accounted the children of former kingdoms. But the same noble author says, he likes a plantation in a pure soil: that is, where people are not displanted, to the end to plant in others: for else, it is rather an extirpation, than a plantation.

MERCANTILE people have been generally prompted to enter upon well-grounded and practicable adventures; among which, the discovery of unknown lands have merited the first place in the attention of the wisest and greatest men. These are things that carry along with them advantages in many respects, and are valuable in their own nature: for there is nothing chimerical in their intention; but glory and profit have attended them in the event: it being to such adventures, and discoveries, that all maritime powers have been indebted for the increase of their trade and navigation; especially those *European* states, whose riches flow in upon them from their settlements and plantations in *America*.

IT has been fully shewn, in the second and third chapters of PART I. how the discovery of the new world was reserved for *Christopher Columbus*; and in what manner he accomplished the noblest undertaking that ever inspired the human mind. The invention of the mariner's compass was made about the year 1302: the *Canaries* were discovered, or retrieved, in 1417: the *Portuguese* found out the coast of *Guinea*, in 1471; and soon after proceeded by sea to the *East Indies*: while *Christopher Columbus*, in 1492, discovered *America* for the *Spaniards*; the benefit of which discovery was lost to the *Genoese*, by their insolence; to the *Portuguese*, by their ungenerous treatment of *Columbus*; and to the *English*, by the unhappy accident of his brother *Bartholomew* falling into the hands of pirates, as he was upon his voyage to communicate the scheme to *Henry VII.* and to request his patronage in the undertaking. It has also been represented, in the fourth and fifth chapters of PART I. how these adventurers who succeeded *Columbus*, completed the discovery of *America*: and it has been shewn, that there is the highest probability of discovering a north-east, or north-west passage, to the *East* or *West Indies*: however, the empire of his Catholic majesty in *America*, is a sufficient demonstration, that marvellous projects are not always chimerical.

THE *Greeks* and *Romans* were eminent for their military discipline: but what were the conquests, and acquisitions, of *Alexander*, or *Cæsar*, in comparison of those which were made by the *Spaniards* in *America*; where they subdued a dominion of almost seven thousand miles in extent? *Alexander* was master of *Greece*, and conqueror of *Persia*:

Cæsar

Cæsar made himself emperor of *Rome*, and governed all her extensive provinces: but *Charles V.* of *Spain*, surpassed them both in power; being king of that country, emperor of *Germany*, lord of the greatest part of *Italy*, and sovereign of the *Netherlands*; besides his possessions in *Asia*, *Africa*, and *America*.

THE rapidity of the *Spanish* conquests were owing to their skill in navigation, the use of fire-arms, and the temper of their swords; which made the naked *Indians* fall an easy sacrifice to their merciless invaders; who are far from being meritorious of the name of conquerors; because their expeditions were no more than bloody executions, and barbarous massacres, upon an innocent and unresisting people.

DE la VEGA observes, that the *Spaniards* introduced the christian religion, together with the arts and sciences, into *America*: in return for which, *Spain*, and the rest of *Europe*, became possessed of an immense treasure in gold, silver, and precious stones. But, considering the inexplicable devastations, and unparalleled oppressions, which the miserable *Indians* suffered, by the usurpations and tyrannies of the *Spaniards*; how many millions were entirely extirpated, and how many more enslaved; as also, that the *Spaniards*, with the christian religion, introduced the inquisition, with all its terrors, whereby they have corrupted the christian doctrines, and the morals of the *Indians*; it may be fairly concluded, that the *Indians* have been losers by their alteration.

THE *Spanish* adventurers cloaked all their barbarities under the mask of religion, and committed such

such enormities, that the bare recollection of them are shocking to human nature; murdering the *Indians* by thousands with the sword, hunting and tearing them to pieces with their dogs, enslaving them in their mines, or torturing them with the utmost barbarity either in wantonness of cruelty, or through excess of avarice. For the bishop of *Chiapa* says, that, by a modest computation, the number of *Indians* murdered in cold blood, exceeded the number of people living in *Europe*. Notwithstanding, *Ovalle* remarks, that their Catholic majesties, *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, most strictly recommended to the adventurers and governors, that they should always have before their eyes, in the conquest of the new world, not so much the dilatation of their royal power and monarchy, as the propagation of the gospel, and the kind usage of the *Indians*, whose conversion they had principally at heart. But the continued cruelties of the *Spaniards*, occasioned it to be truly represented to the court of *Spain*, that *America* would soon be depopulated, if a seasonable prevention was not put to these outrages: upon which, the emperor *Charles V.* caused particular orders to be drawn up in favour of the *Indians*, requiring them to be treated as subjects, and not as slaves: though all his ordinances were disregarded by the *Spaniards*.

THE *Pizarro's*, *Almagro*, *Baldivia*, and the other conquerors of *South America*, were far from being men of any illustrious extraction: though, with all their imperfections, it must be acknowledged, they were possessed of some virtues; such as courage, fortitude, and temperance: otherwise they would never have struggled so many years against*
winds

* See this Volume p. 172, and 357.

winds and seas, endured the extremities of heat and cold, or traversed countries almost impenetrable and impassable. But patience seems to have been a virtue adapted to the inhabitants of *Spain*: and, it has been conjectured, no other nation would have persisted with the same indefatigable industry, in the prosecution of these discoveries. However, it should be remembered, that the *Spaniards*, in the time of *Columbus*, were the greatest maritime power in *Europe*: besides, they had some advantage over the other *Europeans* in their situation; because they lay the farthest westward of any country in the old world; and their climate had a nearer resemblance to that of *Peru*, than the countries of their northern neighbours.

THE success of the *Spaniards* in *America*, caused their shipping to increase beyond that of any other *European* power; because, they had occasion, in their beginning there, for great number of transports, to carry men, horses; other animals, and stores of every kind, to their new acquisitions: in which flourishing condition they continued for a great part of the long reigns of their king *Philip* II^d, and our queen *Elizabeth*; who had not a fleet to give their *Armada* battle; and, perhaps, *Spain* might have succeeded in her invasion, if Providence had not favourably interposed a tempest for the protection of *England*; whose queen knew to what causes she owed her danger and deliverance, which made her very attentive to the planting of colonies in *America*. Death prevented this excellent monarch from executing her great designs: but some of her wisest subjects, and most gallant seamen, entered so deeply into the plan, and laid

it so nearly to their hearts, that what she intended in the settlement of *Virginia*, was pretty well effected in the reign of *James Ist*; though the undertaking was carried on with great difficulty, upon account of his timorous councils; because he could not gain the approbation of the *Spaniards*, of whom he stood in fervile awe: but his shame, with much debate, got the ascendancy over his fears; and that fund of treasure was opened to *Great Britain*.

THIS, with what else has been since executed in favour of *Great Britain*, both on the continent and in the islands of *America*, has conveyed such an additional weight of maritime force to the natural strength which she owes to her situation, that she would have always been able, by wise management, as she now is, to give law on the ocean. *Spain* has greater countries, and more subjects, in *America*, than *Great-Britain*: but the former does not navigate a tenth part of the shipping in that trade, as the latter does. The *British* dominions in *America*, by a happy kind of poverty, have no mines of gold or silver: therefore, the *British* subjects must be contented to deal in sugar, rum, rice, tobacco, horses, beef, corn, fish, lumber, and other commodities that require great stowage; the perpetual carriage of which must employ above 100,000 tons of shipping; and the value of 5000*l.* in those wares, will load a vessel, which, in the *Spanish* trade, would be freighted homeward with 500,000 *l.* sterling.

GOLD and silver, in fact, are only commodities; though they ascertain the values of all others: thus, in *England*, about 800 years ago, an ox sold for 2*s.* 6*d.* a cow for 2*s.* a sheep for 1*s.* and a

swine for 8 *d.* which could be only owing to the little foreign trade the nation then had, and consequently to the little quantity of gold and silver trade had then brought in. But if it should be asked, What is the reason, that, at present, all things are naturally so much advanced in price, to what they were in those days? The answer is, That the quantities of gold and silver brought to *Europe*, since the progress made by the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* in *America*, have made those metals more common, and of less value, than formerly: so that 20 *s.* will now scarcely purchase what 1 *s.* would, before the discovery of *Peru* and *Brazil*.

GOLD and silver are the natives of few countries, and the propriety of few persons; therefore, can be obtained by others only by their consent, or by compulsion: and, consequently, no state can grow more considerable than their native soil will make them, without plundering their neighbours, or persuading them to part with it willingly; which can be done only by arms or trade. No soil produces all things, and no nation works all sorts of manufactures, which are of common and necessary use: nor can any man, by his own skill and labour, make or acquire any considerable part of such things as he wants or desires; so that he can have no means of obtaining them, but by exchanging superfluities for necessaries. However, it frequently happens, that the person who is possessed of the commodity which one man desires, has no occasion for what he has to give in lieu of it, or not a sufficiency of it to answer the value of what he parts with: upon which account, something else must be found out to make the account

account even. From hence, mankind have found themselves under a necessity to agree upon some universal commodity, which shall measure the value of all the rest, and at last balance all accounts: but nothing has been discovered, that will answer the purpose so effectually as gold and silver: because their contexture hinders them from being perishable; their divisibility qualifies them to answer all occasions; their scarcity enhances their price, so as to make a great value lie in a little compass, and easily portable; besides, the more regular and equal supplies of them, than of other commodities, render them proper standards for the valuation of other things: therefore, these metals, by general and almost universal agreement, are mediums of commerce, the ballance of all trade, and the ultimate view, or chief advantage, proposed by it. But it is ridiculous to imagine, that any precautions, or the greatest penalties, will keep gold or silver in any country, where it is the interest of numbers to carry it out; as it particularly is with the *Spaniards* in *America*, who take all opportunities of defrauding their sovereign of his fifth, and of exchanging their gold or silver for such *European* commodities as they can get from strangers.

THE treasures possessed by the *Spaniards* in *America*, have, in the opinion of *De la Vega*, tended to impoverish their mother country, which has been declining ever since: for these riches have inclined the principal *Spaniards* to pride, ambition, luxury, and indolence. “ The truth is, says the royal
“ historian, the poor are become much poorer
“ than formerly: for the quantity of money be-

“ ing so greatly increased, has enhanced the price
 “ of provisions to such a degree, that the poor
 “ starve by the abundance of the rich :” besides,
 by such an introduction of wealth, the generality
 of mankind are become more depraved and dis-
 contented ; nations, once formidable, and dreaded
 by all the world, being now rendered impotent,
 despicable, and effeminate, by the corruption of
 riches.

THERE is an *active*, and a *passive* commerce, in
 all nations : the former signifies the exportation
 of those commodities wherewith a kingdom trades,
 when they are sent in kind for the use of other
 nations : and the latter implies the reverse ; being
 the importation of those commodities which fo-
 reigners send for the use of such a kingdom : so
 that, when the quantities exported and imported
 are unequal, this inequality will shew, whether the
 ballance of trade is favourable to, or against, that
 nation. *Spain* has languished under a *passive* com-
 merce, ever since the discovery of *America* ; where-
 by the treasures of her mines are dug up for other
 nations, who carry on an *active* trade, so as to sup-
 ply the *Spaniards* either with the necessaries or
 luxuries of life : though, in the opinion of the
 marquis *Belloni*, this is the present situation of all
 the kingdoms in *Europe*, with respect to the trade
 which they carry on with the *East-Indies*. For the
 great quantities of jewels and manufactures, li-
 quors and species, brought from thence, render
 the trade of the *East-Indies* so exorbitant, that the
 great advantage the *European* kingdoms receive
 from the *West-Indies*, with the great quantities of
 gold and silver, and other useful things brought
 from

from thence, are not sufficient to compensate the loss sustained by that expensive trade : which gives just ground to make it a question, Whether the money that is brought from *America*, is more considerable than what is exported by the *Europeans* to *Asia* ?

HOWEVER, this is too hasty a conclusion : for *Uxtariz*, a noble *Spanish* writer, asserts, that from the year 1492, to 1724, the gold and silver brought from *America* into *Spain*, amounted to above five thousand millions of dollars ; which, one year with another, is more than twenty-one millions and a half, or upwards of five millions sterling, yearly. Besides, there are great quantities of gold and silver either coined, or in bullion, brought from the *Spanish West-Indies*, by the *English* and *Dutch*, in the returns of the illicit trade which they carry on with the *Spaniards* : and there are also immense treasures of gold brought from the *Brasils*, which have prodigiously increased the remittances from *America* to *Europe*.

BARON Montesquieu remarks, that the species of *Europe* was doubled soon after the conquests of *Mexico* and *Peru* ; which appeared from the price of commodities, that was doubled every where, as the specie of *Europe* doubled. The profit of *Spain* diminished in the same proportion, and the *Spaniards* had every year the same quantity of metals, which was become by one half less precious. In double the time, the specie still doubled ; and the profit still diminished another half. By this progression, of doubling and doubling, the cause and impotency of the wealth of *Spain* is easy to be discovered : for, it is upwards of 200 years since

they worked their *Indian* mines ; and the present quantity of specie in the trading world, compared to that before the discovery of the *Indies*, has been supposed to be as 32 to 1 ; that is, it has been doubled five times ; and, in 200 years more, it may be doubled again, so as to make it 64 to 1.

THE emperor *Charles* Vth was so sensible of the bad consequences of the trade to the *East-Indies*, that he was used to say, "It had been well if those countries had never been discovered ; or at least not so much frequented : " for, as *Sir William Monson* observes, the *Europeans* have enriched the *Asiatics* with the wealth of *Europe* and *America* ; at the same time as they have decreased the trades of all the civilized nations ; of which the *English* have sufficient proof by their unprofitable trade to *India*.

THE *Spaniards* have sometimes thought fit to speak favourably of the community of the sea, and the freedom of navigation : but, when it was for their present purpose, they have as severely maintained the particular dominion of it as any other nation : nor must it be forgot, that several *German* authors, in the titles of *Charles* Vth, emperor and king of *Spain*, stile him, *King of the islands and continent of the Indies, and of the ocean* ; though the use of the sea is declared to be free, by the common law of *Castile*. It is indisputable that some particular seas are subject to the sovereignty of some particular states ; as the *British* and *Adriatic* seas, to *Great Britain* and *Venice* : but it is impossible to possess the whole ocean, or to have a title to the dominion of it, unless a prince or people were sovereigns of the whole world : for who can
say,

say, in the midst of the vast deep; such a channel, or such a space, is mine? and who has a right to exclude any one a passage through the main? However, many of the *Portuguese* were formerly of opinion, that their king had acquired such a right to the great ocean of the *West-Indies*, that he might lawfully refuse a passage through it to other nations. The *Spaniards* seem likewise to be of opinion, that no people, but themselves, have a right to sail through the spacious sea that leads to *America*; as if they also obtained that right by prescription. But the law of prescription can be of no force in deciding controversies which happen between princes and people acknowledging no superior: because, the peculiar civil laws of any country are of no more weight, in relation to foreign states, than if such laws had never existed: so that, for deciding controversies of this nature, recourse must necessarily be had to the general law of nations, originally or secondarily; which can never admit of such an usurpation of a title to the dominion of the sea by prescription: though, on some such presumption, it will be found, that the *Spaniards* have frequently molested the navigation of the *English* subjects in the seas of *America*.

EVERY nation has a right to enact what laws they judge proper for regulating the trade and navigation of their respective colonies, as well as of the mother country: but these laws and regulations should never interfere with subsisting public treaties, nor with the laws of nations, which give every state a right and freedom of navigation to and from their several colonies and plantations: for such laws and regulations which interfere with

public treaties, and the laws of nations, must tend to destroy all amity with such nations who make them.

THE *Spanish* government are even jealous of their own subjects, as well as of foreigners, in *America*; and the only essential maxim which runs through the whole political œconomy of the *Spaniards*, in respect of their territories there, is the subjecting them to an absolute dependance upon *Spain*: therefore, all things relating to their *American* empire, receive their first form, and last consideration, from the council for the *Indies* in *Spain*; which is composed of such persons who have attained the best knowledge of these countries.

ALL the *Spanish* possessions in *South America* are subject to the * vice-roy of *Peru*; and the natural-born *Spaniards* are solely vested with command throughout all the *Spanish Indies*, enjoying all the posts of honour, profit, and trust; which has occasioned those draughts that have so much exhausted and debilitated their dominions in *Europe*: for, as they put no confidence even in the very first generation of their descendants, and absolutely prohibit all strangers from going there in their service, there is a necessity of continually sending large supplies to *America*, that the governing people may be still in a condition of holding the reins with equal tightness and severity. But this form of government creates an irreconcilable antipathy between the *European Spaniards* and the creolians, or those born of *Spanish* parents in the *West-Indies*; who, with indignation, find themselves equally excluded from all considerable preferments, either
in

* See this Volume, p. 151.

in church or state; they see the most palpable partiality shewn in all judicial proceedings between them and the *Spaniards*; and know that the whole policy of their governors is bent to distress the creolians: while the ruling *Spaniards* are thoroughly sensible that the creolians entertain these sentiments, and exert their utmost artifices to enfeeble them; by discouraging, as far as they are able, all sorts of manufactures, and compelling them to purchase such as are sent from *Spain*: they also endeavour to prevent an increase of plantations, except estancias, or beef-farms; that the creolians may not have it in their power to possess rich and improved settlements: which is the cause why those noble countries are so little cultivated. Besides, the native *Spaniards* make it their aim to increase luxury, indolence, and pusillanimity, among the creolians, that they may the more easily be kept in obedience: from whence it is apparent, that the buccaneers, and other adventurers, in small bodies, were able to commit great depredations. Thus, throughout all these rich, noble, and extensive provinces, the inhabitants seem inspired with a spirit of dissention, which renders them perpetually uneasy and discontented; so that the blessings conferred upon them, by indulgent Providence, are made almost useless, and insignificant.

It has always been the prevailing maxim in the *Spanish* councils, to preserve their *American* commerce, not only to the *Spanish* nation, but solely to the crown of *Spain*; which has this interesting trade conducted by means of the galleons, flota, flotilla, register-ships, and guarda costas, under the management of the council of commerce for the

Indies,

Indies, established at *Seville*, who have provided excellent laws for its security ; among which are the following :

1. No ships are permitted to go to any of the *Spanish* dominions in *America*, without a special licence granted by the king ; which licences are issued by the council of commerce at *Seville*.

2. No foreigner can be permitted to go to the *Spanish* dominions in *America* in any licensed ship, on any terms whatever, either to settle or trade there ; *Irishmen* only excepted, and they must be all Roman catholics.

3. No person, not even a native *Spaniard*, is allowed to go to the *Spanish West-Indies*, without special licence from the council of commerce ; which not only regulates the time the several fleets of ships are to sail, to what places, and when they shall be obliged to come away ; but it also limits the number of ships, and the quantity of gold ; as the latter should not exceed the demand, and glut the markets.

THE *Spanish* government sends two fleets annually to *America* : the one, which they call the galleons, for carrying on the commerce of *Péru* ; and the other, which they call the flota, for *Mexico*.

A GALLEON formerly denoted a large vessel, or ship of war, of three decks ; built in a particular manner to afford a great deal of room for merchandise, with which these ships are so much crowded, that they are in no condition of defending themselves, if attacked by an enemy. The galleons are laden entirely upon the account of his Catholic majesty ; being eight in number ; the principal of which, are the *Capitana*, the *Admirante*, *il Governor*,

verno, the *Patacha*, and *Margarita*, each of 50 guns; with an advice frigate of 40, called the *Aviso*: however, besides the royal galleons, there are usually from twelve to sixteen merchant ships in this trade, belonging to private persons; who purchase their licences at a very high rate, and sail in company with the galleons; laden with warlike stores, or merchandize, for *Peru*.

THE galleons are loaded at *Cadiz*; from whence they may put out at any time; and they are about two years in compleating their voyage. They steer directly for the *Canaries*; and, if the flota sails with them, as it sometimes does, they anchor together in the haven of *Gomera*; from whence they bear away for the *Antilles*, where they separate; the galleons proceeding for *Carthagena* and *Porto Bello*; and the flota for *Vera Cruz*: though, on their return, they rejoin at the *Havannah*, in the isle of *Cuba*. As soon as the galleons double *Cape de la Vela*, and appear before the mouth of the *Rio de la Hachâ*, advice is sent to all parts, that every thing may be got ready for their reception. They continue about a month at *Carthagena*, and about six weeks at *Porto Bello*; but, when they have transacted their business at the latter place, they return to the former, and remain there till they set sail for *Spain*. They proceed first to the *Havannah*; then steer through the gulph of *Florida*; and so to the height of *Carolina*, where they meet with the western winds, and shape their course for the *Azores* to take in provisions; after which they continue their voyage to *Cadiz*.

A REGISTER ship is so called, from its being registered, with all the effects embarked in *Spain*, in the books kept for that purpose in the chamber
of

of *Seville*: but these register ships belong to the merchants, who petition, and obtain leave from the council of the *Indies*, to send a ship of 300 ton burthen, or under, to some particular port; though the ship carries upwards of 600 ton of goods, and affords accommodation for passengers besides. The register ships proceed to *St. Martha*, *Porto Cavallo*, *Buenos Ayres*, and some other places, which are never resorted to by the flota or galleons: yet they generally go out, and return with those fleets. There is sometimes a gain of two or three hundred per cent. in this trade; which enables the owners to pay very bountifully for their licence: however, it is carried on by foreigners, as well as by the native *Spaniards*; who lend them their names for this purpose; whereby the *Spanish* merchants render themselves only as factors to the other *Europeans*. And, besides this kind of surreptitious trade, there is another of a more illicit nature carried on along the *Spanish* main, by the *English* and *Dutch*, in the *West Indies*, without the ceremony of a licence; in which they succeeded for many years, partly by employing force, and partly by the connivance of *Spanish* governors; till this evil grew so flagrant, that the court of *Spain* determined to put an end to it; and sent new governors into *America*, with very precise orders on this head; declaring that they should be carried fully into execution. This gave rise to the guarda-costas, or guard-ships, who exceeded their commissions; and, by their depredations, brought on the last war between the crowns of *Great Britain* and *Spain*. But the commerce carried on by the flota, will be mentioned in the dissertation following the description of the *Spanish* colonies in *North America*. THE

THE loading of the galleons is more valuable than others; which is evident from the following estimate of the money and effects annually returned to *Spain* from her *American* dominions.

Pieces of Eight!

IN gold; of which the galleons bring home between two and three millions; and the flota, generally about one. } 4,000,000

IN silver, by the galleons, from 18 to 20 millions; and by the flota from 10 to 12. } 30,000,000

IN precious stones: by the galleons in pearls 200,000; in emeralds 300,000; in bezoars, turquoises, amethysts, and others of inferior value, 30,000: as also some turquoises by the flota, to the value of 70,000. } 600,000

IN *Vigognia* wool by the galleons. } 50,000

QUINQUINA, by the galleons, 20,000; and as much by the flota. } 40,000

IN raw hides by the galleons, 70,000; and as much by the flota. } 140,000

IN logwood, by the galleons. } 60,000

IN cochineal by the flota, and register ships. } 1,000,000

IN indigo about } 200,000

BY hides from *Buenos Ayres*, in a register ship. } 200,000

IN sugars, tobacco, and drugs. } 2,000,000

38,290,000

THUS, it appears, that this commerce of the *Spanish* continent and island of *America*, brings in annually

38,290,000

38,290,000 pieces of eight, or 6,843,159 *l.* sterling: but this wealth is dissipated among other nations, to whom the *Spaniards* have not been improperly called stewards: for, though their galleons bring the silver into *Spain*, it is not to be kept there, either by power or policy: it runs out as fast, or faster, than it comes in: and it has been asserted, that the little canton of *Bern* in *Switzerland*, has more opulence, and credit, than his Catholic majesty, notwithstanding his possession of the *Indies*.

At first sight, this appears to be strange and incredible: but the mystery is far from being impenetrable, when it passes under examination: for the silver, and rich commodities of the *Indies*, are brought to *Spain* in return for *European* goods and manufactures, of which very few belong to the *Spanish* subjects, who supply their *American* provinces with what they receive, as negociators, for the merchants of *Great Britain*, *France*, *Holland*, and *Hamburg*. All the necessaries of life, and many articles of luxury, are required by the inhabitants of *Spanish America*; who receive only wines, oils, olives, dried fruits, and sweet-meats of the produce of *Spain*; all the rest being supplied by other nations, the prime cost of which amounts to a great sum, and the profits upon them to a greater. The very probity of the *Spanish* merchants is destructive to their country: because, they are never known to betray their trust; and, consequently, the foreigners who make use of their names to cover their commerce in the *Indies*, reap the entire advantage of the high price at which their goods are sold: so that all which remains in
Spain,

Spain, is the silver and gold on the account of his majesty, the profit of such goods as were actually sent by *Spanish* merchants, and the commissions received by the *Spanish* factors: all besides is presently drawn away, and other nations enriched by the poverty of *Spain*.

BUT, if the *Spanish* government had given encouragement to trade and manufactures, after the discovery of *America*, there is great probability that the supreme direction of the affairs of *Europe* would have fallen into the hands of the Catholic monarchs: for, if all the subjects of *Spain* had traded to these far distant regions, without restraint, this must have created such a maritime force, as no other nation could have opposed: or, supposing the trade had been confined as it is at present, and manufactures had been encouraged, for driving a traffic to the greatest part of the *West Indies*, without having recourse to foreigners, such prodigious sums of money must have centered in *Spain*, as would have enabled its monarchs to prescribe law to all their neighbours. By neglecting these obvious and salutary rules, for establishing a solid and extensive dominion, the *Spanish* kings adhered to those refinements in policy, which have never yet been found to answer in practice, however excellent they may appear in theory. They were for fixing their commerce by constraint, and for establishing power by the sword: but experience has shewn the first to be impracticable; and it is probable that the latter was the only method whereby they could have missed that end they endeavoured to obtain. By repeated attempts to secure the wealth of the *Indies* entirely to *Spain*, they scatter-

ed

ed it throughout *Europe*; and, by openly grasping at universal monarchy, they alarmed those they might have subdued: so that, in process of time, the people they intended for slaves, not only became their equals and allies; but some of them became their masters, and gave law to the aspirers of universal monarchy.

FERDINAND the Catholic, in whose reign *Columbus* discovered *America*, reposed no confidence in that excellent man; but, by an unaccountable stroke of policy, was inclined to trust any other person in the management of the new discovered world, only because that discovery was made by *Columbus*. *Charles V.* who succeeded him, paid such little regard to the interest of *Spain*, that he granted a whole province in *South America* to the citizens of *Augsburgh*, in *Germany*. *Philip II.* was so much taken up in endeavouring to reduce the *Netherlands*, enslave *Italy*, conquer *England*, over-run *France*, and in annexing *Portugal* to his dominions, that he considered his subjects in *America*, only as the instruments of providing money for him to prosecute his ambitious designs. Nor were the successors of this monarch more attentive to their *American* colonies, which they looked upon as a farm to be fleeced, rather than as an estate to be improved. This conduct of the *Spanish* monarchs impoverished their subjects, whose expences in the army obliged them to seek new fortunes in *America*; which greatly depopulated their mother country: and it plainly appeared, towards the close of the last century, that, with all their boasted firmness and sagacity, the *Spaniards* had ruined themselves by acquiring too much power, and rendered

dered themselves beggars by the misapplication of their riches : for, with ostentatious titles, and very extensive dominions, they were reduced to a weak and despicable condition.

BUT the *Spaniards* are at last awakened from their lethargy, and seem to be sensible that commerce is the best foundation of power : they are preparing to carry on an active trade, and to consult the interest of their colonies. His Catholic majesty, in 1720, took into consideration the ruin of the cocoa-trade between *Spain* and the *Indies*, in the galleons, flota, and register ships ; which was owing to the excessive duties chargeable at the port of *Cadiz*, and afterwards the inland duties that made this considerable branch of commerce be engrossed by foreigners ; who not only exported it to their respective countries ; but brought it back to the *Spanish* ports, where they could introduce it by an advantage in the admeasurement and indulgencies in the duties, exclusive of fraud ; being privileges withheld from the *Spaniards*, as they imported it registerd, from the *Indies* to *Cadiz*, under an obligation to consign it there, according to the tenor of the register. His majesty, therefore, ordered a reduction of those duties ; and made other provisions for retrieving this branch of commerce ; which is the principal freight of the galleons, and register ships, on their return from *America*.

THE *Spanish* government will not permit any foreigners to carry on any trade with their colonies : but the *English*, *French*, and *Dutch*, carry on a contraband traffic greatly to their own advantage, and to the benefit of the *American Spaniards*,

who encourage this illicit trade, as it gives them an opportunity of evading the royal duties, and purchasing the goods at a much cheaper price, than when they properly pass through the hands of the government. The *Spaniards* likewise pretend to have a right of visiting all ships, and of confiscating such as have any of their manufactures, produce, or money on board; which has given rise to several quarrels between the crowns of *Great Britain* and *Spain*, from 1670 to 1739, when the last war was declared entirely upon this account: but the remarks upon that occasion will be inserted in the second volume of this history, under the dissertation annexed to the description of the *Spanish* colonies on the continent of *North America*: which will also include several other observations relating to the commerce of the *Spanish* colonies, the interest of other *European* nations in that branch of trade, and how far it may be necessary for *Great Britain* to exert herself at any time in opposition to the measures that may be taken by the court of *Spain* to interrupt the navigation of the *American Ocean*.

Portuguese

Portuguese AMERICA.

WITH

*An Account of the Southern INDIANS;
and of the JESUITS of PARAGUAY.*

PART III.

Portuguese America.

WITH

the History of the Indian Tribes
and of the Language of PARAGUAY.

PART III.



A
NEW HISTORY
OF
AMERICA.

PART III.
The DESCRIPTION of BRAZIL.

CHAP. I.

The extent, and boundaries, of this country: how the PORTUGUESE established themselves there; and in what manner they were disturbed by the DUTCH. The face of the country; its animals, vegetables, and commodities; with a particular description of the brazil-tree. The cruelty of the PORTUGUESE to the INDIANS. An account of the present inhabitants of BRAZIL, and of the fifteen captainrics into which the country is divided; with their rivers, towns, and trade: to which is added an estimate of the annual produce of the gold and diamond mines; as also of the brazil-wood, imported into EUROPE.

THIS extensive, and opulent country of Brazil, or Brasil, is subject to the crown of Portugal; being situated between the mouth of
M m 3 the

the great river *Amazon*, under the equator; and the mouth of the river *La Plata*, in 35 degrees of south latitude: so that, by measuring it in a direct line, it is upwards of 2000 miles in length, from north to south; but near 4000, if all the windings and turnings of the coast are taken into the calculation: and, as it is said to extend from the 35th to the 51^o degree of west longitude, it is about 960 miles in breadth, from east to west; though the *Portuguese* have no settlements at any great distance from the coast.

THE country is bounded by the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the north and east; by the country of the *Amazons*, and *Paraguay*, on the west; and by the river *La Plata*, on the south. It was discovered by *Peter Alvarez Capralis*,* a *Portuguese* admiral, in the year 1501; who was at the head of 13 sail of ships bound to the *East Indies*; but was drove upon this coast, in 10 degrees of south latitude: from whence he sailed southward, and landed at a place, which he called *Porto Seguro*; where he erected an altar, gave the name of *The Holy Cross* to the country, and dispatched one of his ships into *Europe*, to acquaint the court of *Portugal* with this discovery; which was accidentally made, nine years after *Columbus* had happily discovered the northern parts of *America*, by his sagacity and fortitude: though *Herrera*, and some other *Spanish* writers, have ventured to affirm, that *Pinzon* and *Lopez*, both in the service of *Spain*, discovered this country a year before the *Portuguese*.

THE country soon lost the name given to it by *Capralis*, and obtained that of *Brazil*, from the brazil-

* See this Volume, p: 130.

Brazil-wood which is found there in abundance : but, notwithstanding the *Portuguese* made several attempts to establish a proper settlement here, it was not done with any success, till the year 1549 ; when they fixed themselves at the *Bay of all Saints*, and built the city of *Saint Salvador*. The *French* also attempted to plant colonies on this coast : but they were prevented by the *Portuguese* ; who continued, almost without a rival, in *Brazil*, till the year 1623, when the crown of *Portugal* was seized by the king of *Spain*, with whom the united provinces were at war, who sent a strong fleet to *Brazil*, and took *St. Salvador* ; which was soon retaken by the *Portuguese*. However, the *Dutch* continued to harass the *Portuguese* settlements, and at last possessed themselves of the entire province of *Fernambuco* : whereupon, count *Maurice* of *Nassau*, accepted the government of the *Dutch* conquests, which he not only extended, but detached a squadron from thence to the coast of *Africa*, and took the important fortress of *Del Mina* from the *Portuguese*. Count *Maurice* was disgusted with the states general, and returned to *Europe* in 1644. After this, the *Dutch* interest declined so much in *Brazil*, that in 10 years the *Portuguese* drove them entirely out of the country : but, as the *Dutch* interrupted the *Portuguese* at sea, the king of *Portugal*, by a treaty in 1661, agreed to pay them a considerable sum of money, to relinquish their interest in that country, which was accepted ; and the *Portuguese* have ever since remained in the peaceable possession of all *Brazil*.

THE face of the country appears somewhat high near the coast : but exceeding pleasant ; being di-

verfified with woods and favannahs, and the trees are generally ever-greens. Though far within land, on the west fide of the country, there are lofty mountains, which feperate it from the *Spanish* province of *La Plata*.

THE feafons, air, and winds, vary throughout this extenfive country, according to the fituation of the refpective provinces. For, *First*, the moft northerly part, which lies next the equator, is fubject to heavy rains, and variable winds, like other countries in the fame latitude; particularly, in the months of *March* and *September*; when the country is overflowed with rain, and rendered unhealthful by ftorms and tornadoes; but this part is very little inhabited; and the *Portuguese* only keep poffeffion of the coafts, to prevent foreigners making any fettlements. In the *Second* place, from five degrees of fouth latitude, to the tropic of *Capricorn*, the winds and feafons are the very reverfe here, to what they are in other parts of the world, in the fame latitude: becaufe, in other places fouth of the equinoctial, the dry feafon comes on when the fun goes to the northward of the line; and the wet feafon begins when the fun goes to the fouthward: but, in *Brazil*, the wet feafon commences in *April*, when the fouth-weft winds fet in with violent tornadoes, thunder, and lightening; and, in *September*, when the wind fhifts to eaft north-eaft, it brings a clear fky and fair weather, which is the time of their fugar-harveft. And, *Thirdly*, the moft fouterly part of *Brazil*, which lies without the tropic of *Capricorn*, is one of the moft defirable parts of the world; being not only bleft with a fruitful foil, but having a greater fhare of fair weather, and a more temperate air, than thofe countries that are nearer to,
or

or those that are farther removed from, the equator.

THERE are only two winds that blow upon the middle of this coast: the south-east, from *April* to *September*; and the north-east, from *September* to *April* again: but the constant trade-wind is met with, about 30 or 40 leagues out at sea; which blows in the *Atlantic Ocean* all the year round, from the eastward, with little variation.

THERE are innumerable springs and lakes in the mountains, from whence issue abundance of streams, that fall into the great rivers *Amazon* and *La Plata*; or run across the country from west to east, and fall into the *Atlantic Ocean*: but the last are very numerous; being of great use to the *Portuguese*, in turning their sugar-mills, and meliorating their lands, which they overflow annually.

As this country lies between the first, second, third, and fourth climates, it is so very hot in some places as to breed a great number of poisonous, and obnoxious creatures; besides a great variety of wild and other animals. There are several of the serpentine kind; as the *ibibaboka*, between three and four yards in length; the *boivivinga*, or rattlesnake; the *boycagu*, six or seven yards long, and half a yard in circumference; and the *liboya*, or roe-buck serpent, about 30 feet in length, and two or three yards round; with scorpions, and other disagreeable animals. There are also tigers, ant-bears, armadilloes, porcupines, *janouveras*, monkeys, *ayis*, and *tapiraffous*; the latter of which is a creature between a bull and an ass, with long hanging ears, and a short tail, but without horns: besides, there is plenty of deer, hares, and other
game;

game; with great variety of birds, and fish: as also many of the *Peruvian*, and most of the *European* animals.

THE soil of *Brazil* is generally good, producing large trees of several sorts, and fit for any uses: the savannahs afford excellent pasture; and, if properly cultivated, produce cotton, tobacco, indico, sugar-canes, maize, and tropical fruits. The chief forest trees are, the sapiera, vermiatico, com-messerie, guiteba, and ferrie, which are used for building houses and shipping: there are also three kinds of mangrove trees, as many of cotton trees, with the wild cocoa-nut-tree, whose nuts are used for making beads, and toys; there are likewise the speckled wood, fustick, and other dying woods: but the most remarkable of them all, is that from which the country is denominated, and requires a particular description.

THE brazil, or red-wood, is cut from a tree, somewhat like the *English* oak, for largeness and foliage; being hard to fell and split, which is done by the negro slaves, who are also obliged to bring it to the sea-side upon their shoulders. This wood is very heavy, and dry: it crackles much in the fire, and raises little smoke: it should be chosen in thick pieces, close, sound, and without any bark on it: but from a pale-colour, upon splitting, it becomes reddish; and has a sweetish taste when chewed. It is used by turners; as also to make a kind of carmine, by means of acids; and a liquid lacca, for miniature: however, the principal use is in dying, where it serves for a red colour, which easily fades and evaporates; though it should not be used without allum and tartar.

THERE are some fine woods of ebony, and five different kinds of palm-trees: with almost all kinds of fruit-trees, plants, herbs, and flowers, growing in *America*, or brought over from *Europe*.

THE principal commodities of this country are sugar, tobacco, dying woods, ambergrease, rosin, train-oil, hides, ginger, indico, balsams, and sweetmeats: but, of late years, the *Portuguese* have discovered several mines of gold and diamonds; as also jasper, emeralds, chrystal, and other precious stones, which have most amazingly enriched their mother country.

THE first *Portuguese* adventurers were destroyed by the natives, and no settlement was made, till *John III.* king of *Portugal*, sent a great fleet there, with a thousand soldiers on board, commanded by *Thomas de Sosa*; accompanied by several jesuits, sent by pope *Paul III.* for the conversion of the natives, who were divided into several states, and at war among themselves; which gave the *Portuguese* an opportunity of reducing the whole, and making them slaves without any distinction. The *Portuguese* have represented the *Brazilians* as savages, without any notion of religion; and as cannibals, without any sense of humanity: but this was done to justify their invasions of the country, and the barbarous massacres they committed on the poor inhabitants; for, notwithstanding what the *Spaniards*, or *Portuguese* have asserted, it is very manifest that the *Indians* were no more cannibals, or men-eaters, than the *Europeans*.

THE present inhabitants of *Brazil*, are *Portuguese*, creolians, mestizoes, negroes, and *Indians*;
or

of whom the former, who are the governors, are the fewest in number, and have divided the country into fifteen provinces, or captain-ships: but the whole is now called a principality; because it gives a title to the presumptive heir of *Portugal*, who is stiled prince of *Brazil*.

THESE governments, captainrics, or capitancias, are 1. *Para*; 2. *Maragnano*; 3. *Siara*; 4. *Rio Grande*; 5. *Parayba*; 6. *Tamarac*; 7. *Pernambuco*; 8. *Seregippe*; 9. *Bahia de Todos los Santos*; 10. *Rio dos Ilheos*; 11. *Porto Seguro*; 12. *Espirito Santo*; 13. *Rio de Janeiro*; 14. *St. Vincent*; and, 15. *del Rey*. Eight of these captainrics belonged properly to his *Portuguese* majesty: but the others were granted to some of his nobility; though they were obliged to acknowledge the sovereignty of the vice-roy of the whole country, who has his residence in the city of *St. Salvador*, or *Bahia*, in the captainship of *Bahia de Todos los Santos*.

1. THE captainric of *PARA*, or *Paria*, is the most northerly of all; being bounded by the mouth of the river *Amazon*, and the ocean, on the north; by the province of *Maragnano*, on the east; by the country of the *Tapuyer*, on the south; and by the country of the *Amazons*, on the west: being about 190 miles in extent from east to west; but uncertain from north to south.

THE river *AMAZON* is reported to be the greatest river in the world; considering the length of its course, and the depth of its water; for it rises in *Peru*, near the equator, runs upwards of 3000 miles eastward, and falls into the *Atlantic Ocean* by several channels, under the equinoctial; being 150 miles broad at the mouth, where there

are several little islands. The river *Para*, which gives name to this province, runs through it from south to north, and falls into the mouth of the river *Amazon*: but there are also the rivers of *Paranayba*, *Pacaxes*, and *Tocantes*, which fall into the river *Amazon*.

THE principal town is *Belem*, or *Para*, situated at the mouth of the river *Amazon*, in $47^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude, and one degree of south latitude: being tolerably well fortified, and inhabited by about 300 *Portuguese*, with their slaves; whose principal business is the cultivation of tobacco, and sugar; as also the gathering of cotton, which grows wild in this neighbourhood.

COMMUTA is another town, about 90 miles south-west of *Belem*; having a small fort to keep the *Indians* in awe, and protect the plantations of the *Portuguese*. Besides, there are some other settlements, though of little consideration.

2. THE captainric of *MARAGNANO*, or *Maranhao*, is so called from an island of the same name, which is contiguous to *Para*; being bounded by the ocean, on the north; by *Siara*, on the east; by the *Tapuyers*, on the south; and by *Para*, on the west; extending about 240 miles from east to west: though, like all the other provinces, it runs only a little way from the coast. The principal rivers are *Maracu*, *Topocora*, and *Mony*; which unite their streams in the bay of *Maragnano*: but there are four others, the *Paragues*, *Paramiri*, *Camussimiri*, and *Barreiras Vemeilhas*, which run the same northern course through the province.

THE island of *Maragnano*, lies at the mouth of the three principal rivers, and is about 135 miles

miles in circumference, very fertile, and well inhabited. The *French*, who seized on it, in 1612, built a town there, in $42^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude, and $1^{\circ} 44'$ of south latitude, which they called *St. Louis de Maragnan*: but it was afterwards taken by the *Portuguese*. It is a small strong town, with a castle built on a rock towards the sea, which commands a convenient harbour beneath. There are also the towns of *St. Andero*, and *St. Jago*; besides several villages of *Indians* who live upon the island: and the *Spaniards* have likewise the town of *Cuma*, situated upon the continent, opposite to the island of *Maragnano*.

3. THE captainric of *SIARA*, is so called from a river of the same name, which rises far up in the continent, and discharges itself into the northern ocean, in three degrees of south latitude, about seven or eight leagues north of the bay of *Mangerypa*. It is about 360 miles broad from east to west: but the principal part of the country is inhabited by free *Indians*, who confine the *Portuguese* to a very small territory, where they have only the town of *Siara*, and the fort of *St. Luke*; the former being situated at the mouth of the river *Siara*, in $39^{\circ} 50'$ of west longitude, and $2^{\circ} 35'$ of south latitude; and the latter on the mouth of a small river, about 60 miles east of the other, between *Rio Buranduba* and *Porto dos Oncas*: though there are some other rivers which run through the province, and fall into the *Atlantic*.

4. THE captainric of *RIO GRANDE*, lies on the east of that of *Siara*, and winds itself from east to south, where it is bounded by *Parayba*; being about 68 miles in extent from south-east to north-west.

The

The *Rio Grande*, or *Great River*, which gives name to this government, falls into the ocean in $34^{\circ} 26'$ of west longitude, and $5^{\circ} 30'$ of south latitude: but has nothing to deserve that pompous title; except that, towards the mouth, it is able to bear ships of some bulk: for its entrance is difficult and dangerous; though, farther in, it is wide and deep enough. The natives call this country *Porigi*, or *Polingi*, which is poorly inhabited; and has only two forts for the protection of a few *Portuguese* plantations.

5. THE captainric of *PARAYBA*, is about 100 miles in extent from north to south; being divided into two equal parts, by a river of the same name, which discharges itself by two mouths into the ocean, in $6^{\circ} 24'$ of south latitude. There are several towns and villages in this district, well inhabited either by *Portuguese* or *Indians*: but *Parayba* is the capital, which is situated at the mouth of the river, on the south bank of it, about three leagues from the sea, in $35^{\circ} 10'$ of west longitude, and $6^{\circ} 50'$ of south latitude. The town is well built, and surrounded with ramparts; the mouth of the river being defended by three forts; and a ship may carry six or 700 barrels of sugar up to the town with great security; though not without a pilot. The port of *Lucena*, which is a good harbour for ships, is about two leagues north of the capital. There are also seven large villages inhabited by *Indians*; for there is a great fertility throughout the whole country, which abounds in brazil-wood, sugar, tobacco, cotton, roucou, hides, barley, *Indian* wheat, potatoes, ananas, melons, citrons, oranges, bananas, pakanas, and other necessaries of life.

6. THE

6. THE captainric of *TAMARAC*, or *Tamarica*, is so called from an island, lying on its coast, near the mouth of the river of the same name; which makes the principal part of its district, though its territory extends upwards of 90 miles upon the continent. The island of *Tamarica* is situated in $35^{\circ} 6'$ of west longitude, and $7^{\circ} 54'$ of south latitude: it is about three miles in length, one in breadth, and eight in circumference; being parted from the continent by a very narrow channel, and having a commodious haven on the south side, with some good springs, and small rivers of fresh water.

THE capital town is called *Nostra Senhora da Conceizao*, or *da Tamarica*, which lies at the entrance of the river, and is defended by a small castle, with a redoubt to command the avenues. There is also the town of *Goyana*, situated on the river of the same name, about 10 miles north of *Conceizao*; and there are several *Indian* villages in the district, with many sugar plantations, and 22 sugar mills.

7. THE captainric of *PERNAMBUCO*, or *Fernambucca*, is one of the most considerable provinces of *Brazil*; extending about 180 miles along the eastern coast, and a considerable way up the country. It is divided into eleven small districts, each of which has its denomination from its chief city, or village, 1. *Olinda*; 2. *Garazu*; 3. *Arracife*; 4. *Meribela*; 5. *Sant Antonio*; 6. *Poyulca*; *Serinhaim*; 8. *Gonzalo de Una*; 9. *Porto Calvo*; 10. and 11. the north and south *Alagoa*: but the most considerable of them are *Olinda*, and *Garazu*; the rest scarcely deserving the names of towns,

towns, and some even of villages ; consisting only of a few hamlets for the overseers and slaves at the sugar plantations.

THE whole province of *Pernambuco* abounds with variety of fruits, pasture-grounds, and cattle : being well watered with several considerable rivers, and particularly the *Capibaribi*, which falls into the *Biriribi*, near *St. Antonio de Vaz*.

THE town of *Olinda*, was the capital of the province ; being seated on the northern part of it, near the harbour of *Arracife*, in 35° of west longitude, and $8^{\circ} 10'$ of south latitude. It was formerly a remarkable place for trade ; because the greatest part of the product of *North Brazil* was conveyed here to be exported to *Portugal* : but it was so unhappily situated among hills, which commanded it, that it could not be fortified enough against an enemy, without great difficulty and expence ; on which account, it became an easy prey to the *Dutch*, in 1630, who ruined a great part of the town, and demolished the fortifications in such a manner, that it is now looked upon as an inconsiderable place by the *Portuguese*, notwithstanding they have inhabited it ever since it was abandoned by the *Dutch*.

SINCE the decline of *Olinda*, the town of *Pernambuco*, or the *Recief*, is become the capital of the captainric ; which is the same place that was called *Maurice town* by the *Dutch*, who built it on the island of *St. Antonio de Vaz*, a little to the south of *Olinda*. The harbour of the *Recief*, or *Arracife*, is composed partly of a peninsula on the continent, and partly of several small islands opposite to it ; which were built upon, and fortified by

the *Dutch*, who made a communication by a bridge between *Maurice Town* and the continent.

THE port of *Arracife*, opposite the town of *Per-nambuco*, is so called from its situation among a ridge of rocks or sands; and the harbour of *Per-nambuco*, or rather *Infernoboco*, the mouth of hell, was so named by the *Portuguese*, on account of the rocks and shoals, under water, at its entrance: but *Arracife* is now reported to be the strongest port in all *Brazil*; being defended by two castles, and some other forts. It is shut up by those rocks and sands, which form a kind of bar, and streighten the entrance several leagues: so that great vessels are obliged to enter by a very narrow opening; after which they come into a little bay, where a small river, flowing from the inland, discharges itself, about a league from *Olinda*. The port consists of a suburb, containing some large ware-houses for sugar, and other merchandizes; being defended by a castle, built upon a narrow passage, from whence the garrison can easily obstruct the entrance of ships: though it was taken by captain *Lancaster*, in 1595, with seven *English* vessels: but, after his departure, the *Portuguese* built another castle on a rock in the sea, together with some other forts and outworks; from which time, the entrance has been inaccessible to all strangers.

GARAZU is about 18 miles from *Olinda*; but is rather a large village, than a town: and there are no other considerable places upon the coast.

8. THE captainric of *SEREGIPPE*, receives its denomination from a river that runs almost through the middle of it, and disembogues itself into

into the ocean, between the mouths of two other rivers, called *Guaratiba* and *Vazabaris*. The country extends from north to south about 96 miles, along the eastern coast, between $10^{\circ} 50'$, and $11^{\circ} 45'$ of south latitude. It is divided into several inferior districts, which abound with plantations of sugar and tobacco: but the only remarkable town is *Seregippe*, the capital of the captainric, distinguished by the title of *Del Rey*, or *Villa de bon Successo*, and more commonly *St. Christopher*: being situated on the north side of the river *Vazabaris*, 7 leagues from the sea, in $36^{\circ} 57'$ of west longitude, and $11^{\circ} 15'$ of south latitude: though it is now become inconsiderable.

9. THE captainric of *BAHIA de TODOS los SANCTOS*, or *Bay of all Saints*, receives its name from a large bay, about two leagues and a half over; being in some places 12, and in others 18 fathom deep; intermixed with a number of little pleasant islands, producing abundance of cotton.

THE country extends about 200 miles along the coast, exclusive of its windings; being esteemed one of the richest, and most considerable of all *Brazil*, especially for its great plenty of sugar: but it is very unhealthy, on account of the excessive heat of the climate.

THE principal city is *St. Salvador*, or *Cividad de Bahía*; which is the metropolis of all *Brazil*, the see of an archbishop, and the residence of the vice-roy; being a populous, magnificent, and opulent place, situated on the east side of the bay, in $38^{\circ} 25'$ of west longitude, and $12^{\circ} 7'$ of south latitude. It is well fortified, both by art and nature: the principal avenues being guarded by seven forts about the town, be-

sides those which command the entrance of the harbour. There is a great trade carried on in this capital, whose principal inhabitants have much politeness and civility; but the lower kind are intolerably proud and insolent. The city is supposed to contain about 2000 houses; inhabited by 12000 Portuguese, and double that number of negroes, who are kept in the most abject degree of slavery by their imperious masters, either in carrying them about in sedans, or working them in the plantations of sugar and tobacco, in which some masters have above 500 slaves, whose labour is so hard, and sustenance so small, that they are reputed to live long if they hold it out for seven years.

10. The captainric of *RIO dos ILHEOS*, receives its name from several islands lying before the main bay of it, and extends about 140 miles from north to south, exclusive of the windings of the coast; having some rivers that cross it from west to east, particularly the *Rio das Contas*, *dos Ilheos*, *de Duna*, and *Jussia*. The chief places are, *Ilheos*, the capital; *Nostra Signora da Victoria*; *St. Anna*; and *St. George*; besides some hamlets, and several sugar plantations: but *Ilheos* is the only town of any consequence; which is situated on the south side of the bay, in $39^{\circ} 40'$ of west longitude, and $15^{\circ} 12'$ of south latitude; being watered by the river *Ilheos*, and containing about 200 Portuguese families.

11. THE captainric of *PORTO SEGURO*, received its name from a bay, which was so called by *Peter Alvarez Capralis*, the first discoverer of this part of the continent; and the country extends itself about 200 miles from north to south; being

being watered by ten rivers, the principal of which are, the *Rio Grande*, and *Rio Dolce*, on both its extremities. The chief places, are *Porto Seguro*, the capital; *Santa Cruz*; and *St. Amaro*: but the two latter are very inconsiderable; though the former contains about 500 *Portuguese* families; being situated on the top of a white rock, near the mouth of a small river, in $39^{\circ} 41'$ of west longitude, and 17° of south latitude.

12. THE captainric of *ESPIRITO SANTO*, or the *Holy Ghost*, is so denominated from its capital town, which is situated on a bay, about three leagues from the sea, in $40^{\circ} 6'$ of west longitude, and $20^{\circ} 30'$ of south latitude; being inhabited by about 200 *Portuguese* families; but there is no other town in the province; which is watered by some rivers that render it extremely fertile; and the coast extends about 200 miles from north to south.

13. THE captainric of *RIO de JANEIRO*, is so called from the remarkable river and bay of the same name, which was discovered in *January 1575*. It extends about 250 miles along the coast; which, having run almost in a direct line from north to south, from the bay *de Todos Santos*, to that of *Janeiro*, begins to wind from east to west. The principal city is *Rio Janeiro*, or more properly *St. Sebastian*; which is a populous place, situated on the small bay of *St. Salvador*, about two leagues from the sea, and 16 north-east from the *Rio Janeiro*, in $40^{\circ} 5'$ of west longitude, and $22^{\circ} 40'$ of south latitude; being about 190 leagues south of *Bahia*, or *St. Salvador*. The plains which surround the city, and the banks of the *Janeiro*, are extremely fertile in sugar-canes, indico, tobacco,

and cotton: while the mountains are covered with brazil-wood.

ANGRA de los REYES is another port town, about 100 miles south-west of *St. Sebastian*. There is also the town and harbour of *St. Salvador*: but neither of these are remarkable for trade; and the rest of the country is chiefly inhabited by *Indians*, who are no better than a kind of slaves to the *Portuguese*.

14. THE captainric of *St. VINCENT*, extends upwards of 300 miles from north to south. The chief town is *St. Vincent*, which is situated at the confluence of three rivers, on a fine bay of the *Atlantic Ocean*, in 45° of west longitude, and $23^{\circ} 45'$ of south latitude. There is also the town of *Santos*, and some others no ways remarkable: though *St. Vincent* is much frequented, on account of the gold mines that have been discovered in the mountains to the westward.

15. THE captainric of *DEL REY*, or the *Royal Captainric*, has been erroneously made a province of *Paraguay*; for it is part of *Brazil*, and extends from the river of *St. Francis*, in $26^{\circ} 40'$ to the mouth of *Rio de la Plata*, in $34^{\circ} 52'$ of south latitude. The *Portuguese* had only a few towns in the country, which is also but poorly inhabited by the *Indians*, who abandoned it to the new-comers, and fled into *Paraguay*, to avoid their cruelty: however, since the discovery of the gold mines, the *Portuguese* have erected several forts on the north side of the river *La Plata*, and on the islands at the mouth of it, to prevent the *Spaniards* from making any establishments on that side of the river.

BESIDES,

BESIDES, the *Portuguese* have made a regular settlement upon the island of *St. Catherine*, which lies upon this coast, in $49^{\circ} 45'$ of west longitude, and extends from $27^{\circ} 35'$ to 28° of south latitude; being 27 miles in length, and 6 in breadth: though this island, till of late years, was only a retreat for vagabonds, and out-laws, from all parts of *Brazil*; who had plenty of provisions in the island, and exchanged them with such ships as touched there for cloathing, and other *European* commodities.

BUT the *Brazils* are most remarkable for their rich mines of gold and diamonds. The first gold mine was discovered in 1680, near *St. Sebastian*; and, after this, many others were found in several parts of the country, that have greatly enriched the *European* world, as they furnish to the value of five millions sterling every year, of which a fifth belongs to his *Portuguese* majesty. The diamond mines lie to the westward of *St. Sebastian*, and are farmed by the king of *Portugal*, to a company of merchants at *Rio Janeiro*, for the annual rent of 138,000 crusadoes, or 26,000 *l.* sterling; on condition that they shall not employ any more than 600 slaves in these mines. And the brazil-wood also produces to the value of 30,000 *l.* annually: so that the produce of this country alone supports the crown of *Portugal*, which, on every other side, has been deprived of its former sources of wealth.

C H A P. II.

An account of the different countries of SOUTH AMERICA, which are still possessed by the INDIANS. The description of PARAGUAY, and of the government established there by the JESUITS. The republic of ST. PAUL. TERRA MAGELLANICA; with its bays, and islands; particularly TERRA DEL FUEGO, and STATEN Island. An account of the Indians of CHILI; and of the country of the AMAZONS: as also of the Indians of POPAYAN and TERRA FIRMA.

THE countries which are already under the dominion of the Spaniards, are of such great compass, and afford such immense riches, that they have no strong temptations to extend their conquests, or to increase their discoveries. The same may be asserted of the Portuguese settlements in Brazil: though it is evident, that there is a very large tract of country in South America, altogether undiscovered, or at least unpossessed, by any European nation. It is imagined, that this unknown country is about 2000 miles in length from east to west, and near 1000 broad from north to south; as also, that it contains more people than all the provinces of the Spanish empire: besides, it is highly probable, that this country is extremely rich in gold, silver, and jewels; as well as in cattle, corn, sugar, rich drugs, and fine fruits.

THE people possessed of these parts, are not only descendants from the original inhabitants; but also consist of great numbers of other Indians, who have

have sheltered themselves here from the cruelties of the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*: nor is there any just reason to suppose they ever will be conquered, or that they will submit to any *Europeans*; unless the missionaries extend their power over all these *Indians*, in the same manner as they have subdued the natives of *Paraguay*.

THOSE territories of *South America*, which are still possessed by the *Indians*, are, the greatest part of *Paraguay*; *Terra Magellanica*; *Patagonia*; part of *Chili*, and *Peru*; the country of the *Amazons*; most of *Guiana*; and part of *Terra Firma*.

I. THE country of *PARAGUAY*, or *Rio de la Plata*, has been already described in PART II. chapter II. of this work; * with an account of the *Indians*, the settlements made by the *Spaniards*, and some mention of the missionaries: but the last have now arrived to such a degree of power, that it is necessary to shew what sort of an independent monarchy they have been endeavouring to establish among the *Indians* of this remote part of the world.

IT has been the misfortune of the christian church in *South America*, for more than a century past, that no priests, but the jesuits, have taken any pains, either to convert the *Indians* by their promulgating the doctrine, or to influence them by the regularity of their conduct; which has thrown that important business upon the jesuitical missionaries, whereby they have acquired such amazing power in *Paraguay*.

THE country under the government of the fathers, lies about 600 miles south-east of the captainric

* See this Volume, p. 267, and 281.

tainric of *Janeiro* in *Brazil*, about the same distance north of the province of *Buenos Ayres*, 540 north-east from *Tucuman*, and about 300 north-west from the *Spanish* province of *Paraguay*. It is an extensive, pleasant, and fertile country, watered with a variety of rivers and streams; abounding with timber and fruit-trees. It produces great quantities of cotton, indico, sugar, pimento, ipecacuana, and other valuable drugs. The plains are full of horses, mules, black cattle, and sheep. The mountains contain great treasures of gold and silver: besides which, some iron mines have been lately discovered.

THE *Paraguayan Indians* were a brave warlike people, who scorned to submit to the *Spaniards* or *Portuguese*: but submitted to the government of the jesuits, who learnt their languages, and conformed to their uncivilized customs, till they had an opportunity of cultivating their minds, and improving them with the knowledge of the social virtues. They began with gathering them into towns, and forming them into societies; which they engaged to protect against the insults of the *Spanish* soldiery, and from the tyranny of the *Spanish* governors. These promises easily induced the *Indians* to put themselves under the sole direction of the missionaries, who converted them to christianity, and entirely won their affections, by suffering them to continue free from all taxes, and other denotations of slavery, except barely acknowledging the king of *Spain* for their sovereign, and living under a spiritual subjection to their fathers. But the *Brazilian Portuguese*, called mamalukes by the *Europeans*, poured in their numerous bands against these new converts, slaughtered

slaughtered all that resisted them, and carried great numbers into slavery: however, the missionaries obtained permission, from the court of *Spain*, to arm the *Paraguayans*, and encourage them to stand in their own defence; from which time they resolutely engaged the mamalukes in several encounters, and have met with no farther opposition.

THE mission gradually increased, till it attained its present extent, which comprehends at least 300,000 families, who are most absolutely subservient to the fathers, and pay them all the reverence that can be shewn to mortals.

THESE *Indians* are divided into 42 parishes, extending along the banks of the rivers *Paraguay*, and *Parana*; none of them being above 30 miles distance from another. Each parish is governed by a single jesuit, who is like a provincial prince: his word is not only a law, but even an oracle: his nod infers supreme command; and there is no appeal from his decision, which is absolute in all causes both civil and ecclesiastic.

EVERY family has its proportion of land and labour; of plenty and rest: for industry is common to all: though wealth is attained by none: because the product of their harvest is carried into the magazines of the society; from whence the fathers disperse whatever they think necessary, to every family, according to its degree. The surplus is so considerable, that the most judicious *Spaniards* conceive it to be about four millions of pieces of eight, or 716,666 *l.* sterling; which is sent either to *Cordoua*, or *Santa Fe*, where there are procurator-generals, who take care of what belongs to the society, and occasionally transport their wealth into *Europe*.

It is impossible to imagine any thing more magnificent than their parish churches, where divine service is celebrated with the utmost splendor and solemnity. The houses, or rather palaces, of these spiritual fathers, are also extremely superb. There is an annual meeting of all the missionaries, who then confer on the methods necessary to be taken for promoting the common concerns of the mission, establishing new laws, or abolishing old ones. This is the supreme council, which is no ways accountable either to the pope, or his Catholic majesty: but the caziques are accountable to this council, or congregation; from which they receive such orders as concern the mission in general: though they are entirely directed by the presiding priests in matters relating to their particular parishes.

THE military establishment is so very considerable, that each parish has a numerous body of horse and foot, regularly exercised every sunday afternoon, and divided into regiments, consisting each of six companies, and every company of fifty men. These regiments are properly officered; and the whole establishment consists of about sixty thousand men, under the command of several general officers: but, one of the fathers always commands in chief, when any body of their forces takes the field: for it is their invariable maxim, never to permit their *Indians*, either in peace or war, to acknowledge any other authority. This *Indian* army is surprizingly well disciplined; for they know how to handle the musket and bayonet, like *European* troops; as also to throw heavy stones, or bullets, out of their slings, with great force and dexterity.

dexterity. The fathers pretend, that these forces are kept up to secure their subjects against the *Portuguese*, who formerly invaded them, and committed many devastations: besides, the fathers make use of these troops for scowering the country, to prevent the *Spaniards*, or any other strangers, from coming privately into the missionary territories.

THE fathers ought to pay to his Catholic majesty, a piece of eight for every head under their jurisdiction; which capitation-tax would produce a considerable revenue, if it was fairly collected, and honestly paid: but the jesuits have eluded the payment, by bribing the governor of *Buenos Ayres*, whose duty it is to visit the mission once in five years.

SUCH a government seems to be unchangeable, while it proceeds upon the same principle: nor is it surprizing that these jesuits are extremely careful, in keeping the poor natives slaves to ignorance and bigotry; as also in concealing so much empire and wealth from the world, especially *Spain*, at whose expence they were sent to convert the *Indians*, and to make them subjects to the *Spanish* monarchy.

THIS was the situation and authority of every jesuit in *Paraguay*; where less than 50 monks have above a million of souls under their government; who, like abject slaves, worship the priests as if they were so many gods. But the missionaries have very lately renounced all allegiance to the crown of *Spain*; and proclaimed father *Nicholas de Leuco*, one of their order, king of *Paraguay*; who, according to advices from *Buenos Ayres* and *Panama*, has been crowned by the name
of

of *Don Nicholas I.* and has made a progress down the river *Paraguay*; which makes the *Spaniards* entertain a suspicion, that he has an intention of attacking the towns of *Santa Fè*, or *Buenos Ayres*, situated upon that river: however, the *Spaniards* have thrown strong garrisons in both places; and it is expected they will be assisted by the *Portuguese*, who have been also offended by the *Jesuits*, as they lately prevented an advantageous exchange of territory between the crowns of *Spain* and *Portugal*. It is reported, that this extraordinary conduct of the *Jesuits* in *Paraguay*, has occasioned the late disgrace of father *Francis Ravago*, confessor to his Catholic majesty; whereby the society seems to be excluded from this important post, which they have retained for upwards of two centuries. Besides, the court of *Spain* has issued orders for the embarkation of a considerable body of troops, under the command of *Don Pedro de Cervillos*, for the protection of the *Spanish* settlements, and the suppression of the general jurisdiction of the *Jesuits*.

THE republic of *St. PAUL*, is a little state, about 120 miles east of *Paraguay*, and about 30 north of the captainric of *St. Vincent* in *Brazil*; being surrounded with inaccessible mountains, and by the impenetrable forest of *Pernabacaba*. It consists of *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, creoles, mestizoes, mulattoes, and negroes; who lived at first without religion, laws, faith, or honesty; but were drove by necessity into this kind of government. They are about 4000, and call themselves a free people, by the name of *Paulists*, their capital town: though they pay a kind of tribute to the king of *Portugal*, out of their gold mines, which are

are frequently found in the mountains, where they employ several *Indian* slaves in their drudgery.

2. *TERRA MAGELLANICA*, the *Streights of Magellan*, and *Patagonia*, comprehend a great tract of territory, extending from *Paraguay*, to the utmost extremity of *South America*; that is, from the 35th to the 54th degree of south latitude: but it is difficult to ascertain its boundaries on the west side; for *Ovalle* makes the kingdom of *Cbili*, reach quite to the *Magellanic Streights*:* however, as the *Spaniards* have no possessions on that coast beyond 44 or 45 degrees, all that lies farther to the south must be included in this *Magellanic* tract; which is therefore bounded by *Cbili*, and the *South Sea*, on the north and west; by the *Southern Ocean*, on the south; and by the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the east. It lies between 53 and 71 degrees of west longitude: being about 1140 miles long; and above 530 broad towards the north, but much more contracted towards the south: being first discovered by *Ferdinand † Magellan*, a *Portuguese* in the service of *Spain*, who communicated his name to the country, and the adjacent streights, by which he found a passage into the *South Seas*.

MAGELLAN himself made no great discoveries on this coast: but those adventurers who followed him this way, assert, that many of the inhabitants were of a gigantic stature, and that they went naked; which is somewhat strange, considering the coldness of the climate, and the sterility of the country.

It is to be observed, that the name of *Patagonia* is sometimes given to all the eastern coast of this part.

* See this Volume, p. 154.

† P. 137.

part of the country, from the *Spanish* settlements to the streights of *Magellan*. The whole territory to the northward of the river of *Plate* is full of wood, and stored with immense quantities of large timber-trees : but no trees of any kind are to be met with to the southward of that river, except a few peach-trees, first planted and cultivated by the *Spaniards* in the neighbourhood of *Buenos Ayres* ; which is a peculiarity not to be paralleled in any other known part of the globe : for Sir *John Narborough*, in particular, who was sent out by king *Charles II.* expressly to examine this country, and the streights of *Magellan*, in 1670, says, that he never saw a stick of wood in the country, large enough to make the handle of a hatchet.

BUT, though the country is destitute of wood, it abounds with pasture ; the land, in general, appearing to be made up of downs, of a light dry gravelly soil, and producing a great quantity of long coarse grass, which grows in tufts interspersed with large barren spots of gravel between them. This grass, in many places, feeds very numerous herds of black cattle ; which were first brought over by the *Spaniards*, on their establishing themselves in *Paraguay* ; and they are increased so much, that they are not considered as private property ; but many thousands at a time are slaughtered every year, by the hunters of *Buenos Ayres*, only for their hides and tallow ; who sometimes take these cattle alive in nooses, for the uses of agriculture. There are great numbers of wild dogs, which feed upon the carcases of the dead cattle. The country is also over-run with horses, originally brought there by the *Spaniards*, which run wild like the black.

black cattle, and are of such little value, that the best of them when caught, are sold for a dollar a-piece in the neighbouring settlements. These herds of wild cattle, and droves of horses, may increase so much as to fill all the southern parts of this continent with their breed; which must prove of considerable advantage to such ships as touch upon the coast. There are great numbers of *Peruvian* sheep in all parts of this country; with immense quantities of seals; and a great variety of sea fowl, among the most remarkable of which are the penguins. But fresh-water is very scarce; the land being generally of a nitrous and saline nature, which frequently makes the ponds and streams have a brackish taste: though, as good water has been found there in small quantities, it is probable, on a farther search, that the inconvenience may be removed.

THE western coast is not only of less extent; but, on account of the *Andes* *, which skirt it, and stretch quite down to the water, is a very rocky and dangerous shore: though it has several considerable rivers that descend from the *Andes*, and water the country in their course to the *South Sea*; the principal of which are, the two *Campanas*, that of the *Giants*, *St. Gillian*, *de los Apostolos*, *de los Martyres*, *de St. Steven*, *Gallegos*, *St. Domingo*, and *Sinfondo*; the last dividing this western part from the south of *Cbili*.

THIS country is inhabited by several different nations of *Indians*: but they are very imperfectly known; and have seldom been seen above two or three at a time, by any ships that have touched upon the coast; though, towards *Buenos Ayres*,

VOL. I.

O o

they

* See this Volume, p. 160.

they are numerous enough to be very troublesome to the *Spaniards*; appearing, in their manners, to be nearly allied to the *Chilefians*, who have long set the whole *Spanish* power at defiance, have frequently ravaged their country, and to this day retain their independency. The *Pampas* seem to inhabit a considerable part towards the north; and the *Patagons* another towards the south, who received this name from *Magellan*, on account of their gigantic stature. The *Cessares* are situated between the *Pampas* and the *Patagons*, extending westward beyond the *Andes*; and are supposed to be the descendants of some *Spaniards*, who were shipwrecked upon the coast, in 1540; where they intermixed with the *Indians*, and have formed themselves into a kind of republic. There are also the *Envos* of *Cossi*; the *Kenemets* of *Karay*; the *Kennecas* of *Caramay*; and the *Karaiks* of *Morrena*; with some other nations of a moderate stature, and more polite than the *Chunions*, and *Huil-lons*, who inhabit the continent and islands about the streights of *Magellan*.

THERE are several bays along these coasts, either formed by nature, or by the many rivers that discharge themselves into the ocean: but little more of them is known than by their situations, which may be sufficiently understood by consulting the map. Those of *Anegada*, *St. Mathias*, *Camarones*, *Port Deure*, and *Port St. Julian*, are the most considerable; and the last is more so than the rest; being a convenient rendezvous, in case of separation, for all cruisers bound to the southward, and the whole coast of *Patagonia*, from the river of *Plate* to the streights of *Magellan*, as it lies nearly

nearly parallel to their usual route, in $63^{\circ} 35'$ of west longitude, and 49° of south latitude, where commodore *Anson* ordered his ships to rendezvous, and take in a supply of salt, in *February* 1741, before he undertook his remarkable passage round *Cape Horn* into the *South Seas*; after which they were ordered, in case of separation, *to cruize off the island of *Nuestra Senora de Socoro*, on the western coast. This squadron left port *St. Julian*, on the 27th of *February*; and, on the 7th of *March*, passed the streights *Le Maire*, on the south-east of *Terra del Fuego*, instead of sailing through the streights of *Magellan*, on the opposite part of that island: but, this was a very unproper season of the year to make the passage of *Cape Horn*; to which they were now necessitated by their too late departure from *England*: for, after a continual series of the greatest calamities from the severity of the most tempestuous weather, the whole squadron was separated, and it was the 30th of *April*, before the commodore completed his passage round *Cape Horn*, which should have been made in the height of summer; that is, in the months of *December* and *January*; for the more distant the time of passing is taken from this season, the more disastrous it may be reasonably expected to prove.

THERE are a great many islands all along the three coasts; the largest, and most considerable of which lies on the southern side: those on the east are inconsiderable: nor are those on the west of any great consequence.

I. On the eastern coast are the following islands.

1. *Pepy's Island*; which is situated in $64^{\circ} 20'$ of west

* See this Volume, p. 224.

west longitude, and $47^{\circ} 30'$ of south latitude; about 55 leagues east of *Cape Blanco*, on the continent. 2. The isle of *Penguins*, about three leagues from the shore, and about 18 south of *Cape Blanco*. 3. The three islands of *Sebaeld de Werds*, between $67^{\circ} 20'$, and $67^{\circ} 50'$ of west longitude; and between $50^{\circ} 50'$ and $51^{\circ} 5'$ of south latitude; about 53 leagues south-east of port *St. Julian*. 4. *Falkland's* isles, or *New Islands*, somewhat to the south-west of *Sebaeld de Werds*. All these islands are small; but may be of service for cruizers to the *South Seas*.

PEPY's island was discovered by captain *Cowley*, in 1686, who represents it as a commodious place for ships to wood and water at: he also says, that it is provided with a very good capacious harbour, where a thousand ships might ride at anchor in great safety: it likewise abounds with fowls; and, as the shore is either rocks or sands, it seems to promise great plenty of fish. *Falkland's* isles have been seen by several navigators, and particularly by *Woods Rogers*, who run along the north-east coast, in 1708; and says, that they extended about 120 miles in length; appearing with gentle descents from hill to hill, and seeming to be good ground, interspersed with woods, and not destitute of harbours.

II. THE most considerable islands of all, being on the southern coast, are as follows.

1. *TERRA del FUEGO*, *Fogo*, or *Land of Fire*; being so called, by the first discoverers, on account of some vulcanoes, which emitted great quantities of fire and smoke. It is said to be situated between $60^{\circ} 40'$ and $69^{\circ} 20'$ of west longitude;

tude; and between $52^{\circ} 30'$ and 56 of south latitude: though some writers make its longitude more extensive; by whose accounts it may be about 480 miles in length from east to west, and about 220 in breadth from north to south. This island is rough and mountainous; but has several fertile vallies, plains, and pasture grounds, watered with a multitude of fine springs that come down from the mountains. There are several bays and roads, between this and the adjacent islands: the lands abound with wood, and stones for ballast: but the westerly winds are extremely violent and impetuous along the south coast; so that those who sail westward must be careful to keep as much to the south of them as possible; for which purpose, the best directions are given in the relation of lord *Anson's* voyage round the world, in the 9th chapter of the 1st book. The inhabitants are naturally as white as the *Europeans*; but go naked, and paint their bodies with a variety of colours: those on the south side being very uncivilized, cunning, and barbarous: but, those on the other side, are reported to be a poor, harmless, and affable people; whose cloathing are the skins of beasts; and their huts are made of poles stuck round about two or three feet into the ground, meeting on the top like a sugar-loaf, and covered with skins, or bark of trees.

2. THE island called *STATEN*, from its having been first discovered by the *Dutch*, is about seven leagues to the east of *Terra del Fuego*; being divided from it by the streights *La Maire*, which received this name from the first discoverer, who was a merchant of *Amsterdam*, in 1615. These

streights are often esteemed to be the boundary between the *Atlantic* and *Pacific Oceans*; and are between five and six leagues in length; through which commodore *Anson* made his passage into the *South Seas*, instead of passing through the streights of *Magellan*, which are above 100 leagues in length, from the cape of the *Virgins* at the entrance of the *North-Sea*, to the cape of *Desire*, at the opposite extremity; and in some places about 30 leagues over, between the island and the coast of *Patagonia*, though in others not more than a league or two. This island of *Staten* is about 30 miles long, and 16 broad; having great wildness and horror in its appearance: for it seems to be entirely composed of inaccessible rocks, without the least mixture of earth or mould between them. These rocks terminate in a great number of ragged points, which spire up to a prodigious height, and are perpetually covered with snow: the points themselves are on every side surrounded with frightful precipices, and often overhang in a most astonishing manner; the hills, which bare them, being generally separated from each other by narrow cliffs, that appear as if the country had been frequently rent by earthquakes; for these chasms are nearly perpendicular, and extend through the substance of the main rocks, almost to their very bottoms: so that nothing can be imagined more savage and gloomy, than the whole aspect of this coast, which has no inhabitants. But it is to be observed, that mention is made of a passage called *Brewer*, about 13 leagues east of this island, which was the route taken by *Mr. Gwin*, in 1701, in his return from the *South Seas*; who also discovered

a small island, about 45 leagues north-east of *Staten* island.

THERE are also several other small islands, scattered at different distances from $55^{\circ} 20'$ to $56^{\circ} 40'$ of south latitude, between *Staten* island and *Cape Horn*; being the island of *Cezambre*, *Vancouverland*, those of *Evouts*, the *Hermits*, *St. Alfonse*, and *Barneveld's* islands. Besides these, there are some other islands to the north-west of *Cape Horn*, extending along the southern coast of *Terra del Fuego*, as far as the streights of *Magellan*; in which there are likewise a great number of little islands scattered up and down: but none of them are any ways remarkable.

III. THE islands on the eastern coast of *Terra Magellanica*, are parted by very narrow channels from the continent; being as follow.

I. *TRINIDAD*, or *St. Madre de Dios*, is supposed to have received the denomination on account of three mountains, or headlands, that are seen at some distance. It lies in 71 degrees of west longitude; and under the 51st. and 52d. degree of south latitude; being 105 leagues long, and 30 broad: but the inhabitants, who are a rude race of uncivilized *Indians*, called the island *Catana*. The soil is stony, wild, and barren; which obliges the natives to live upon fish, and to drink the oil pressed out of sea wolves. The trees yield a dismal aspect; being blasted by strong winds, parched for want of fresh water, and seldom covered with any verdure. There are also about 80 very small islands, lying upon the western coast of *Trinidad*; with that of *St. Martin*, and some others, to the east; but they are so little known,

that few of them have received any particular name.

2. THE island of *St. BARBARA*, is about 46 leagues north of *Trinidad*, and about seven west from the continent: being about 30 miles long, and 10 broad.

THERE are also the islands of *St. Katherine*, and *Guafo*, or *Nomans*; with several other small inconsiderable islands along the coast, as far as *Cbili*: but the island of *Nostra Senora de Socoro*, and those of the *Archipelago* of *Chonos*, are included among, and described under, the *Cbilesian* islands.*

IV. THAT part of *CHILI*, which is in the possession of the native *Indians*, composes a very extensive territory, on both sides the *Andes*, inhabited by several distinct tribes or nations; of whom some account has already been given under the description of *Cbili*.† Some of those *Indians* are under a tributary subjection to the *Spaniards*; and others retain their original independency.

THE free *Indians* are very numerous, and inhabit the greatest part of the country, especially towards the mountains. They are the bravest people of all the natives of *America*; strong in body, and intrepid in mind; constant in their resolutions, and prodigal of losing life when they think it necessary to be hazarded for glory or liberty. Their habitations are only huts, made of branches of trees, large enough to shelter a whole family. Their furniture is coarse, and their diet plain; for they despise all superfluities. Their apparel is a sort of a waistcoat of woollen stuff, with drawers of the same that come down to their knees; and they have a

* See this Volume, p. 248. † See p. 170, 191, 192, 219, and 251. kind

kind of cloak or mantle when they go abroad; but use no linnen under their cloaths. They have a circle of wool, of various colours, on their heads; with fringes hanging from it, which they move in token of respect to their acquaintance: their necks are adorned with strings of shells, which they gather on the shore; though some of them have pearls curiously wrought; and others hang little birds, of beautiful colours, to their caps, on each side of which is a plume of feathers about half a yard high. The women partake of the spirit and bravery of the men; being as abstemious in their living, as patient of fatigue, and as resolute in defence of their country.

THEY have the same way of keeping singular accounts, remarking particular events, and conveying traditional intelligence, as is in use among the *Peruvians*. The people are governed by their respective chiefs; who claim no authority but in the administration of justice, and commanding their tribes in time of war; having neither palaces nor revenue; or any other marks of respect paid them, except in the execution of their office: but they manage the whole affairs of their nation in certain general assemblies, where every question is decided by a majority of voices.

OGILBY says, they are governed by particular chiefs, called *ulmens* and *curacens*; but these are subject to a governor general, called a *nentoke* or *apucoraw*, who, upon a vacancy, is elected by them, on a formal condition to govern for the common benefit and honour of the state.

THEIR religious tenets are full of absurdities; and their conceptions of the immortality of the
soul

soul are very imperfect : but they are not such barbarians as the *Spaniards* have represented them ; for they have too much bravery to delight in cruelty, and too much spirit to submit to slavery.

V. THE country of the *AMAZONS* is bounded by the equator, which separates it from *Terra Firma*, on the north ; by *Brazil*, and the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the east ; by *Brazil*, and *Paraguay*, towards the south ; and by *Peru*, on the south-west : lying between 50 and 75 degrees of west longitude, and between the equator and the 15th degree of south latitude.

THIS denomination of the country was given to it from a supposed nation of female warriors, that were reported to inhabit the banks of one of the greatest rivers in the world, which runs from west to east all through this extensive territory : but the *Amazons* were only a nation invented by the *Spaniards*. The country enjoys a more temperate air than could be well expected so near the equator : it abounds in large forests, of ebony, iron wood, logwood, brazil, and cedars ; with some fertile fields, and verdant meadows ; having plantations of tobacco, cotton, sugar, yarn, sarsaparilla, and other roots : there are many rivers that water the country ; but they all of them fall into the great river of the *Amazons*, which rises at the foot of the *Andes*, and falls into the *Atlantic Ocean*.

THE nations who inhabit the banks of these rivers are computed to be about one hundred and fifty ; who have some manufactures of cotton : but delight most in making war upon one another, and taking their prisoners into slavery.

THE Spaniards, in 1540, penetrated into this country, under the command of *Gonzalo Pizarro*; who was obliged to return to *Peru*, after losing most of his men on such an unsuccessful expedition: besides, he was deserted by *Francisco de Orellana*, who sailed down the river of the *Amazons*, and proceeded to *Spain*, where he gave such a description of the riches of the country, that his Catholic majesty appointed him governor, and sent him over with a considerable body of forces: though he perished in the enterprize, which was afterwards several times renewed, as well by the *Portuguese* as by the *Spaniards*, but without any success. Nor would success have been equivalent to their trouble: because, they were convinced that there were no mines of gold and silver to be found in this country.

HOWEVER, it is said, the jesuits have entered this country, where they have built thirty-nine towns, and converted several thousands of the inhabitants. They have likewise engraved a map of the river *Amazons*, or *Orellana*, which they call *Maranbon*; and say, it runs 1800 leagues before it falls into the *Atlantic Ocean*, into which it disembogues itself by 84 mouths.

VI. THE country of *POPAYAN*, and the whole province of *Terra Firma*, abound with several nations of *Indians*, governed by their own caziques; who are fond of the retention of that liberty which they have magnanimously preserved against the invading *Spaniards*: for liberty is the greatest blessing that providence can confer upon human nature, as it ennobles the species by inspiring men with the most virtuous sentiments, and encouraging them to the most
honourable

honourable actions : therefore, upon the whole; what services have the *Spaniards* conveyed to the world by their conquests in *America*? they have depopulated kingdoms, and murdered millions by the sword; when they pretended to subdue them for the promotion of religion; and when they might have gained infinite more advantage to themselves by the arts of peace.

DISSERTATION II.

Reflections on the PORTUGUESE colony of BRAZIL; the trade there; and the extraction of gold from PORTUGAL.

THE *Portuguese* shewed themselves a penetrating and enterprising people in their discoveries; which led the way, and suggested the design to *Columbus*: their conquests in the *East Indies* were won and lost with rapidity: but they had better fortune in the *Brazils*, where they recovered their possessions from the *Dutch*, after the *Spaniards* had ruined the trade of *Portugal*, sunk her naval power, and reduced her *American* plantations almost to a state of annihilation.

Don *Emanuel* king of *Portugal*, pretended to be sole lord of the navigation and trade of the *Atlantic Ocean*; which gave occasion to a very warm dispute between *Elizabeth* queen of *England*, and Don *Sebastian* king of *Portugal*; wherein it was apparent, that his *Portuguese* majesty had not acquired such a dominion, by right of occupation, or otherwise,

wife,

wife. Before *Portugal* was annexed to *Spain*, her monarchs were remarkable for their attention to the increase of naval power, the support of their colonies, and whatever might extend their commerce; which facilitated their amazing progress in *India*, whereby they introduced a new channel of trade to the oriental world, and ruined the old one which had been successfully carried on for several years by the *Italians*. But, in 1580, the crown of *Portugal* was seized upon by *Philip II.* of *Spain*, who annexed it to the rest of his dominions; nor had the *Portuguese* an opportunity of shaking off the *Spanish* yoke till 1640, when *John* duke of *Braganza*, by a most amazing revolution, ascended the throne of *Portugal*, and recovered the liberties of his countrymen; who, under the tyranny of *Spain*, were sunk into a miserable state, from whence they were thus happily extricated, and have since recovered their internal strength.

THE colonizing of *Brazil* occasioned the aggrandizement of *Portugal*: but the *Portuguese* were in possession of this extensive province many years before they were sensible of its subterraneous wealth. They expected silver at first, yet found little: though, in 1680, they discovered a great deal of gold in the mountains; which has so much increased the inhabitants of *Brazil*, and enlarged their trade, that it has been imagined the *Portuguese* in that province will, in a few years, be more numerous and opulent than in *Portugal*: for, besides the annual extraction of gold, coined and uncoined, to the value of five millions sterling, the kingdom of *Portugal* receives a great advantage by the importation of the diamonds, sugar, tobacco,
and

and hides of *Brazil*; especially the tobacco, which is esteemed the most valuable in the world.

THE *Portuguese* shewed no great concern, either for extending or improving their territories in *Brazil*, after the expulsion of the *Dutch*, till the Infant Don *Pedro*, the regent of *Portugal*, in 1685, began to think of improving the *American* dominions, and especially the two extremities of *Brazil*, which were well supplied with people in a short time after, who found out the mines of gold.

As the success of their mines and plantations, depends upon the labour of negroes, the *Portuguese* constantly take care to obtain a competent number for this purpose, by virtue of their *African* settlements, which are of greater extent than what is possessed by any other *European* power in that country. It is reported, that they annually carry over 50,000 slaves to *Brazil*, from the eastern coast of *Africa*; and that they have above 200,000 in the country adjacent to the bay of *All Saints*, as also about a third of that number at *Fernambuco*.

IN return for all the wealth brought from *Brazil*, the *Portuguese* send over in every fleet large quantities of all kinds of the richest *European* goods, and especially of *British* manufactures; whereby *Great Britain* obtains a balance of about a million sterling every year from *Portugal*: but the native poverty of the *Portuguese* was so great, on their discovery of the gold mines, that they would have found it impossible to work them, if it had not been for the credit they received from other countries, particularly *Great Britain*, in the necessary commodities for that purpose. As their
returns

returns of bullion augmented, their credit was extended : but, though now much enriched themselves, they still work their very mines, and carry on almost all the colony commerce, as well as much of their home trade, with foreign capitals : for they are credited with all articles of traffic, till the returns arrive ; infomuch, that the merchants of other countries stand the disburse of the cost of their goods, and charges of transporting them to *Portugal*, with the duties there, which are very high on most of the articles re-exported.

THE extraction of gold from *Portugal* is prohibited ; notwithstanding that kingdom must pay a great balance in bullion to every other nation with which she has any trading connexion. Therefore it is necessary for the *Portuguese* government to consider gold as a commodity, and to wink at its exportation ; without which indulgence to foreigners, the natives could not carry on any of their commerce : for the *Portuguese*, by parting with their gold, enjoy the comforts and elegancies of life ; make a respectful figure in *Europe* ; and are secure, singly from *Great Britain*, of a fuller and safer protection than they could possibly buy from the hire of any number of mercenary troops.

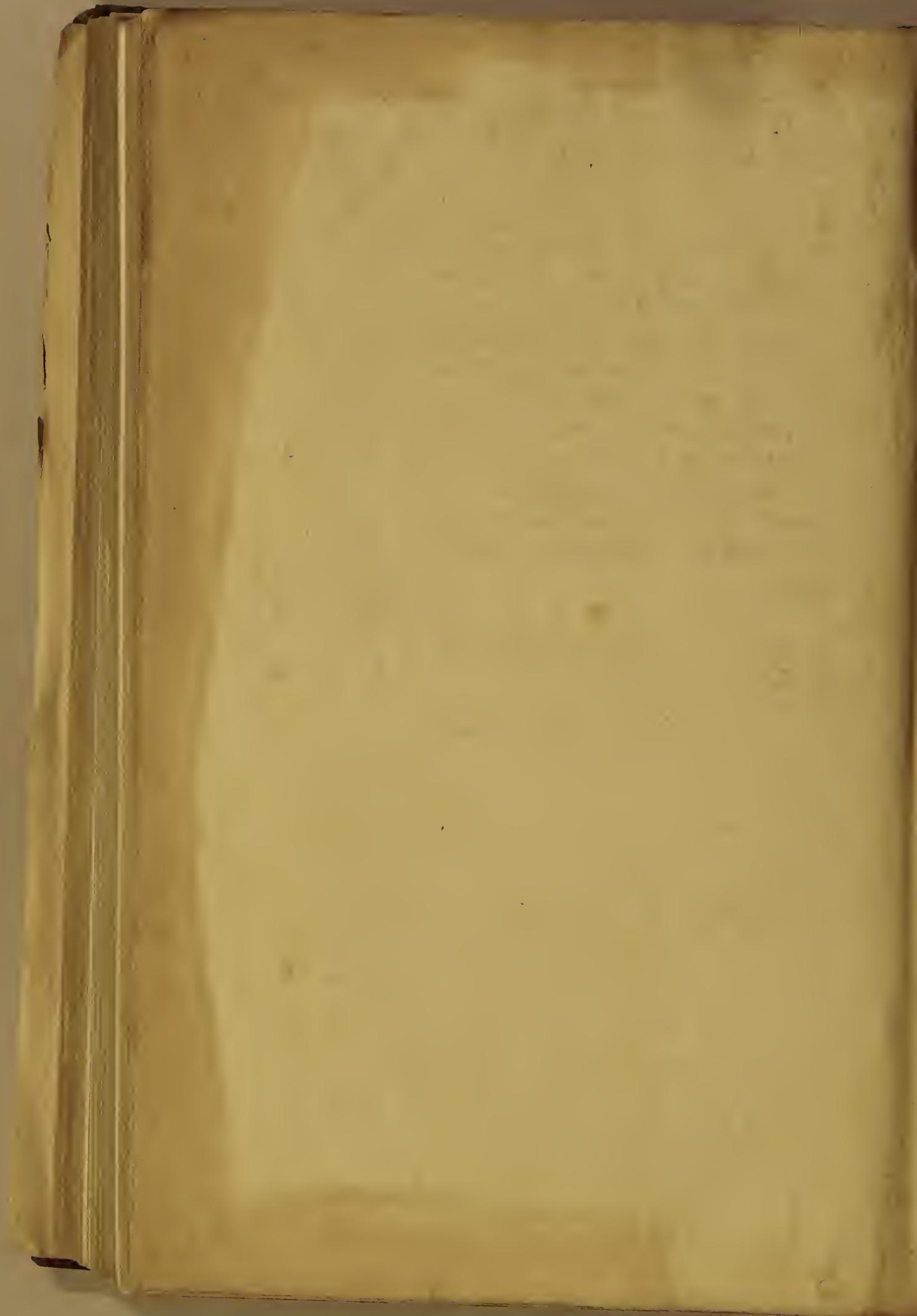
THE general trade to *Portugal* continues to increase among the *European* powers, and it is likely to remain in that situation ; because as the wealth of the *Portuguese* in the *Brazils* is increasing, the number of inhabitants is increased ; for every fleet carries away multitudes of people who improve the country, and consequently will make still larger demands from *Europe* ; whereby *Great Britain* is intitled to have a share equal to the encouragement
she

09081

the gives to the consumption of the wines and fruit of *Portugal*.

UPON the whole, this colony is the most profitable of any in the world: since, considering the proportion between the two kingdoms, *Portugal* draws more profit from the *Brazils*, than *Spain* from both *Mexico* and *Peru*: the whole commercial interest of *Portugal* lies now chiefly in the *West*, as it formerly lay in the *East Indies*: and their strength is so great in *America*, that they have no reason to apprehend any thing from their neighbours; for the only danger to which they are exposed, is from an insurrection of their own negroes, which might be attended with lamentable consequences.

F I N I S.



D 756
R 755W

410 *Handwritten text*
426

Handwritten signature

1500
100
1400

